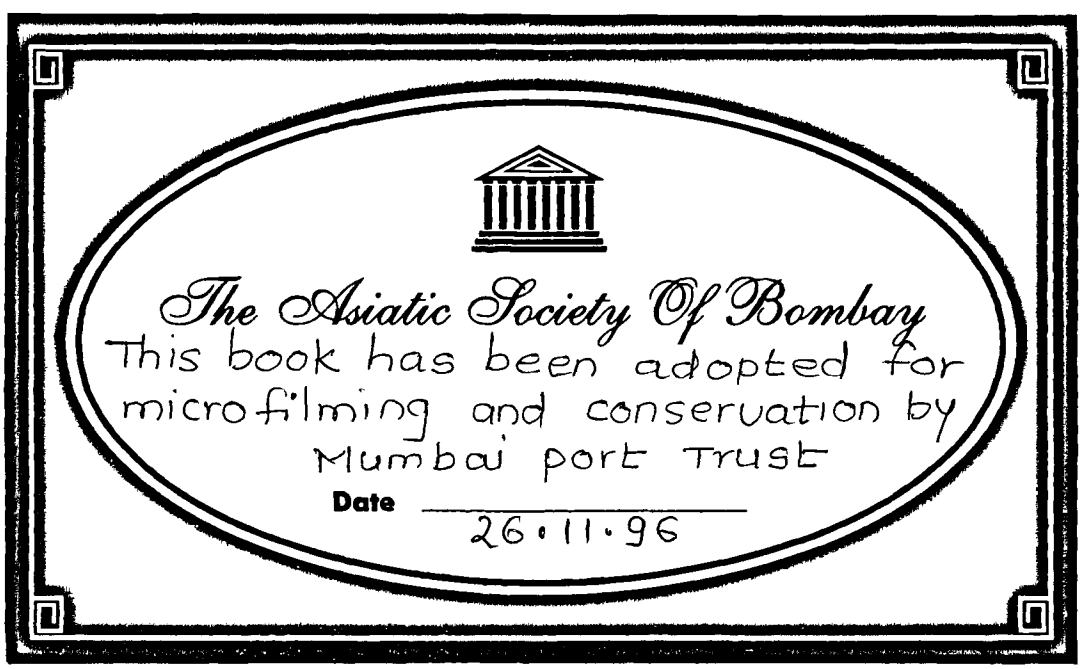
00085521



Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 25 June, 2016

A VOYAGE TO THE PACIFIC OCEAN.

UNDERTAKEN,

BY THE COMMAND OF HIS MAJESTY,

FOR MAKING

Discoveries in the Northern Hemisphere.

TO DETERMINE

the Position and Extent of the West Side of North America; its Distance from Asia; and the Practicability of a Northern Passage to Europe.

PERFORMED UNDER THE DIRECTION OF

Captains COOK, CLERKE, and GORE,

In his Majesty's Ships the RESOLUTION and DISCOVERY.

In the Years 1776, 1777, 1778, 1779, and 1780.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

VOL. I. and II. written by Captain JAMES COOK, F.R.S.

VOL. III. by Captain JAMES KING, LL.D. and F.R.S.

Illustrated with Maps and Charts, from the Original Drawings made by Lieut. Henry Roberts, under the Direction of Captain Cook; and with a great Variety of Portraits of Persons, Views of Places, and Historical Representations of Remarkable Incidents, drawn by Mr. Webber during the Voyage, and engraved by the most eminent Artists.

Published by Order of the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty.

VOL. II.

LONDON:

PRINTED BY W. AND A. STRAHAN:

FOR G. NICOL, BOOKSELLER TO HIS MAJESTY, IN THE STRAND.

M,DCC,LXXXIV.

00085521

CONTENTS.

CHAP. VI.

Arrival at Huaheine.—Council of the Chiefs.—Omai's Offerings, and Speech to the Chiefs.—His Eſtabliſhment in this Iſland agreed to. A Houſe built, and Garden planted for him.—Singularity of his Situation.—Meaſures taken to inſure his Safety.—Damage done by Cock-roaches, on board the Ships.—A Thief detected and puniſhed. —Fire-works exhibited —Animals left with Omai.—His Family.— Weapons.—Inſcription on his Houſe.—His Behaviour on the Ship's leaving the Iſland.—Summary View of his Conduct and Character. — Account of the two New Zealand Youths. 91

CHAP. VII.

Arrival at Ulietea.—Aſtronomical Obſervations.—A Marine deſerts, and delivered up.—Intelligence from Omai.—Inſtructions to Captain Clerke.—Another Deſertion of a Midſhipman and a Seaman.— Three of the Chief Perſons of the Iſland confined on that Account. —A Deſign to ſeize Captains Cook and Clerke, diſcovered.—The two Deſerters brought back, and the Priſoners releaſed.—The Ships ſail.—Refreſhments received at Ulietea.—Preſent and former State of that Iſland.—Account of its dethroned King, and of the late Regent of Huaheine. 112

CHAP. VIII.

Arrival at Bolabola.—Interview with Opoony.—Reaſons for purchaſing Monſieur de Bougainville's Anchor.—Departure from the Society Iſlands.—Particulars about Bolabola.—Hiſtory of the Conqueſt of Otaha and Ulietea.—High Reputation of the Bolabola Men. —Animals left there, and at Ulietea.—Plentiful Supply of Proviſions, and Manner of ſalting Pork on board.—Various Reflections relative to Otaheite, and the Society Iſlands.—Aſtronomical and Nautical Obſervations made there. 127

CONTENTS.

CHAP. IX.

Accounts of Otaheite ſtill imperfect.—The prevailing Winds.—Beauty of the Country.—Cultivation.—Natural Curioſities.—The Perſons of the Natives.—Diſeaſes.—General Character.—Love of Pleaſure.—Language.—Surgery and Phyſic.—Articles of Food.—Effects of drinking Ava.—Times and Manner of Eating.—Connections with the Females.—Circumciſion.—Syſtem of Religion.—Notions about the Soul and a future Life.—Various Superſtitions.—Traditions about the Creation.—An hiſtorical Legend.—Honours paid to the King.—Diſtinction of Ranks.—Puniſhment of Crimes.—Peculiarities of the neighbouring Iſlands.—Names of their Gods.—Names of Iſlands they viſit.—Extent of their Navigation. 141

CHAP. X.

Progreſs of the Voyage, after leaving the Society Iſlands.—Chriſtmas Iſland diſcovered, and Station of the Ships there.—Boats ſent aſhore.—Great Succeſs in catching Turtle.—An Eclipſe of the Sun obſerved.—Diſtreſs of two Seamen, who had loſt their Way.—Inſcription left in a Bottle.—Account of the Iſland.—Its Soil.—Trees and Plants.—Birds.—Its Size.—Form.—Situation.—Anchoring-ground. 179

CHAP. XI.

Some Iſlands diſcovered.—Account of the Natives of Atooi, who come off to the Ships, and their Behaviour on going on board.—One of them killed.—Precautions uſed to prevent Intercourſe with the Females.—A Watering-place found.—Reception upon landing.—Excurſion into the Country.—A Morai viſited and deſcribed.—Graves of the Chiefs, and of the human Sacrifices, there buried.—Another Iſland, called Oneehow, viſited.—Ceremonies performed by the Natives, who go off to the Ships.—Reaſons for believing that they are Cannibals.—A Party ſent aſhore, who remain two Nights.—Account of what paſſ'd on landing.—The Ships leave the Iſlands, and proceed to the North. 190

CHAP. XII.

The Situation of the Iſlands now diſcovered.—Their Names.—Called the Sandwich Iſlands.—Atooi deſcribed.—The Soil.—Climate.—Vegetable Productions.—Birds.—Fiſh.—Domeſtic Animals.—Perſons of the Inhabitants.—Their Diſpoſition.—Dreſs.—Ornaments.—Habitations.—Food.—Cookery.—Amuſements.—Manufactures.—Working-tools.—Knowledge of Iron accounted for.—Canoes.—Agriculture.—Account of one of their Chiefs.—Weapons.—Cuſtoms agreeing with thoſe of Tongataboo, and Otaheite.—Their Language the ſame.—Extent of this Nation throughout the Pacific Ocean.—Reflections on the uſeful Situation of the Sandwich Iſlands. 221

CHAP. XIII.

Obſervations made at the Sandwich Iſlands, on the Longitude, Variation of the Compaſs, and Tides.—Proſecution of the Voyage.—Remarks on the Mildneſs of the Weather, as far as the Latitude 44° North.—Paucity of Sea Birds, in the Northern Hemiſphere.—Small Sea Animals deſcribed.—Arrival on the Coaſt of America.—Appearance of the Country.—Unfavourable Winds, and boiſterous Weather.—Remarks on Martin de Aguillar's River, and Juan de Fuca's pretended Strait.—An Inlet diſcovered, where the Ships anchor.—Behaviour of the Natives. 253

BOOK IV.

Tranſactions amongſt the Natives of North America; Diſcoveries along that Coaſt and the Eaſtern Extremity of Aſia, Northward to Icy Cape; and Return Southward to the Sandwich Iſlands.

CHAP. I.

The Ships enter the Sound, and moor in a Harbour.—Intercourſe with the Natives.—Articles brought to barter.—Thefts committed.—The Obſerva-

Observatories erected, and Carpenters set to work —Jealousy of the Inhabitants of the Sound to prevent other Tribes having Intercourse with the Ships.—Stormy and rainy Weather.—Progress round the Sound.—Behaviour of the Natives at their Villages —Their Manner of drying Fish, &c —Remarkable Visit from Strangers, and introductory Ceremonies.—A second Visit to one of the Villages —Leave to cut Grass, purchased.—The Ships sail.—Presents given and received at parting. 269

CHAP. II.

The Name of the Sound, and Directions for sailing into it.—Account of the adjacent Country.—Weather.—Climate.—Trees.—Other vegetable Productions.—Quadrupeds, whose Skins were brought for Sale.—Sea Animals.—Description of a Sea Otter.—Birds.—Water Fowl.—Fish.—Shell-fish, &c.—Reptiles.—Insects.—Stones, &c.—Persons of the Inhabitants.—Their Colour.—Common Dress and Ornaments.—Occasional Dresses, and monstrous Decorations of wooden Masks.—Their general Dispositions.—Songs.—Musical Instruments.—Their Eagerness to possess Iron and other Metals. 288

CHAP. III.

Manner of building the Houses in Nootka Sound.—Inside of them described.—Furniture and Utensils.—Wooden Images.—Employments of the Men.—Of the Women.—Food, animal and vegetable.—Manner of preparing it.—Weapons.—Manufactures and mechanic Arts.—Carving and Painting.—Canoes.—Implements for fishing and hunting.—Iron Tools.—Manner of procuring that Metal.—Remarks on their Language, and a Specimen of it.—Astronomical and nautical Observations made in Nootka Sound. 313

CHAP. IV.

A Storm, after sailing from Nootka Sound.—Resolution springs a Leak.—Pretended Strait of Admiral de Fonte passed unexamined.—Progress

greſs along the Coaſt of America.—Beering's Bay.—Kaye's Iſland.—Account of it.—The Ships come to an Anchor.—Viſited by the Natives.—Their Behaviour.—Fondneſs for Beads and Iron.—Attempt to plunder the Diſcovery.—Reſolution's Leak ſtopped.—Progreſs up the Sound.—Meſſrs. Gore and Roberts ſent to examine its Extent.—Reaſons againſt a Paſſage to the North through it.—The Ships proceed down it, to the open Sea. 341

CHAP. V.

The Inlet called Prince William's Sound.—Its Extent.—Perſons of the Inhabitants deſcribed.—Their Dreſs.—Inciſion of the under Lip.—Various other Ornaments.—Their Boats.—Weapons, fiſhing, and hunting Inſtruments.—Utenſils.—Tools.—Uſes Iron is applied to.—Food.—Language, and a Specimen of it.—Animals.—Birds.—Fiſh.—Iron and Beads, whence received. 366

CHAP. VI.

Progreſs along the Coaſt.—Cape Elizabeth.—Cape St. Hermogenes.—Accounts of Beering's Voyage very defective. Point Banks.—Cape Douglas.—Cape Bede.—Mount St. Auguſtin.—Hopes of finding a Paſſage up an Inlet.—The Ships proceed up it.—Indubitable Marks of its being a River.—Named Cook's River.—The Ships return down it.—Various Viſits from the Natives.—Lieutenant King lands, and takes poſſeſſion of the Country.—His Report.—The Reſolution runs aground on a Shoal.—Reflections on the Diſcovery of Cook's River.—The conſiderable Tides in it accounted for. 382

CHAP. VII.

Diſcoveries after leaving Cook's River.—Iſland of St. Hermogenes.—Cape Whitſunday.—Cape Greville.—Cape Earnabas.—Two-headed Point.—Trinity Iſland. Beering's Foggy Iſland.—

A beautiful Bird deſcribed.—Kodiak and the Schumagin Iſlands.—A Ruſſian Letter brought on board by a Native.—Conjectures about it.—Rock Point.—Halibut Iſland.—A Volcano Mountain.—Providential Eſcape.—Arrival of the Ships at Oonalaſhka.—Intercourſe with the Natives there.—Another Ruſſian Letter.—Samganoodha Harbour deſcribed. 403

CHAP. VIII.

Progreſs Northward, after leaving Oonalaſhka.—The Iſlands Oonella and Acootan.—Ooneemak.—Shallowneſs of the Water along the Coaſt.—Briſtol Bay.—Round Iſland.—Calm Point.—Cape Newenham.—Lieutenant Williamſon lands, and his Report.—Briſtol Bay, and its Extent.—The Ships obliged to return, on account of Shoals.—Natives come off to the Ships.—Death of Mr. Anderſon; his Character; and Iſland named after him.—Point Rodney.—Sledge Iſland, and Remarks on landing there.—King's Iſland.—Cape Prince of Wales, the Weſtern Extreme of America.—Courſe Weſtward.—Anchor in a Bay on the Coaſt of Aſia. 426

CHAP. IX.

Behaviour of the Natives, the Tſchutſki, on ſeeing the Ships.—Interview with ſome of them.—Their Weapons.—Perſons.—Ornaments.—Clothing.—Winter and Summer Habitations.—The Ships croſs the Strait, to the Coaſt of America.—Progreſs Northward.—Cape Mulgrave.—Appearance of Fields of Ice.—Situation of Icy Cape.—The Sea blocked up with Ice.—Sea-horſes killed, and uſed as Proviſions.—Theſe Animals deſcribed.—Dimenſions of one of them.—Cape Liſburne.—Fruitleſs Attempts to get through the Ice, at a Diſtance from the Coaſt.—Obſervations on the Formation of this Ice.—Arrival on the Coaſt of Aſia.—Cape North.—The Proſecution of the Voyage deferred to the enſuing Year. 447

CONTENTS.

CHAP. X.

Return from Cape North, along the Coaſt of Aſia.—Views of the Country.—Burney's Iſland.—Cape Serdze Kamen, the Northern Limit of Beering's Voyage.—Paſs the Eaſt Cape of Aſia.—Deſcription and Situation of it.—Obſervations on Muller.—The Tſchutſki.—Bay of Saint Laurence.—Two other Bays, and Habitations of the Natives.—Beering's Cape Tſchukotſkoi.—Beering's Poſition of this Coaſt accurate.—Iſland of Saint Laurence.—Paſs to the American Coaſt.—Cape Darby.—Bald Head.—Cape Denbigh, on a Peninſula.—Beſborough Iſland.—Wood and Water procured.—Viſits from the Natives.—Their Perſons and Habitations.—Produce of the Country.—Marks that the Peninſula had formerly been ſurrounded by the Sea.—Lieutenant King's Report.—Norton Sound.—Lunar Obſervations there.—Stæhlin's Map proved to be erroneous.—Plan of future Operations. 467

CHAP. XI.

Diſcoveries after leaving Norton Sound.—Stuart's Iſland.—Cape Stephens.—Point Shallow-water.—Shoals on the American Coaſt.—Clerke's Iſland.—Gore's Iſland.—Pinnacle Iſland.—Arrival at Oonalaſhka.—Intercourſe with the Natives and Ruſſian Traders.—Charts of the Ruſſian Diſcoveries, communicated by Mr. Iſmyloff. Their Errors pointed out.—Situation of the Iſlands viſited by the Ruſſians.—Account of their Settlement at Oonalaſhka.—Of the Natives of the Iſland.—Their Perſons.—Dreſs.—Ornaments.—Food.—Houſes, and domeſtic Utenſils.—Manufactures.—Manner of producing Fire.—Canoes.—Fiſhing and hunting Implements.—Fiſhes, and Sea Animals.—Sea and Water Fowls, and Land Birds.—Land Animals and Vegetables.—Manner of burying the Dead.—Reſemblance of the Natives on this Side of America to the Greenlanders and Eſquimaux.—Tides.—Obſervations for determining the longitude of Oonalaſhka. 488

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XII.

Departure from Oonalaſhka, and future Views.—The Iſland Amoghta.—Situation of a remarkable Rock.—The Strait between Oonalaſhka and Oonella repaſſed.—Progreſs to the South.—Melancholy Accident on board the Diſcovery.—Mowee, one of the Sandwich Iſlands, diſcovered.—Intercourſe with the Natives.—Viſit from Terreeoboo.—Another Iſland, called Owhyhee, diſcovered.—The Ships ply to Windward to get round it.—An Eclipſe of the Moon obſerved.—The Crews refuſe to drink Sugar-cane Beer.—Cordage deficient in Strength.—Commendation of the Natives of Owhyhee.—The Reſolution gets to Windward of the Iſland.—Her Progreſs down the South Eaſt Coaſt.—Views of the Country, and Viſits from the Natives.—The Diſcovery joins.—Slow Progreſs Weſtward.—Karakakooa Bay examined by Mr. Bligh.—Vaſt Concourſe of the Natives.—The Ships anchor in the Bay. 525

ERRATA.

Page 190. *For* CHAP. X. *read* CHAP. XI.
—— 221. *For* CHAP. XI. *read* CHAP. XII.

A

VOYAGE

TO THE

PACIFIC OCEAN.

BOOK III.

Tranſactions at Otaheite, and the Society Iſlands; and Proſecution of the Voyage to the Coaſt of North America.

CHAP. I.

An Eclipſe of the Moon obſerved.—The Iſland Toobouai diſcovered.—Its Situation, Extent, and Appearance.—Intercourſe with its Inhabitants.—Their Perſons, Dreſſes, and Canoes, deſcribed.—Arrival in Oheitepeha Bay at Otaheite.—Omai's Reception, and imprudent Conduct.—Account of Spaniſh Ships twice viſiting the Iſland.—Interview with the Chief of this Diſtrict.—The Olla, or God, of Bolabola.—A mad Prophet.—Arrival in Matavai Bay.

HAVING, as before related*, taken our final leave of the Friendly Iſlands, I now reſume my narrative of the voyage. In the evening of the 17th of July, at eight o'clock, the body of Eaoo bore North Eaſt by North, diſtant three or four leagues. The wind was now

1777. July. Thurſday 17.

* See the concluſion of Chap. IX. Book II.

1777. July. Friday 18. at Eaſt, and blew a freſh gale. With it I ſtood to the South, till half an hour paſt ſix o'clock the next morning, when a ſudden ſquall, from the ſame direction, took our ſhip aback; and, before the ſhips could be trimmed, on the other tack, the main-ſail and the top-gallant ſails were much torn.

Saturday 19. Sunday 20. Monday 21. The wind kept between the South Weſt, and South Eaſt, on the 19th and 20th; afterward; it veered to the Eaſt, North Eaſt, and North. The night between the 20th and 21ſt, an eclipſe of the moon was obſerved as follows; being then in the latitude of 22° 57½′ South,

		Apparent time, A. M. H.	M.	S.	
Beginning, by	Mr. King, at	0	32	50	Mean long. 186° 57½′.
	Mr. Bligh, at	0	33	25	
	Myſelf, at	0	33	35	
End, by	Mr. King, at	1	44	56	Mean long. 186° 28½′. Time keep. 186° 58½′.
	Mr. Bligh, at	1	44	6	
	Myſelf, at	1	44	56	

The latitude and longitude are thoſe of the ſhip, at 8ʰ 56ᵐ A. M. being the time when the ſun's altitude was taken for finding the apparent time. At the beginning of the eclipſe, the moon was in the zenith; ſo that it was found moſt convenient to make uſe of the ſextants; and to make the obſervations by the reflected image, which was brought down to a convenient altitude. The ſame was done at the end; except by Mr. King, who obſerved with a night teleſcope. Although the greateſt difference between our ſeveral obſervations, is no more than fifty ſeconds, it, nevertheleſs, appeared to me, that two obſervers might differ more than double that time, in both the beginning and end. And,

though the times are noted to ſeconds, no ſuch accuracy was pretended to. The odd ſeconds, ſet down above, aroſe by reducing the time, as given by the watch, to apparent time. 1777. July.

I continued to ſtretch to the Eaſt South Eaſt, with the wind at North Eaſt and North, without meeting with any thing worthy of note, till ſeven o'clock in the evening of the 29th; when we had a ſudden and very heavy ſquall of wind from the North. At this time, we were under ſingle reefed top-ſails, courſes, and ſtay-ſails. Two of the latter were blown to pieces; and it was with difficulty that we ſaved the other ſails. After this ſquall, we obſerved ſeveral lights moving about on board the Diſcovery; by which we concluded, that ſomething had given way; and, the next morning, we ſaw that her main-top-maſt had been loſt. Both wind and weather continued very unſettled till noon, this day, when the latter cleared up, and the former ſettled in the North Weſt quarter. At this time, we were in the latitude of 28° 6′ South, and our longitude was 198° 23′ Eaſt. Here we ſaw ſome pintado birds, being the firſt ſince we left the land. Monday 21. Tueſday 29. Wedneſ. 30.

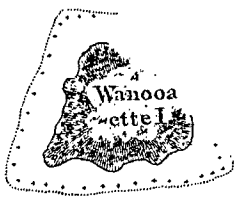
On the 31ſt, at noon, Captain Clerke made a ſignal to ſpeak with me. By the return of the boat, which I ſent on board his ſhip, he informed me, that the head of the main-maſt had been juſt diſcovered to be ſprung, in ſuch a manner, as to render the rigging of another top maſt very dangerous; and that, therefore, he muſt rig ſomething lighter in its place. He alſo informed me, that he had loſt his main-top-gallant-yard; and that he neither had another, nor a ſpar to make one, on board. The Reſolution's ſprit-ſail top-ſail-yard, which I ſent him, ſupplied this want. The next day, he got up a jury top-maſt, on which he ſet a mizen-top-ſail; and this enabled him to keep way with the Reſolution. Thurſday 31. Auguſt. Friday 1.

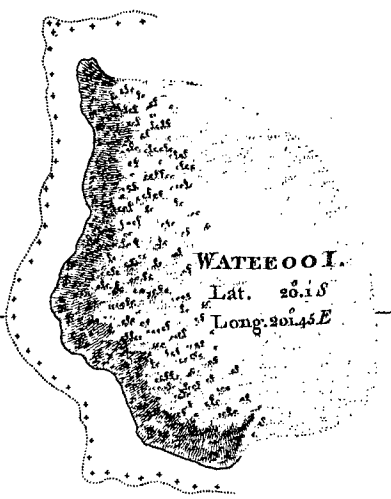
1777. Auguſt. The wind was fixed in the Weſtern board; that is, from the North, round by the Weſt to South, and I ſteered Eaſt North Eaſt, and North Eaſt, without meeting with any thing
Friday 8. remarkable, till eleven o'clock in the morning of the 8th of Auguſt, when land was ſeen, bearing North North Eaſt, nine or ten leagues diſtant. At firſt, it appeared in detached hills, like ſo many ſeparate iſlands; but, as we drew nearer, we found, that they were all connected, and belonged to one and the ſame iſland. I ſteered directly for it, with a fine gale at South Eaſt by South; and, at half paſt ſix o'clock, in the afternoon, it extended from North by Eaſt, to North North Eaſt ¼ Eaſt, diſtant three or four leagues.

The night was ſpent ſtanding off and on; and, at day-
Saturday 9. break, the next morning, I ſteered for the North Weſt, or lee ſide, of the iſland; and, as we ſtood round its South or South-Weſt part, we ſaw it every where guarded by a reef of coral rock, extending, in ſome places, a full mile from the land, and a high ſurf breaking upon it. Some thought that they ſaw land to the Southward of this iſland; but, as that was to the windward, it was left undetermined. As we drew near, we ſaw people on ſeveral parts of the coaſt, walking, or running along ſhore; and, in a little time, after we had reached the lee-ſide of the iſland, we ſaw them launch two canoes, into which above a dozen men got, and paddled toward us.

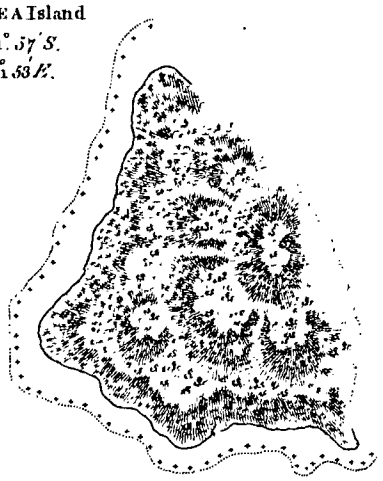
I now ſhortened ſail, as well to give theſe canoes time to come up with us, as to ſound for anchorage. At the diſtance of about half a mile from the reef, we found from forty to thirty-five fathoms water, over a bottom of fine ſand. Nearer in, the bottom was ſtrewed with coral rocks. The canoes having advanced to about the diſtance of a piſtol-

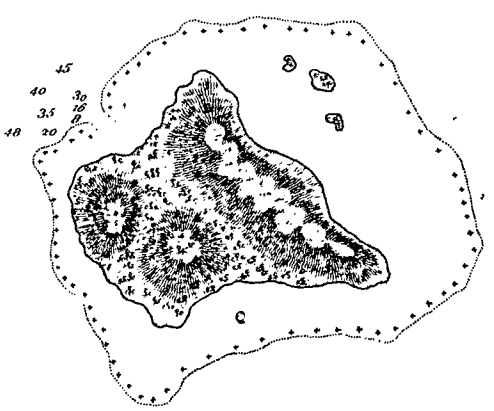
ſhot





MANGEEA Island
Lat. 21°.57 S.
Long. 201°.53 E.





TOOBOUAI Island
Lat. 23°. 25 S.
Long. 210. 37 E.

5 Scale of Nautic Miles to the Three Plans. 10 15

ſhot from the ſhip, there ſtopped. Omai was employed, as he uſually had been on ſuch occaſions, to uſe all his eloquence to prevail upon the men in them to come nearer; but no intreaties could induce them to truſt themſelves within our reach. They kept eagerly pointing to the ſhore, with their paddles, and calling to us to go thither; and ſeveral of their countrymen, who ſtood upon the beach, held up ſomething white, which we conſidered alſo as an invitation to land. We could very well have done this, as there was good anchorage without the reef, and a break or opening in it, from whence the canoes had come out, which had no ſurf upon it, and where, if there was not water for the ſhips, there was more than ſufficient for the boats. But I did not think proper to riſk loſing the advantage of a fair wind, for the ſake of examining an iſland, that appeared to be of little conſequence. We ſtood in no need of refreſhments, if I had been ſure of meeting with them there; and having already been ſo unexpectedly delayed in my progreſs to the Society Iſlands, I was deſirous of avoiding every poſſibility of farther retardment. For this reaſon, after making ſeveral unſucceſsful attempts to induce theſe people to come along-ſide, I made ſail to the North, and left them; but not without getting from them, during their vicinity to our ſhip, the name of their iſland, which they called Tooboai. 1777. Auguſt.

It is ſituated in the latitude of 23° 25′, South; and in 210° 37′, Eaſt longitude. Its greateſt extent, in any direction, excluſive of the reef, is not above five or ſix miles. On the North Weſt ſide, the reef appears in detached pieces, beyond which, the ſea ſeems to break upon the ſhore. Small as the iſland is, there are hills in it of a conſiderable elevation. At the foot of the hills, is a narrow border of flat land,

1777. August. land, running quite round it, edged with a white ſand beach. The hills are covered with graſs, or ſome other herbage, except a few ſteep, rocky cliffs at one part, with patches of trees interſperſed to their ſummits. But the plantations are more numerous, in ſome of the vallies; and the flat border is quite covered with high, ſtrong trees, whoſe different kinds we could not diſcern, except ſome cocoa-palms, and a few of the *etoa*. According to the information of the men in the canoes, their iſland is ſtocked with hogs and fowls; and produces the ſeveral fruits and roots that are found at the other iſlands in this part of the Pacific Ocean.

We had an opportunity, from the converſation we had with thoſe who came off to us, of ſatisfying ourſelves, that the inhabitants of Toobouai ſpeak the Otaheite language; a circumſtance that indubitably proves them to be of the ſame nation. Thoſe of them whom we ſaw in the canoes, were a ſtout copper-coloured people, with ſtraight black hair, which ſome of them wore tied in a bunch on the crown of the head, and others, flowing about the ſhoulders. Their faces were ſomewhat round and full, but the features, upon the whole, rather flat; and their countenances ſeemed to expreſs ſome degree of natural ferocity. They had no covering but a piece of narrow ſtuff wrapped about the waiſt, and made to paſs between the thighs, to cover the adjoining parts; but ſome of thoſe whom we ſaw upon the beach, where about a hundred perſons had aſſembled, were entirely clothed with a kind of white garment. We could obſerve, that ſome of our viſiters, in the canoes, wore pearl ſhells, hung about the neck, as an ornament. One of them kept blowing a large conch-ſhell, to which a reed, near two feet long, was fixed; at firſt, with a continued tone of the

ſame

ſame kind; but he, afterward, converted it into a kind of muſical inſtrument, perpetually repeating two or three notes, with the ſame ſtrength. What the blowing the conch portended, I cannot ſay; but I never found it the meſſenger of peace. 1777. Auguſt.

Their canoes appeared to be about thirty feet long, and two feet above the ſurface of the water, as they floated. The fore part projected a little, and had a notch cut acroſs, as if intended to repreſent the mouth of ſome animal. The after-part roſe, with a gentle curve, to the height of two or three feet, turning gradually ſmaller, and, as well as the upper part of the ſides, was carved all over. The reſt of the ſides, which were perpendicular, were curiouſly incruſtated with flat white ſhells, diſpoſed nearly in concentric ſemicircles, with the curve upward. One of the canoes carried ſeven, and the other eight men; and they were managed with ſmall paddles, whoſe blades were nearly round. Each of them had a pretty long outrigger; and they ſometimes paddled, with the two oppoſite ſides together ſo cloſe, that they ſeemed to be one boat with two outriggers; the rowers, turning their faces occaſionally to the ſtern, and pulling that way, without paddling the canoes round. When they ſaw us determined to leave them, they ſtood up in their canoes, and repeated ſomething, very loudly, in concert; but we could not tell, whether this was meant as a mark of their friendſhip or enmity. It is certain, however, that they had no weapons with them; nor could we perceive, with our glaſſes, that thoſe on ſhore had any.

After leaving this iſland, from the diſcovery of which, future navigators may poſſibly derive ſome advantage, I ſteered to the North, with a freſh gale at Eaſt by South, and,

at

1777. August. Tuesday 12. at day-break, in the morning of the 12th, we saw the island of Maitea. Soon after, Otaheite made its appearance; and, at noon, it extended from South West by West, to West North West; the point of Oheitepeha Bay bearing West, about four leagues distant. I steered for this bay, intending to anchor there, in order to draw what refreshments I could from the South East part of the island, before I went down to Matavai; from the neighbourhood of which station I expected my principal supply. We had a fresh gale Easterly, till two o'clock in the afternoon; when, being about a league from the bay, the wind suddenly died away, and was succeeded by baffling, light airs, from every direction, and calms, by turns. This lasted about two hours. Then we had sudden squalls, with rain, from the East. These carried us before the bay, where we got a breeze from the land, and attempted, in vain, to work in, to gain the anchoring-place. So that, at last, about nine o'clock, we were obliged to stand out, and to spend the night at sea.

When we first drew near the island, several canoes came off to the ship, each conducted by two or three men. But, as they were common fellows, Omai took no particular notice of them, nor they of him. They did not, even, seem to perceive, that he was one of their countrymen, although they conversed with him for some time. At length, a Chief, whom I had known before, named Ootee, and Omai's brother-in-law, who chanced to be now at this corner of the island, and three or four more persons, all of whom knew Omai, before he embarked with Captain Furneaux, came on board. Yet there was nothing either tender or striking in their meeting. On the contrary, there seemed to be a perfect indifference on both sides, till Omai, having taken his brother down into the cabin, opened the drawer where

he kept his red feathers, and gave him a few. This being presently known, amongst the rest of the natives upon deck, the face of affairs was intirely turned, and Ootee, who would hardly speak to Omai before, now begged, that they might be *tayos**, and exchange names. Omai accepted of the honour, and confirmed it with a present of red feathers; and Ootee, by way of return, sent ashore for a hog. But it was evident to every one of us, that it was not the man, but his property, they were in love with. Had he not shewn to them his treasure of red feathers, which is the commodity in greatest estimation at the island, I question much whether they would have bestowed even a cocoa-nut upon him. Such was Omai's first reception amongst his countrymen. I own, I never expected it would be otherwise; but, still, I was in hopes, that the valuable cargo of presents, with which the liberality of his friends in England had loaded him, would be the means of raising him into consequence, and of making him respected, and even courted, by the first persons throughout the extent of the Society Islands. This could not but have happened, had he conducted himself with any degree of prudence. But, instead of it, I am sorry to say, that he paid too little regard to the repeated advice of those who wished him well, and suffered himself to be duped by every designing knave. 1777. August.

From the natives who came off to us, in the course of this day, we learnt, that two ships had twice been in Oheitepeha Bay, since my last visit to this island in 1774, and that they had left animals there, such as we had on board. But, on farther inquiry, we found, they were only hogs, dogs, goats, one bull, and the male of some other animal, which, from

* Friends.

1777. Auguſt. the imperfect deſcription now given us, we could not find out. They told us, that theſe ſhips had come from a place called *Reema*; by which we gueſſed, that Lima, the capital of Peru, was meant, and that theſe late viſiters were Spaniards. We were informed, that the firſt time they came, they built a houſe, and left four men behind them, *viz.* two prieſts, a boy or ſervant, and a fourth perſon, called Mateema, who was much ſpoken of at this time; carrying away with them, when they ſailed, four of the natives; that, in about ten months, the ſame two ſhips returned, bringing back two of the iſlanders, the other two having died at Lima; and that, after a ſhort ſtay, they took away their own people; but that the houſe, which they had built, was left ſtanding.

The important news, of red feathers being on board our ſhips, having been conveyed on ſhore by Omai's friends, Wedneſ. 13. day had no ſooner begun to break, next morning, than we were ſurrounded by a multitude of canoes, crowded with people, bringing hogs and fruits to market. At firſt, a quantity of feathers, not greater than what might be got from a tom-tit, would purchaſe a hog, of forty or fifty pounds weight. But, as almoſt every body in the ſhips was poſſeſſed of ſome of this precious article of trade, it fell, in its value, above five hundred *per cent.* before night. However, even then, the balance was much in our favour; and red feathers continued to preſerve their ſuperiority over every other commodity. Some of the natives would not part with a hog, unleſs they received an axe in exchange; but nails, and beads, and other trinkets, which, during our former voyages, had ſo great a run at this iſland, were now ſo much deſpiſed, that few would deign ſo much as to look at them.

There

There being but little wind all the morning, it was nine o'clock before we could get to an anchor in the bay; where we moored with the two bowers. Soon after we had anchored, Omai's ſiſter came on board to ſee him. I was happy to obſerve, that, much to the honour of them both, their meeting was marked with expreſſions of the tendereſt affection, eaſier to be conceived than to be deſcribed. 1777. Auguſt.

This moving ſcene having cloſed, and the ſhip being properly moored, Omai and I went aſhore. My firſt object was to pay a viſit to a man whom my friend repreſented as a very extraordinary perſonage indeed, for he ſaid, that he was the god of Bolabola. We found him ſeated under one of thoſe ſmall awnings, which they uſually carry in their larger canoes. He was an elderly man, and had loſt the uſe of his limbs; ſo that he was carried from place to place upon a hand-barrow. Some called him *Olla*, or *Orra*, which is the name of the god of Bolabola; but his own proper name was Etary. From Omai's account of this perſon, I expected to have ſeen ſome religious adoration paid to him. But, excepting ſome young plantain trees that lay before him, and upon the awning under which he ſat, I could obſerve nothing by which he might be diſtinguiſhed from their other Chiefs. Omai preſented to him a tuft of red feathers, tied to the end of a ſmall ſtick; but, after a little converſation on indifferent matters with this Bolabola man, his attention was drawn to an old woman, the ſiſter of his mother. She was already at his feet, and had bedewed them plentifully with tears of joy.

I left him with the old lady, in the midſt of a number of people, who had gathered round him, and went to take a view of the houſe, ſaid to be built by the ſtrangers who had lately been here. I found it ſtanding at a ſmall diſtance

1777. August. from the beach. The wooden materials, of which it was compoſed, ſeemed to have been brought hither, ready prepared, to be ſet up occaſionally; for all the planks were numbered. It was divided into two ſmall rooms; and in the inner one were, a bedſtead, a table, a bench, ſome old hats, and other trifles, of which the natives ſeemed to be very careful, as alſo of the houſe itſelf, which had ſuffered no hurt from the weather, a ſhed having been built over it. There were ſcuttles all around, which ſerved as air holes; and, perhaps, they were alſo meant to fire from, with muſquets, if ever this ſhould have been found neceſſary. At a little diſtance from the front, ſtood a wooden croſs, on the tranſverſe part of which was cut the following inſcription:

Chriſtus vincit.

And, on the perpendicular part (which confirmed our conjecture, that the two ſhips were Spaniſh),

Carolus III. *imperat.* 1774.

On the other ſide of the poſt, I preſerved the memory of the prior viſits of the Engliſh, by inſcribing,

Georgius tertius Rex,
Annis 1767,
1769, 1773, 1774, & 1777.

The natives pointed out to us, near the foot of the croſs, the grave of the Commodore of the two ſhips, who had died here, while they lay in the bay, the firſt time. His name, as they pronounced it, was Oreede. Whatever the intentions of the Spaniards, in viſiting this iſland, might be, they ſeemed to have taken great pains to ingratiate themſelves with the inhabitants; who, upon every occaſion, mentioned them with the ſtrongeſt expreſſions of eſteem and veneration.

I met with no Chief of any conſiderable note on this occaſion, excepting the extraordinary perſonage above deſcribed. Waheiadooa, the ſovereign of Tiaraboo (as this part of the iſland is called), was now abſent; and, I afterward found, that he was not the ſame perſon, though of the ſame name with the Chief whom I had ſeen here during my laſt voyage; but his brother, a boy of about ten years of age, who had ſucceeded upon the death of the elder Waheiadooa, about twenty months before our arrival. We alſo learned, that the celebrated Oberea was dead; but that Otoo, and all our other friends, were living. 1777. Auguſt.

When I returned from viewing the houſe and croſs erected by the Spaniards, I found Omai holding forth to a large company; and it was with ſome difficulty that he could be got away to accompany me on board; where I had an important affair to ſettle.

As I knew that Otaheite, and the neighbouring iſlands, could furniſh us with a plentiful ſupply of cocoa-nuts, the liquor of which is an excellent *ſuccedaneum* for any artificial beverage, I was deſirous of prevailing upon my people to conſent to be abridged, during our ſtay here, of their ſtated allowance of ſpirits to mix with water. But as this ſtoppage of a favourite article, without aſſigning ſome reaſon, might have occaſioned a general murmur, I thought it moſt prudent to aſſemble the ſhip's company, and to make known to them the intent of the voyage, and the extent of our future operations? To induce them to undertake which, with cheerfulneſs and perſeverance, I took notice of the rewards offered, by Parliament, to ſuch of his Majeſty's ſubjects as ſhall firſt diſcover a communication between the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans, in any direction whatever, in the North-

ern

1777. August. ern hemiſphere; and alſo to ſuch as ſhall firſt penetrate beyond the 89th degree of Northern latitude. I made no doubt, I told them, that I ſhould find them willing to co-operate with me in attempting, as far as might be poſſible, to become intitled to one or both theſe rewards; but, that to give us the beſt chance of ſucceeding, it would be neceſſary to obſerve the utmoſt œconomy in the expenditure of our ſtores and proviſions, particularly the latter, as there was no probability of getting a ſupply, any where, after leaving theſe iſlands. I ſtrengthened my argument by reminding them, that our voyage muſt laſt at leaſt a year longer than had been originally ſuppoſed, by our having already loſt the opportunity of getting to the North this ſummer. I begged them to conſider the various obſtructions and difficulties we might ſtill meet with, and the aggravated hardſhips they would labour under, if it ſhould be found neceſſary to put them to ſhort allowance, of any ſpecies of proviſions, in a cold climate. For theſe very ſubſtantial reaſons, I ſubmitted to them, whether it would not be better to be prudent in time, and rather than to run the riſk of having no ſpirits left, when ſuch a cordial would be moſt wanted, to conſent to be without their grog now, when we had ſo excellent a liquor as that of cocoa-nuts to ſubſtitute in its place; but that, after all, I left the determination entirely to their own choice.

I had the ſatisfaction to find, that this propoſal did not remain a ſingle moment under conſideration; being unanimouſly approved of, immediately, without any objection. I ordered Captain Clerke to make the ſame propoſal to his people; which they alſo agreed to. Accordingly, we ſtopped ſerving grog, except on Saturday nights; when the companies

companies of both ſhips had full allowance of it, that they might drink the healths of their female friends in England; leſt theſe, amongſt the pretty girls of Otaheite, ſhould be wholly forgotten. 1777. Auguſt.

The next day, we began ſome neceſſary operations; to inſpect the proviſions that were in the main and fore hold; to get the caſks of beef and pork, and the coals, out of the ground tier; and to put ſome ballaſt in their place. The caulkers were ſet to work to caulk the ſhip, which ſhe ſtood in great need of; having, at times, made much water on our paſſage from the Friendly Iſlands. I alſo put on ſhore the bull, cows, horſes, and ſheep, and appointed two men to look after them while grazing; for I did not intend to leave any of them, at this part of the iſland. Thurſday 14.

During the two following days, it hardly ever ceaſed raining. The natives, nevertheleſs, came to us from every quarter, the news of our arrival having rapidly ſpread. Waheiadooa, though at a diſtance, had been informed of it; and, in the afternoon of the 16th, a Chief, named Etorea, under whoſe tutorage he was, brought me two hogs as a preſent from him; and acquainted me, that he himſelf would be with us the day after. And ſo it proved; for I received a meſſage from him the next morning, notifying his arrival, and deſiring I would go aſhore to meet him. Accordingly, Omai and I prepared to pay him a formal viſit. On this occaſion, Omai, aſſiſted by ſome of his friends, dreſſed himſelf; not after the Engliſh faſhion, nor that of Otaheite, nor that of Tongataboo, nor in the dreſs of any country upon earth; but in a ſtrange medley of all that he was poſſeſſed of. Friday 15. Saturday 16. Sunday 17.

1777. August. Thus equipped, on our landing, we firſt viſited Etary; who, carried on a hand-barrow, attended us to a large houſe, where he was ſet down; and we ſeated ourſelves on each ſide of him. I cauſed a piece of Tongataboo cloth to be ſpread out before us, on which I laid the preſents I intended to make. Preſently the young Chief came, attended by his mother, and ſeveral principal men, who all ſeated themſelves, at the other end of the cloth, facing us. Then a man, who ſat by me, made a ſpeech, conſiſting of ſhort and ſeparate ſentences; part of which was dictated by thoſe about him. He was anſwered by one from the oppoſite ſide, near the Chief. Etary ſpoke next; then Omai; and both of them were anſwered from the ſame quarter. Theſe orations were entirely about my arrival, and connections with them. The perſon who ſpoke laſt, told me, amongſt other things, that the men of *Reema*, that is, the Spaniards, had deſired them not to ſuffer me to come into Oheitepeha Bay, if I ſhould return any more to the iſland, for that it belonged to them; but that they were ſo far from paying any regard to this requeſt, that he was authorized now to make a formal ſurrender of the province of Tiaraboo to me, and of every thing in it; which marks very plainly, that theſe people are no ſtrangers to the policy of accommodating themſelves to preſent circumſtances. At length, the young Chief was directed, by his attendants, to come and embrace me; and, by way of confirming this treaty of friendſhip, we exchanged names. The ceremony being cloſed, he and his friends accompanied me on board to dinner.

Omai had prepared a *maro*, compoſed of red and yellow feathers, which he intended for Otoo, the king of the whole iſland; and, conſidering where we were, it was a preſent of

of very great value. I ſaid all that I could to perſuade him not to produce it now, wiſhing him to keep it on board till an opportunity ſhould offer of preſenting it to Otoo, with his own hands. But he had too good an opinion of the honeſty and fidelity of his countrymen to take my advice. Nothing would ſerve him, but to carry it aſhore, on this occaſion, and to give it to Waheiadooa, to be by him forwarded to Otoo, in order to its being added to the royal *maro*. He thought, by this management, that he ſhould oblige both Chiefs; whereas he highly diſobliged the one, whoſe favour was of the moſt conſequence to him, without gaining any reward from the other. What I had foreſeen happened. For Waheiadooa kept the *maro* for himſelf, and only ſent to Otoo a very ſmall piece of feathers; not the twentieth part of what belonged to the magnificent preſent. 1777. Auguſt.

On the 19th, this young Chief made me a preſent of ten or a dozen hogs, a quantity of fruit, and ſome cloth. In the evening, we played off ſome fireworks, which both aſtoniſhed and entertained the numerous ſpectators. Tueſday 19.

This day, ſome of our gentlemen, in their walks, found, what they were pleaſed to call, a Roman Catholic chapel. Indeed, from their account, this was not to be doubted; for they deſcribed the altar, and every other conſtituent part of ſuch a place of worſhip. However, as they mentioned, at the ſame time, that two men, who had the care of it, would not ſuffer them to go in, I thought that they might be miſtaken, and had the curioſity to pay a viſit to it myſelf. The ſuppoſed chapel proved to be a *toopapaoo*, in which the remains of the late Waheiadooa lay, as it were, in ſtate. It was in a pretty large houſe, which was incloſed with a low palliſade. The *toopapaoo* was uncommonly neat, and reſembled one

1777. August. of thoſe little houſes, or awnings, belonging to their large canoes. Perhaps, it had originally been employed for that purpoſe. It was covered, and hung round, with cloth and mats of different colours, ſo as to have a pretty effect. There was one piece of ſcarlet broad-cloth, four or five yards in length, conſpicuous amongſt the other ornaments; which, no doubt, had been a preſent from the Spaniards. This cloth, and a few taſſels of feathers, which our Gentlemen ſuppoſed to be ſilk, ſuggeſted to them the idea of a chapel; for whatever elſe was wanting to create a reſemblance, their imagination ſupplied; and if they had not previouſly known, that there had been Spaniards lately here, they could not poſſibly have made the miſtake. Small offerings of fruit and roots ſeemed to be daily made at this ſhrine, as ſome pieces were quite freſh. Theſe were depoſited upon a *whatta*, or altar, which ſtood without the palliſades; and within theſe we were not permitted to enter. Two men conſtantly attended, night and day, not only to watch over the place, but alſo to dreſs and undreſs the *toopapaoo*. For when I firſt went to ſurvey it, the cloth and its appendages were all rolled up; but, at my requeſt, the two attendants hung it out in order, firſt dreſſing themſelves in clean white robes. They told me, that the Chief had been dead twenty months.

Friday 22. Having taken in a freſh ſupply of water, and finiſhed all our other neceſſary operations, on the 22d, I brought off the cattle and ſheep, which had been put on ſhore here to graze; and made ready for ſea.

Saturday 23. In the morning of the 23d, while the ſhips were unmooring, Omai and I landed, to take leave of the young Chief. While we were with him, one of thoſe enthuſiaſtic perſons,

whom they call *Eatooas*, from a perſuaſion that they are poſſeſſed with the ſpirit of the divinity, came and ſtood before us. He had all the appearance of a man not in his right ſenſes; and his only dreſs was a large quantity of plantain leaves, wrapped round his waiſt. He ſpoke in a low, ſqueaking voice, ſo as hardly to be underſtood; at leaſt, not by me. But Omai ſaid, that he comprehended him perfectly, and that he was adviſing Waheiadooa not to go with me to Matavai; an expedition which I had never heard that he intended, nor had I ever made ſuch a propoſal to him. The *Eatooa* alſo foretold, that the ſhips would not get to Matavai that day. But in this he was miſtaken; though appearances now rather favoured his prediction, there not being a breath of wind in any direction. While he was propheſying, there fell a very heavy ſhower of rain, which made every one run for ſhelter, but himſelf, who ſeemed not to regard it. He remained ſqueaking, by us, about half an hour, and then retired. No one paid any attention to what he uttered; though ſome laughed at him. I aſked the Chief, what he was, whether an *Earee*, or a *Towtow?* and the anſwer I received was, that he was *taata eno*; that is, a bad man. And yet, notwithſtanding this, and the little notice any of the natives ſeemed to take of the mad prophet, ſuperſtition has ſo far got the better of their reaſon, that they firmly believe ſuch perſons to be poſſeſſed with the ſpirit of the *Eatooa*. Omai ſeemed to be very well inſtructed about them. He ſaid, that, during the fits that come upon them, they know nobody, not even their moſt intimate acquaintances; and that, if any one of them happens to be a man of property, he will very often give away every moveable he is poſſeſſed of, if his friends do not put them out of his reach; and, when he recovers, will inquire what had

1777. Auguſt.

1777. August. become of thoſe very things, which he had, but juſt before, diſtributed, not ſeeming to have the leaſt remembrance of what he had done, while the fit was upon him.

As ſoon as I got on board, a light breeze ſpringing up at Eaſt, we got under ſail, and ſteered for Matavai Bay*; where the Reſolution anchored the ſame evening. But the Sunday 24. Diſcovery did not get in till the next morning; ſo that half of the man's prophecy was fulfilled.

* See a plan of this bay, in Hawkeſworth's Collection, Vol. ii. p. 248.

CHAP. II.

Interview with Otoo, King of the Iſland.—Imprudent Conduct of Omai.—Employments on Shore.—European Animals landed.—Particulars about a Native who had viſited Lima.—About Oedidee.—A Revolt in Eimeo.—War with that Iſland determined upon, in a Council of Chiefs.—A human Sacrifice on that Account.—A particular Relation of the Ceremonies at the great Morai, where the Sacrifice was offered.—Other barbarous Cuſtoms of this People.

ABOUT nine o'clock in the morning, Otoo, the King of the whole iſland, attended by a great number of canoes full of people, came from Oparre, his place of reſidence, and having landed on Matavai Point, ſent a meſſage on board, expreſſing his deſire to ſee me there. Accordingly I landed, accompanied by Omai, and ſome of the officers. We found a prodigious number of people aſſembled on this occaſion, and in the midſt of them was the king, attended by his father, his two brothers, and three ſiſters. I went up, firſt, and ſaluted him, being followed by Omai, who kneeled and embraced his legs. He had prepared himſelf for this ceremony, by dreſſing himſelf in his very beſt ſuit of clothes, and behaved with a great deal of reſpect and

1777. Auguſt. Sunday 24.

1777. August. and modeſty. Nevertheleſs, very little notice was taken of him. Perhaps, envy had ſome ſhare in producing this cold reception. He made the Chief a preſent of a large piece of red feathers, and about two or three yards of gold cloth; and I gave him a ſuit of fine linen, a gold-laced hat, ſome tools, and, what was of more value than all the other articles, a quantity of red feathers, and one of the bonnets in uſe at the Friendly Iſlands.

After the hurry of this viſit was over, the king, and the whole royal family, accompanied me on board, followed by ſeveral canoes, laden with all kind of proviſions, in quantity ſufficient to have ſerved the companies of both ſhips for a week. Each of the family owned, or pretended to own, a part; ſo that I had a preſent from every one of them; and every one of them had a ſeparate preſent in return from me; which was the great object in view. Soon after, the king's mother, who had not been preſent at the firſt interview, came on board, bringing with her a quantity of proviſions and cloth, which ſhe divided between me and Omai. For, although he was but little noticed, at firſt, by his countrymen, they no ſooner gained the knowledge of his riches, than they began to court his friendſhip. I encouraged this as much as I could; for it was my wiſh to fix him with Otoo. As I intended to leave all my European animals at this iſland, I thought he would be able to give ſome inſtruction about the management of them, and about their uſe. Beſides, I knew and ſaw, that the farther he was from his native iſland, he would be the better reſpected. But, unfortunately, poor Omai rejected my advice, and conducted himſelf in ſo imprudent a manner, that he ſoon loſt the friendſhip of Otoo, and of every other perſon of note in Otaheite. He aſſociated with none but vagabonds and ſtrangers,

ſtrangers, whoſe ſole views were to plunder him. And, if I had not interfered, they would not have left him a ſingle article worth the carrying from the iſland. This neceſſarily drew upon him the ill-will of the principal Chiefs; who found that they could not procure, from any one in the ſhips, ſuch valuable preſents as Omai beſtowed on the loweſt of the people, his companions. 1777. Auguſt.

As ſoon as we had dined, a party of us accompanied Otoo to Oparre, taking with us the poultry, with which we were to ſtock the iſland. They conſiſted of a peacock and hen (which Lord Beſborough was ſo kind as to ſend me, for this purpoſe, a few days before I left London); a turkey cock and hen; one gander, and three geeſe; a drake, and four ducks. All theſe I left at Oparre, in the poſſeſſion of Otoo; and the geeſe and ducks began to breed, before we ſailed. We found there, a gander, which the natives told us, was the ſame that Captain Wallis had given to Oberea ten years before; ſeveral goats; and the Spaniſh bull, whom they kept tied to a tree, near Otoo's houſe. I never ſaw a finer animal of his kind. He was now the property of Etary, and had been brought from Oheitepeha to this place, in order to be ſhipped for Bolabola. But it paſſes my comprehenſion, how they can contrive to carry him in one of their canoes. If we had not arrived, it would have been of little conſequence who had the property of him, as, without a cow, he could be of no uſe; and none had been left with him. Though the natives told us, that there were cows on board the Spaniſh ſhips, and that they took them away with them, I cannot believe this; and ſhould rather ſuppoſe, that they had died in the paſſage from Lima. The next day, I Monday 25, ſent the three cows, that I had on board, to this bull; and the

1777. August. the bull, which I had brought, the horſe and mare, and ſheep, I put aſhore at Matavai.

Having thus diſpoſed of theſe paſſengers, I found myſelf lightened of a very heavy burthen. The trouble and vexation that attended the bringing this living cargo thus far, is hardly to be conceived. But the ſatisfaction that I felt, in having been ſo fortunate as to fulfil his Majeſty's humane deſign, in ſending ſuch valuable animals, to ſupply the wants of two worthy nations, ſufficiently recompenſed me for the many anxious hours I had paſſed, before this ſubordinate object of my voyage could be carried into execution.

As I intended to make ſome ſtay here, we ſet up the two obſervatories on Matavai Point. Adjoining to them, two tents were pitched, for the reception of a guard, and of ſuch people as it might be neceſſary to leave on ſhore, in different departments. At this ſtation, I intruſted the command to Mr. King; who, at the ſame time, attended the obſervations, for aſcertaining the going of the time-keeper, and other purpoſes. During our ſtay, various neceſſary operations employed the crews of both ſhips. The Diſcovery's main-maſt was carried aſhore, and made as good as ever. Our ſails and water-caſks were repaired; the ſhips were caulked; and the rigging all overhauled. We alſo inſpected all the bread that we had on board in caſks; and had the ſatisfaction to find, that but little of it was damaged.

Tueſday 26. On the 26th, I had a piece of ground cleared, for a garden, and planted it with ſeveral articles; very few of which, I believe, the natives will ever look after. Some melons, potatoes, and two pine-apple plants, were in a fair way

way of ſucceeding, before we left the place. I had brought, from the Friendly Iſlands, ſeveral ſhaddock trees. Theſe I alſo planted here; and they can hardly fail of ſucceſs, unleſs their growth ſhould be checked by the ſame premature curioſity, which deſtroyed a vine planted by the Spaniards at Oheitepeha. A number of the natives got together, to taſte the firſt fruit it bore; but, as the grapes were ſtill ſour, they conſidered it as little better than poiſon, and it was unanimouſly determined, to tread it under foot. In that ſtate, Omai found it by chance, and was overjoyed at the diſcovery. For he had a full confidence, that, if he had but grapes, he could eaſily make wine. Accordingly, he had ſeveral ſlips cut off from the tree, to carry away with him; and we pruned, and put in order, the remains of it. Probably, grown wiſe by Omai's inſtructions, they may now ſuffer the fruit to grow to perfection, and not paſs ſo haſty a ſentence upon it again. 1777. Auguſt.

We had not been eight and forty hours at anchor in Matavai Bay, before we were viſited by all our old friends, whoſe names are recorded in the account of my laſt voyage. Not one of them came empty handed; ſo that we had more proviſions than we knew what to do with. What was ſtill more, we were under no apprehenſions of exhauſting the iſland, which preſented to our eyes every mark of the moſt exuberant plenty, in every article of refreſhment.

Soon after our arrival here, one of the natives, whom the Spaniards had carried with them to Lima, paid us a viſit; but, in his external appearance, he was not diſtinguiſhable from the reſt of his countrymen. However, he had not forgot ſome Spaniſh words which he had acquired, though he pronounced them badly. Amongſt them, the moſt frequent were, *ſi Sennor*; and, when a ſtranger was introduced

1777. August. to him, he did not fail to riſe up and accoſt him, as well as he could.

We alſo found here, the young man whom we called Oedidee, but whoſe real name is Heete-heete. I had carried him from Ulietea in 1773, and brought him back in 1774; after he had viſited the Friendly Iſlands, New Zealand, Eaſter Iſland, and the Marqueſes, and been on board my ſhip, in that extenſive navigation, about ſeven months. He was, at leaſt, as tenacious of his good breeding, as the man who had been at Lima; and *yes, Sir*, or *if you pleaſe, Sir*, were as frequently repeated by him, as *ſi Sennor*, was by the other. Heete-heete, who is a native of Bolabola, had arrived in Otaheite, about three months before, with no other intention, that we could learn, than to gratify his curioſity, or, perhaps, ſome other favourite paſſion; which are, very often, the only objects of the purſuit of other travelling gentlemen. It was evident, however, that he preferred the modes, and even garb, of his countrymen, to ours. For, though I gave him ſome clothes, which our Admiralty Board had been pleaſed to ſend for his uſe (to which I added a cheſt of tools, and a few other articles, as a preſent from myſelf), he declined wearing them, after a few days. This inſtance, and that of the perſon who had been at Lima, may be urged as a proof of the ſtrong propenſity natural to man, of returning to habits acquired at an early age, and only interrupted by accident. And, perhaps, it may be concluded, that even Omai, who had imbibed almoſt the whole Engliſh manners, will, in a very ſhort time after our leaving him, like Oedidee, and the viſiter of Lima, return to his own native garments.

Wedneſ. 27. In the morning of the 27th, a man came from Oheiteipeha, and told us, that two Spaniſh ſhips had anchored in that

that bay the night before; and, in confirmation of this intelligence, he produced a piece of coarſe blue cloth, which, he ſaid, he got out of one of the ſhips; and which, indeed, to appearance, was almoſt quite new. He added, that Mateema was in one of the ſhips; and that they were to come down to Matavai in a day or two. Some other circumſtances which he mentioned, with the foregoing ones, gave the ſtory ſo much the air of truth, that I diſpatched Lieutenant Williamſon in a boat, to look into Oheitepeha bay; and, in the mean time, I put the ſhips into a proper poſture of defence. For, though England and Spain were in peace when I left Europe, for aught I knew, a different ſcene might, by this time, have opened. However, on farther inquiry, we had reaſon to think that the fellow, who brought the intelligence, had impoſed upon us; and this was put beyond all doubt, when Mr. Williamſon returned next day; who made his report to me, that he had been at Oheitepeha, and found that no ſhips were there now, and that none had been there ſince we left it. The people of this part of the iſland, where we now were, indeed, told us, from the beginning, that it was a fiction invented by thoſe of Tiaraboo. But what view they could have, we were at a loſs to conceive, unleſs they ſuppoſed, that the report would have ſome effect in making us quit the iſland, and, by that means, deprive the people of Otaheite-nooe of the advantages they might reap from our ſhips continuing there; the inhabitants of the two parts of the iſland being inveterate enemies to each other.

1777. Auguſt.

Thurſday 28.

From the time of our arrival at Matavai, the weather had been very unſettled, with more or leſs rain every day, till the 29th; before which we were not able to get equal altitudes of the ſun for aſcertaining the going of the time-

Friday 29.

1777. August. keeper. The ſame cauſe alſo retarded the caulking, and other neceſſary repairs of the ſhips.

In the evening of this day, the natives made a precipitate retreat, both from on board the ſhips, and from our ſtation on ſhore. For what reaſon, we could not, at firſt, learn; though, in general, we gueſſed it aroſe from their knowing that ſome theft had been committed, and apprehending puniſhment on that account. At length, I underſtood what had happened. One of the ſurgeon's mates had been in the country to purchaſe curioſities, and had taken with him four hatchets for that purpoſe. Having employed one of the natives to carry them for him, the fellow took an opportunity to run off with ſo valuable a prize. This was the cauſe of the ſudden flight, in which Otoo himſelf, and his whole family, had joined; and it was with difficulty that I ſtopped them, after following them two or three miles. As I had reſolved to take no meaſures for the recovery of the hatchets, in order to put my people upon their guard againſt ſuch negligence for the future, I found no difficulty in bringing the natives back, and in reſtoring every thing to its uſual tranquillity.

Saturday 30. Hitherto, the attention of Otoo and his people had been confined to us; but, next morning, a new ſcene of buſineſs opened, by the arrival of ſome meſſengers from Eimeo, or (as it is much oftener called by the natives) Morea*, with intelligence, that the people in that iſland were in arms; and that Otoo's partizans there had been worſted, and obliged to retreat to the mountains. The quarrel between the two iſlands, which commenced in 1774, as mentioned in

* Morea, according to Dr. Forſter, is a diſtrict in Eimeo. See his *Obſervations*, p. 217.

the

the account of my laſt voyage, had, it ſeems, partly ſubſiſted ever ſince. The formidable armament which I ſaw, at that time, and deſcribed †, had ſailed ſoon after I then left Otaheite; but the malcontents of Eimeo had made ſo ſtout a reſiſtance, that the fleet had returned without effecting much; and now another expedition was neceſſary. 1777. Auguſt.

On the arrival of theſe meſſengers, all the Chiefs, who happened to be at Matavai, aſſembled at Otoo's houſe, where I actually was at the time, and had the honour to be admitted into their council. One of the meſſengers opened the buſineſs of the aſſembly, in a ſpeech of conſiderable length. But I underſtood little of it, beſides its general purport, which was to explain the ſituation of affairs in Eimeo; and to excite the aſſembled Chiefs of Otaheite to arm on the occaſion. This opinion was combated by others who were againſt commencing hoſtilities; and the debate was carried on with great order; no more than one man ſpeaking at a time. At laſt, they became very noiſy, and I expected that our meeting would have ended like a Poliſh diet. But the contending great men cooled as faſt as they grew warm, and order was ſoon reſtored. At length, the party for war prevailed; and it was determined, that a ſtrong force ſhould be ſent to aſſiſt their friends in Eimeo. But this reſolution was far from being unanimous. Otoo, during the whole debate, remained ſilent; except that, now and then, he addreſſed a word or two to the ſpeakers. Thoſe of the council, who were for proſecuting the war, applied to me for my aſſiſtance; and all of them wanted to know what part I would take. Omai was ſent for to be my interpreter; but, as he could not be found, I was obliged to ſpeak for myſelf, and told them, as well as I could, that as

† See Cook's Voyage, Vol. i. p. 347, &c.

I was

1777. Auguſt. I was not thoroughly acquainted with the diſpute, and as the people of Eimeo had never offended me, I could not think myſelf at liberty to engage in hoſtilities againſt them. With this declaration they either were, or ſeemed, ſatisfied. The aſſembly then broke up; but, before I left them, Otoo deſired me to come to him in the afternoon, and to bring Omai with me.

Accordingly, a party of us waited upon him at the appointed time; and we were conducted by him to his father, in whoſe preſence the diſpute with Eimeo was again talked over. Being very deſirous of deviſing ſome method to bring about an accommodation, I founded the old Chief on that head. But we found him deaf to any ſuch propoſal, and fully determined to proſecute the war. He repeated the ſolicitations which I had already reſiſted, about giving them my aſſiſtance. On our inquiring into the cauſe of the war, we were told, that, ſome years ago, a brother of Waheadooa, of Tieraboo, was ſent to Eimeo, at the requeſt of Maheine, a popular Chief of that iſland, to be their king; but that he had not been there a week before Maheine, having cauſed him to be killed, ſet up for himſelf, in oppoſition to Tierataboonooe, his ſiſter's ſon, who became the lawful heir; or elſe had been pitched upon, by the people of Otaheite, to ſucceed to the government on the death of the other.

Towha, who is a relation of Otoo, and Chief of the diſtrict of Tettaha, a man of much weight in the iſland, and who had been Commander in Chief of the armament fitted out againſt Eimeo in 1774, happened not to be at Matavai at this time; and, conſequently, was not preſent at any of theſe conſultations. It, however, appeared that he was no ſtranger to

what was tranſacted; and that he entered with more ſpirit into the affair than any other Chief. For, early in the morning of the 1ſt of September, a meſſenger arrived from him to acquaint Otoo, that he had killed a man to be ſacrificed to the *Eatooa*, to implore the aſſiſtance of the God againſt Eimeo. This act of worſhip was to be performed at the great *Morai* at Attahooroo; and Otoo's preſence, it ſeems, was abſolutely neceſſary on that ſolemn occaſion. 1777. September. Monday 1.

That the offering of human ſacrifices is part of the religious inſtitutions of this iſland, had been mentioned by Monſ. de Bougainville, on the authority of the native whom he carried with him to France. During my laſt viſit to Otaheite, and while I had opportunities of converſing with Omai on the ſubject, I had ſatisfied myſelf, that there was too much reaſon to admit, that ſuch a practice, however inconſiſtent with the general humanity of the people, was here adopted. But as this was one of thoſe extraordinary facts, about which many are apt to retain doubts, unleſs the relater himſelf has had ocular proof to confirm what he had heard from others, I thought this a good opportunity of obtaining the higheſt evidence of its certainty, by being preſent myſelf at the ſolemnity; and, accordingly, propoſed to Otoo that I might be allowed to accompany him. To this he readily conſented; and we immediately ſet out in my boat, with my old friend Potatou, Mr. Anderſon, and Mr. Webber; Omai following in a canoe.

In our way we landed upon a little iſland, which lies off Tettaha, where we found Towha and his retinue. After ſome little converſation between the two Chiefs, on the ſubject of the war, Towha addreſſed himſelf to me, aſking my aſſiſtance. When I excuſed myſelf, he ſeemed angry; thinking

ing

1777. September. ing it ſtrange, that I, who had always declared myſelf to be the friend of their iſland, would not now go and fight againſt its enemies. Before we parted, he gave to Otoo two or three red feathers, tied up in a tuft; and a lean half-ſtarved dog was put into a canoe that was to accompany us. We then embarked again, taking on board a prieſt who was to aſſiſt at the ſolemnity. . .

As ſoon as we landed at Attahooroo, which was about two o'clock in the afternoon, Otoo expreſſed his deſire that the ſeamen might be ordered to remain in the boat; and that Mr. Anderſon, Mr. Webber, and myſelf, might take off our hats, as ſoon as we ſhould come to the *morai*, to which we immediately proceeded, attended by a great many men, and ſome boys; but not one woman. We found four prieſts, and their attendants, or aſſiſtants, waiting for us. The dead body, or ſacrifice, was in a ſmall canoe that lay on the beach, and partly in the waſh of the ſea, fronting the *morai*. Two of the prieſts, with ſome of their attendants, were ſitting by the canoe; the others at the *morai*. Our company ſtopped about twenty or thirty paces from the prieſts. Here Otoo placed himſelf; we, and a few others ſtanding by him; while the bulk of the people remained at a greater diſtance.

The ceremonies now began. One of the prieſt's attendants brought a young plantain-tree, and laid it down before Otoo. Another approached with a ſmall tuft of red feathers, twiſted on ſome fibres of the cocoa-nut huſk, with which he touched one of the king's feet, and then retired with it to his companions. One of the prieſts, ſeated at the *morai*, facing thoſe who were upon the beach, now began a long prayer; and, at certain times, ſent down young plan-

tain-

tain trees, which were laid upon the ſacrifice. During this prayer, a man, who ſtood by the officiating prieſt, held in his hands two bundles, ſeemingly of cloth. In one of them, as we afterward found, was the royal *maro*; and the other, if I may be allowed the expreſſion, was the ark of the *Eatooa*. As ſoon as the prayer was ended, the prieſts at the *morai*, with their attendants, went and ſat down by thoſe upon the beach, carrying with them the two bundles. Here they renewed their prayers; during which the plantain-trees were taken, one by one, at different times, from off the ſacrifice; which was partly wrapped up in cocoa leaves and ſmall branches. It was now taken out of the canoe, and laid upon the beach, with the feet to the ſea. The prieſts placed themſelves around it, ſome ſitting and others ſtanding; and one, or more of them, repeated ſentences for about ten minutes. The dead body was now uncovered, by removing the leaves and branches, and laid in a parallel direction with the ſea-ſhore. One of the prieſts then, ſtanding at the feet of it, pronounced a long prayer, in which he was, at times, joined by the others; each holding in his hand a tuft of red feathers. In the courſe of this prayer, ſome hair was pulled off the head of the ſacrifice, and the left eye taken out; both which were preſented to Otoo, wrapped up in a green leaf. He did not, however touch it; but gave, to the man who preſented it, the tuft of feathers, which he had received from Towha. This, with the hair and eye, was carried back to the prieſts. Soon after, Otoo ſent to them another piece of feathers, which he had given me in the morning to keep in my pocket. During ſome part of this laſt ceremony, a king-fiſher making a noiſe in the trees, Otoo turned to me, ſaying, "That is the *Eatooa*;" and ſeemed to look upon it to be a good omen.

1777. September.

1777. September.

The body was then carried a little way, with its head toward the *morai*, and laid under a tree; near which were fixed three broad thin pieces of wood, differently, but rudely, carved. The bundles of cloth were laid on a part of the *morai*; and the tufts of red feathers were placed at the feet of the ſacrifice; round which the prieſts took their ſtations; and we were now allowed to go as near as we pleaſed. He who ſeemed to be the chief prieſt ſat at a ſmall diſtance, and ſpoke for a quarter of an hour, but with different tones and geſtures; ſo that he ſeemed often to expoſtulate with the dead perſon, to whom he conſtantly addreſſed himſelf; and, ſometimes, aſked ſeveral queſtions, ſeemingly with reſpect to the propriety of his having been killed. At other times, he made ſeveral demands, as if the deceaſed either now had power himſelf, or intereſt with the Divinity, to engage him to comply with ſuch requeſts. Amongſt which, we underſtood, he aſked him to deliver Eimeo, Maheine its chief, the hogs, women, and other things of the iſland, into their hands; which was, indeed, the expreſs intention of the ſacrifice. He then chanted a prayer, which laſted near half an hour, in a whining, melancholy tone, accompanied by two other prieſts; and in which Potatou, and ſome others, joined. In the courſe of this prayer, ſome more hair was plucked by a prieſt from the head of the corpſe, and put upon one of the bundles. After this, the chief prieſt prayed alone, holding in his hand the feathers which came from Towha. When he had finiſhed, he gave them to another, who prayed in like manner. Then all the tufts of feathers were laid upon the bundles of cloth; which cloſed the ceremony at this place.

The corpſe was then carried up to the moſt conſpicuous part of the *morai*, with the feathers, the two bundles of

cloth, and the drums; the laſt of which beat ſlowly. The feathers and bundles were laid againſt the pile of ſtones, and the corpſe at the foot of them. The prieſts having again ſeated themſelves round it, renewed their prayers; while ſome of their attendants dug a hole about two feet deep, into which they threw the unhappy victim, and covered it over with earth and ſtones. While they were putting him into the grave, a boy ſqueaked aloud, and Omai ſaid to me, that it was the *Eatooa*. During this time, a fire having been made, the dog, before mentioned, was produced, and killed, by twiſting his neck, and ſuffocating him. The hair was ſinged off, and the entrails taken out, and thrown into the fire, where they were left to conſume. But the heart, liver, and kidneys were only roaſted, by being laid on hot ſtones for a few minutes; and the body of the dog, after being beſmeared with the blood, which had been collected into a cocoa-nut ſhell, and dried over the fire, was, with the liver, *&c.* carried and laid down before the prieſts, who ſat praying, round the grave. They continued their ejaculations over the dog, for ſome time, while two men, at intervals, beat on two drums very loud; and a boy ſcreamed, as before, in a loud, ſhrill voice, three different times. This, as we were told, was to invite the *Eatooa* to feaſt on the banquet that they had prepared for him. As ſoon as the prieſts had ended their prayers, the carcaſe of the dog, with what belonged to it, were laid on a *whatta*, or ſcaffold, about ſix feet high, that ſtood cloſe by, on which lay the remains of two other dogs, and of two pigs, which had lately been ſacrificed, and, at this time, emitted an intolerable ſtench. This kept us at a greater diſtance, than would, otherwiſe, have been required of us. For, after the victim was removed from the ſea-ſide toward the *morai*, we were

1777. September.

1777. September. allowed to approach as near as we pleaſed. Indeed, after that, neither ſerioufneſs nor attention were much obſerved by the ſpectators. When the dog was put upon the *whatta*, the prieſts and attendants gave a kind of ſhout, which cloſed the ceremonies for the preſent. The day being now alſo cloſed, we were conducted to a houſe belonging to Potatou, where we were entertained, and lodged for the night. We had been told, that the religious rites were to be renewed in the morning; and I would not leave the place, while any thing remained to be ſeen.

Tueſday 2. Being unwilling to loſe any part of the ſolemnity, ſome of us repaired to the ſcene of action pretty early, but found nothing going forward. However, ſoon after, a pig was ſacrificed, and laid upon the ſame *whatta* with the others. About eight o'clock, Otoo took us again to the *morai*, where the prieſts, and a great number of men, were, by this time, aſſembled. The two bundles occupied the place in which we had ſeen them depoſited the preceding evening; the two drums ſtood in the front of the *morai*, but ſomewhat nearer it than before; and the prieſts were beyond them. Otoo placed himſelf between the two drums, and deſired me to ſtand by him.

The ceremony began, as uſual, with bringing a young plantain-tree, and laying it down at the king's feet. After this a prayer was repeated by the prieſts, who held in their hands ſeveral tufts of red feathers, and alſo a plume of oſtrich feathers, which I had given to Otoo on my firſt arrival, and had been conſecrated to this uſe. When the prieſts had made an end of the prayer, they changed their ſtation, placing themſelves between us and the *morai*; and one of them, the ſame perſon who had acted the principal part

part the day before, began another prayer, which laſted about half an hour. During the continuance of this, the tufts of feathers were, one by one, carried and laid upon the ark of the *Eatooa*. 1777. September.

Some little time after, four pigs were produced; one of which was immediately killed; and the others were taken to a ſty, hard by, probably reſerved for ſome future occaſion of ſacrifice. One of the bundles was now untied; and it was found, as I have before obſerved, to contain the *maro*, with which theſe people inveſt their kings; and which ſeems to anſwer, in ſome degree, to the European enſigns of royalty. It was carefully taken out of the cloth, in which it had been wrapped up, and ſpread, at full length, upon the ground before the prieſts. It is a girdle, about five yards long, and fifteen inches broad; and, from its name, ſeems to be put on in the ſame manner as is the common *maro*, or piece of cloth, uſed, by theſe people, to wrap round the waiſt. It was ornamented with red and yellow feathers; but moſtly with the latter, taken from a dove found upon the iſland. The one end was bordered with eight pieces, each about the ſize and ſhape of a horſe-ſhoe, having their edges fringed with black feathers. The other end was forked, and the points were of different lengths. The feathers were in ſquare compartments, ranged in two rows, and, otherwiſe, ſo diſpoſed as to produce a pleaſing effect. They had been firſt paſted or fixed upon ſome of their own country cloth; and then ſewed to the upper end of the pendant which Captain Wallis had diſplayed, and left flying aſhore, the firſt time that he landed at Matavai. This was what they told us; and we had no reaſon to doubt it, as we could eaſily trace the remains of an Engliſh pendant. About ſix or eight inches ſquare of the *maro* was unornamented;

1777. September. mented; there being no feathers upon that ſpace, except a few that had been ſent by Waheadooa, as already mentioned. The prieſts made a long prayer, relative to this part of the ceremony; and, if I miſtook not, they called it the prayer of the *maro*. When it was finiſhed, the badge of royalty was carefully folded up, put into the cloth, and depoſited again upon the *morai*.

The other bundle, which I have diſtinguiſhed by the name of the ark, was next opened, at one end. But we were not allowed to go near enough to examine its myſterious contents. The information we received was, that the *Eatooa*, to whom they had been ſacrificing, and whoſe name is *Ooro*, was concealed in it; or rather, what is ſuppoſed to repreſent him. This ſacred repoſitory is made of the twiſted fibres of the huſk of the cocoa-nut, ſhaped ſomewhat like a large fid, or ſugar-loaf; that is, roundiſh, with one end much thicker than the other. We had, very often, got ſmall ones from different people, but never knew their uſe before.

By this time, the pig, that had been killed, was cleaned, and the entrails taken out. Theſe happened to have a conſiderable ſhare of thoſe convulſive motions, which often appear, in different parts, after an animal is killed; and this was conſidered by the ſpectators as a very favourable omen to the expedition, on account of which the ſacrifices had been offered. After being expoſed for ſome time, that thoſe who choſe, might examine their appearances, the entrails were carried to the prieſts, and laid down before them. While one of their number prayed, another inſpected the entrails more narrowly, and kept turning them gently with a ſtick. When they had been ſufficiently examined, they were thrown into the fire, and left to conſume.

ſume. The ſacrificed pig, and its liver, *&c.* were now put upon the *whatta*, where the dog had been depoſited the day before; and then all the feathers, except the oſtrich plume, were incloſed with the *Eatooa*, in the ark; and the ſolemnity finally cloſed. 1777. September.

Four double canoes lay upon the beach, before the place of ſacrifice, all the morning. On the fore-part of each of theſe, was fixed a ſmall platform, covered with palm-leaves, tied in myſterious knots; and this alſo is called a *morai*. Some cocoa-nuts, plantains, pieces of bread-fruit, fiſh, and other things, lay upon each of theſe naval *morais*. We were told, that they belonged to the *Eatooa*; and that they were to attend the fleet deſigned to go againſt Eimeo.

The unhappy victim, offered to the object of their worſhip upon this occaſion, ſeemed to be a middle-aged man; and, as we were told, was a *towtow*; that is, one of the loweſt claſs of the people. But, after all my inquiries, I could not learn, that he had been pitched upon, on account of any particular crime, committed by him, meriting death. It is certain, however, that they generally make choice of ſuch guilty perſons for their ſacrifices; or elſe of common, low, fellows, who ſtroll about, from place to place, and from iſland to iſland, without having any fixed abode, or any viſible way of getting an honeſt livelihood; of which deſcription of men, enough are to be met with at theſe iſlands. Having had an opportunity of examining the appearance of the body of the poor ſufferer, now offered up, I could obſerve, that it was bloody about the head and face, and a good deal bruiſed upon the right temple; which marked the manner of his being killed. And we were told, that he had been privately knocked on the head with a ſtone.

Thoſe

1777. September. Thoſe who are devoted to ſuffer, in order to perform this bloody act of worſhip, are never apprized of their fate, till the blow is given that puts an end to their exiſtence. Whenever any one of the great Chiefs thinks a human ſacrifice neceſſary, on any particular emergency, he pitches upon the victim. Some of his truſty ſervants are then ſent, who fall upon him ſuddenly, and put him to death with a club, or by ſtoning him. The king is next acquainted with it, whoſe preſence, at the ſolemn rites that follow, is, as I was told, abſolutely neceſſary; and, indeed, on the preſent occaſion, we could obſerve, that Otoo bore a principal part. The ſolemnity itſelf is called *Poore Eree*, or Chief's Prayer; and the victim, who is offered up, *Taata-taboo*, or conſecrated man. This is the only inſtance where we have heard the word *taboo* uſed at this iſland, where it ſeems to have the ſame myſterious ſignification as at Tonga; though it is there applied to all caſes where things are not to be touched. But at Otaheite, the word *raa* ſerves the ſame purpoſe, and is full as extenſive in its meaning.

The *morai* (which, undoubtedly, is a place of worſhip, ſacrifice, and burial, at the ſame time), where the ſacrifice was now offered, is that where the ſupreme Chief of the whole iſland, is always buried, and is appropriated to his family, and ſome of the principal people. It differs little from the common ones, except in extent. Its principal part, is a large, oblong pile of ſtones, lying looſely upon each other, about twelve or fourteen feet high, contracted towards the top, with a ſquare area on each ſide, looſely paved with pebble ſtones, under which the bones of the Chiefs are buried. At a little diſtance from the end neareſt the ſea, is the place where the ſacrifices are offered; which, for a conſiderable extent, is alſo looſely paved.

There

There is here a very large ſcaffold, or *whatta*, on which the offerings of fruits, and other vegetables, are laid. But the animals are depoſited on a ſmaller one, already mentioned, and the human ſacrifices are buried under different parts of the pavement. There are ſeveral other reliques which ignorant ſuperſtition had ſcattered about this place; ſuch as ſmall ſtones, raiſed in different parts of the pavement; ſome with bits of cloth tied round them; others covered with it; and upon the ſide of the large pile, which fronts the area, are placed a great many pieces of carved wood, which are ſuppoſed to be ſometimes the reſidence of their divinities, and, conſequently, held ſacred. But one place, more particular than the reſt, is a heap of ſtones, at one end of the large *whatta*, before which the ſacrifice was offered, with a kind of platform at one ſide. On this are laid the ſculls of all the human ſacrifices, which are taken up after they have been ſeveral months under ground. Juſt above them, are placed a great number of the pieces of wood; and it was alſo here, where the *maro*, and the other bundle, ſuppoſed to contain the god *Ooro* (and which I call the ark), were laid, during the ceremony; a circumſtance which denotes its agreement with the altar of other nations. 1777. September.

It is much to be regretted, that a practice ſo horrid in its own nature, and ſo deſtructive of that inviolable right of ſelf-preſervation, which every one is born with, ſhould be found ſtill exiſting; and (ſuch is the power of ſuperſtition to counteract the firſt principles of humanity!) exiſting amongſt a people, in many other reſpects, emerged from the brutal manners of ſavage life. What is ſtill worſe, it is probable, that theſe bloody rites of worſhip are prevalent throughout all the wide extended iſlands of the Pacific Ocean. The ſimilarity of cuſtoms and language, which

1777. September. our late voyages have enabled us to trace, between the moſt diſtant of theſe iſlands, makes it not unlikely, that ſome of the more important articles of their religious inſtitutions ſhould agree. And, indeed, we had the moſt authentic information, that human ſacrifices continue to be offered at the Friendly Iſlands. When I deſcribed the *Natche* at *Tongataboo*, I mentioned that, on the approaching ſequel of that feſtival, we had been told, that ten men were to be ſacrificed. This may give us an idea of the extent of this religious maſſacre, in that iſland. And though we ſhould ſuppoſe, that never more than one perſon is ſacrificed, on any ſingle occaſion, at Otaheite, it is more than probable, that theſe occaſions happen ſo frequently, as to make a ſhocking waſte of the human race; for I counted no leſs than forty-nine ſkulls, of former victims, lying before the *morai*, where we ſaw one more added to the number. And as none of thoſe ſkulls had, as yet, ſuffered any conſiderable change from the weather, it may hence be inferred, that no great length of time had elapſed, ſince, at leaſt, this conſiderable number of unhappy wretches had been offered upon this altar of blood.

The cuſtom, though no conſideration can make it ceaſe to be abominable, might be thought leſs detrimental, in ſome reſpects, if it ſerved to impreſs any awe for the divinity, or reverence for religion, upon the minds of the multitude. But this is ſo far from being the caſe, that though a great number of people had aſſembled at the *morai*, on this occaſion, they did not ſeem to ſhew any proper reverence for what was doing, or ſaying, during the celebration of the rites. And Omai happening to arrive, after they had begun, many of the ſpectators flocked round him, and were engaged, the remainder of the time, in making him

relate

relate ſome of his adventures, which they liſtened to with great attention, regardleſs of the ſolemn offices performing by their prieſts. Indeed, the prieſts themſelves, except the one who chiefly repeated the prayers, either from their being familiarized to ſuch objects, or from want of confidence in the efficacy of their inſtitutions, obſerved very little of that ſolemnity, which is neceſſary to give to religious performances their due weight. Their dreſs was only an ordinary one; they converſed together, without ſcruple; and the only attempt made by them to preſerve any appearance of decency, was by exerting their authority, to prevent the people from coming upon the very ſpot where the ceremonies were performed; and to ſuffer us, as ſtrangers, to advance a little forward. They were, however, very candid in their anſwers to any queſtions that were put to them, concerning the inſtitution. And, particularly, on being aſked, what the intention of it was? They ſaid, that it was an old cuſtom, and was agreeable to their god, who delighted in, or, in other words, came and fed upon the ſacrifices; in conſequence of which, he complied with their petitions. Upon its being objected, that he could not feed on theſe, as he was neither ſeen to do it, nor were the bodies of the animals quickly conſumed, and that as to the human victim, they prevented his feeding on him, by burying him. But to all this they anſwered, that he came in the night, but inviſibly; and fed only on the ſoul, or immaterial part, which, according to their doctrine, remains about the place of ſacrifice, until the body of the victim be entirely waſted by putrefaction. 1777. September.

It were much to be wiſhed, that this deluded people may learn to entertain the ſame horror of murdering their fellow-creatures, in order to furniſh ſuch an inviſible banquet

1777. September. to their god, as they now have of feeding, corporeally, on human fleſh themſelves. And, yet, we have great reaſon to believe, that there was a time when they were cannibals. We were told (and indeed partly ſaw it), that it is a neceſſary ceremony, when a poor wretch is ſacrificed, for the prieſt to take out the left eye. This he preſents to the king, holding it to his mouth, which he deſires him to open; but, inſtead of putting it in, immediately withdraws it. This they call "eating the man," or "food for the Chief;" and, perhaps, we may obſerve here ſome traces of former times, when the dead body was really feaſted upon.

But not to inſiſt upon this; it is certain, that human ſacrifices are not the only barbarous cuſtom we find ſtill prevailing amongſt this benevolent, humane people. For, beſides cutting out the jaw-bones of their enemies ſlain in battle, which they carry about as trophies, they, in ſome meaſure, offer their bodies as a ſacrifice to the *Eatooa*. Soon after a battle, in which they have been victors, they collect all the dead that have fallen into their hands, and bring them to the *morai*, where, with a great deal of ceremony, they dig a hole, and bury them all in it, as ſo many offerings to the gods; but their ſculls are never after taken up.

Their own great Chiefs, that fall in battle, are treated in a different manner. We were informed, that their late king Tootaha, Tubourai-tamaide, and another Chief, who fell with them in the battle, fought with thoſe of Tiaraboo, and were brought to this *morai*, at Attahooroo. There their bowels were cut out by the prieſts, before the great altar; and the bodies afterward buried in three different places, which were pointed out to us, in the great pile of ſtones, that compoſe the moſt conſpicuous part of this *morai*. And their common men, who alſo fell in this battle, were all

buried in one hole, at the foot of the pile. This, Omai, who was preſent, told me, was done the day after the battle, with much pomp and ceremony, and in the midſt of a great concourſe of people, as a thankſgiving offering to the *Eatooa*, for the victory they had obtained; while the vanquiſhed had taken refuge in the mountains. There they remained a week, or ten days, till the fury of the victors was over, and a treaty ſet on foot, by which it was agreed, that Otoo ſhould be declared king of the whole iſland; and the ſolemnity of inveſting him with the *maro*, was performed at the ſame *morai*, with great pomp, in the preſence of all the principal men of the country. 1777. September.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

Conference with Towha.—Heevas deſcribed.—Omai and Oedidee give Dinners.—Fireworks exhibited.—A remarkable Preſent of Cloth.—Manner of preſerving the Body of a dead Chief.—Another human Sacrifice.—Riding on Horſeback.—Otoo's Attention to ſupply Proviſions, and prevent Thefts.—Animals given to him.—Etary, and the Deputies of a Chief, have Audiences.—A Mock-fight of Two War Canoes.—Naval Strength of theſe Iſlands.—Manner of conducting a War.

1777. September. Tueſday 2. THE cloſe of the very ſingular ſcene, exhibited at the *morai*, which I have faithfully deſcribed in the laſt Chapter, leaving us no other buſineſs in Attahooroo, we embarked about noon, in order to return to Matavai; and, in our way, viſited Towha, who had remained on the little iſland, where we met him the day before. Some converſation paſſed between Otoo and him, on the preſent poſture of public affairs; and then the latter ſolicited me, once more, to join them in their war againſt Eimeo. By my poſitive refuſal I entirely loſt the good graces of this Chief.

Before we parted, he aſked us, if the ſolemnity, at which we had been preſent, anſwered our expectations; what opinion we had of its efficacy; and whether we performed ſuch acts of worſhip in our own country? During the celebration of the horrid ceremony, we had preſerved a profound ſilence;

ſilence; but as ſoon as it was cloſed, had made no ſcruple in expreſſing our ſentiments very freely about it, to Otoo, and thoſe who attended him; of courſe, therefore, I did not conceal my deteſtation of it, in this converſation with Towha. Beſides the cruelty of the bloody cuſtom, I ſtrongly urged the unreaſonableneſs of it; telling the Chief, that ſuch a ſacrifice, far from making the *Eatooa* propitious to their nation, as they ignorantly believed, would be the means of drawing down his vengeance; and that, from this very circumſtance, I took upon me to judge, that their intended expedition againſt Maheine would be unſucceſsful. This was venturing pretty far upon conjecture; but ſtill, I thought, that there was little danger of being miſtaken. For I found, that there were three parties in the iſland, with regard to this war; one extremely violent for it; another perfectly indifferent about the matter; and the third openly declaring themſelves friends to Maheine, and his cauſe. Under theſe circumſtances, of diſunion diſtracting their councils, it was not likely that ſuch a plan of military operations would be ſettled, as could inſure even a probability of ſucceſs. In conveying our ſentiments to Towha, on the ſubject of the late ſacrifice, Omai was made uſe of as our interpreter; and he entered into our arguments with ſo much ſpirit, that the Chief ſeemed to be in great wrath; eſpecially when he was told, that if he had put a man to death in England, as he had done here, his rank would not have protected him from being hanged for it. Upon this, he exclaimed, *maeno! maeno!* [vile! vile!] and would not hear another word. During this debate, many of the natives were preſent, chiefly the attendants and ſervants of Towha himſelf; and when Omai began to explain the puniſhment that would be inflicted in

1777. September.

1777. September. England, upon the greateſt man, if he killed the meaneſt ſervant, they ſeemed to liſten with great attention; and were, probably, of a different opinion from that of their maſter, on this ſubject.

After leaving Towha, we proceeded to Oparre, where Otoo preſſed us to ſpend the night. We landed in the evening; and, on our road to his houſe, had an opportunity of obſerving in what manner theſe people amuſe themſelves, in their private *heevas*. About a hundred of them were found ſitting in a houſe; and in the midſt of them were two women, with an old man behind each of them, beating very gently upon a drum; and the women, at intervals, ſinging in a ſofter manner, than I ever heard at their other diverſions. The aſſembly liſtened with great attention; and were, ſeemingly, almoſt abſorbed in the pleaſure the muſic gave them; for few took any notice of us, and the performers never once ſtopped. It was almoſt dark before we reached Otoo's houſe, where we were entertained with one of their public *heevas*, or plays, in which his three ſiſters appeared as the principal characters. This was what they call a *heeva raä*, which is of ſuch a nature, that no body is to enter the houſe or area, where it is exhibited. When the royal ſiſters are the performers, this is always the caſe. Their dreſs, on this occaſion, was truly pictureſque and elegant; and they acquitted themſelves, in their parts, in a very diſtinguiſhed manner; though ſome comic interludes, performed by four men, ſeemed to yield greater pleaſure to
Wedneſ. 3. the audience, which was numerous. The next morning we proceeded to Matavai, leaving Otoo at Oparre; but his mother, ſiſters, and ſeveral other women, attended me on board, and Otoo himſelf followed ſoon after.

While

While Otoo and I were abſent from the ſhips, they had been but ſparingly ſupplied with fruit, and had few viſiters. After our return, we again overflowed with proviſions, and with company. 1777. September.

On the 4th, a party of us dined aſhore with Omai, who gave excellent fare, conſiſting of fiſh, fowls, pork, and puddings. After dinner, I attended Otoo, who had been one of the party, back to his houſe, where I found all his ſervants very buſy, getting a quantity of proviſions ready for me. Amongſt other articles, there was a large hog, which they killed in my preſence. The entrails were divided into eleven portions, in ſuch a manner, that each of them contained a bit of every thing. Theſe portions were diſtributed to the ſervants, and ſome dreſſed theirs in the ſame oven with the hog, while others carried off, undreſſed, what had come to their ſhare. There was alſo a large pudding, the whole proceſs in making which, I ſaw. It was compoſed of bread-fruit, ripe plantains, taro, and palm or pandanus nuts, each raſped, ſcraped, or beat up fine, and baked by itſelf. A quantity of juice, expreſſed from cocoa-nut kernels, was put into a large tray, or wooden veſſel. The other articles, hot from the oven, were depoſited in this veſſel; and a few hot ſtones were alſo put in, to make the contents ſimmer. Three or four men made uſe of ſticks to ſtir the ſeveral ingredients, till they were incorporated one with another, and the juice of the cocoa-nut was turned to oil; ſo that the whole maſs, at laſt, became of the conſiſtency of a hafty-pudding. Some of theſe puddings are excellent; and few that we make in England equal them. I ſeldom, or never, dined without one, when I could get it, which was not always the caſe. Otoo's hog being baked, and the pudding, which I have deſcribed, being made, they, together with Thurſday 4.

1777. September. two living hogs, and a quantity of bread-fruit, and cocoa-nuts, were put into a canoe, and ſent on board my ſhip, followed by myſelf, and all the royal family.

Friday 5. The following evening, a young ram, of the Cape breed, that had been lambed, and, with great care, brought up on board the ſhip, was killed by a dog. Incidents are of more or leſs conſequence, as connected with ſituation. In our preſent ſituation, deſirous as I was to propagate this uſeful race, amongſt theſe iſlands, the loſs of the ram was a ſerious misfortune; as it was the only one I had of that breed; and I had only one of the Engliſh breed left.

Sunday 7. In the evening of the 7th, we played off ſome fireworks before a great concourſe of people. Some were highly entertained with the exhibition; but by far the greater number of ſpectators were terribly frightened; inſomuch, that it was with difficulty we could prevail upon them to keep together, to ſee the end of the ſhew. A table-rocket was the laſt. It flew off the table, and diſperſed the whole crowd in a moment; even the moſt reſolute among them fled with precipitation.

Monday 8. The next day, a party of us dined with our former ſhipmate, Oedidee, on fiſh and pork. The hog weighed about thirty pounds; and it may be worth mentioning, that it was alive, dreſſed, and brought upon the table, within the hour. We had but juſt dined, when Otoo came, and aſked me, if my belly was full? On my anſwering in the affirmative, he ſaid, "Then, come along with me." I, accordingly, went with him to his father's, where I found ſome people employed in dreſſing two girls with a prodigious quantity of fine cloth, after a very ſingular faſhion. The one end of each piece of cloth, of which there were a good many, was held

up

up over the heads of the girls, while the remainder was wrapped round their bodies, under the arm-pits. Then the upper ends were let fall, and hung down in folds to the ground, over the other, ſo as to bear ſome reſemblance to a circular hoop-petticoat. Afterward, round the outſide of all, were wrapped ſeveral pieces of differently coloured cloth, which conſiderably increaſed the ſize; ſo that it was not leſs than five or ſix yards in circuit, and the weight of this ſingular attire was as much as the poor girls could ſupport. To each were hung two *taames*, or breaſt-plates, by way of enriching the whole, and giving it a pictureſque appearance. Thus equipped, they were conducted on board the ſhip, together with ſeveral hogs, and a quantity of fruit, which, with the cloth, was a preſent to me from Otoo's father. Perſons, of either ſex, dreſſed in this manner, are called *atee*; but, I believe, it is never practiſed, except when large preſents of cloth are to be made. At leaſt, I never ſaw it practiſed upon any other occaſion; nor, indeed, had I ever ſuch a preſent before; but both Captain Clerke and I had cloth given to us afterward, thus wrapped round the bearers. The next day, I had a preſent of five hogs, and ſome fruit, from Otoo; and one hog, and ſome fruit, from each of his ſiſters. Nor were other proviſions wanting. For two or three days, great quantities of mackerel had been caught by the natives, within the reef, in ſeines; ſome of which they brought to the ſhips and tents, and ſold. 1777. September. Tueſday 9.

Otoo was not more attentive to ſupply our wants, by a ſucceſſion of preſents, than he was to contribute to our amuſement, by a ſucceſſion of diverſions. A party of us having gone down to Oparre, on the 10th, he treated us with what may be called a play. His three ſiſters were the actreſſes; and the dreſſes, that they appeared in, were new Wedneſ. 10.

1777. September. and elegant; that is, more ſo than we had uſually met with at any of theſe iſlands. But the principal object I had in view, this day, in going to Oparre, was to take a view of an embalmed corpſe, which ſome of our gentlemen had happened to meet with at that place, near the reſidence of Otoo. On inquiry, I found it to be the remains of Tee, a Chief well known to me, when I was at this iſland, during my laſt voyage. It was lying in a *toopapaoo*, more elegantly conſtructed than their common ones, and in all reſpects ſimilar to that lately ſeen by us at Oheitepeha, in which the remains of Waheadooa are depoſited, embalmed in the ſame manner. When we arrived at the place, the body was under cover, and wrapped up in cloth, within the *toopapaoo*; but, at my deſire, the man who had the care of it, brought it out, and laid it upon a kind of bier, in ſuch a manner, that we had as full a view of it as we could wiſh; but we were not allowed to go within the pales that incloſed the *toopapaoo*. After he had thus exhibited the corpſe, he hung the place with mats and cloth, ſo diſpoſed as to produce a very pretty effect. We found the body not only entire in every part; but, what ſurprized us much more, was, that putrefaction ſeemed ſcarcely to be begun, as there was not the leaſt diſagreeable ſmell proceeding from it; though the climate is one of the hotteſt, and Tee had been dead above four months. The only remarkable alteration that had happened, was a ſhrinking of the muſcular parts and eyes; but the hair and nails were in their original ſtate, and ſtill adhered firmly; and the ſeveral joints were quite pliable, or in that kind of relaxed ſtate which happens to perſons who faint ſuddenly. Such were Mr. Anderſon's remarks to me, who alſo told me, that, on his inquiring into the method of effecting this preſervation of their dead bodies, he had been informed, that,

ſoon

ſoon after their death, they are diſembowelled, by drawing the inteſtines, and other *viſcera*, out at the *anus*; and the whole cavity is then filled or ſtuffed with cloth, introduced through the ſame part; that when any moiſture appeared on the ſkin, it was carefully dried up, and the bodies afterward rubbed all over, with a large quantity of perfumed cocoa-nut oil; which, being frequently repeated, preſerved them a great many months; but that, at laſt, they gradually moulder away. This was the information Mr. Anderſon received; for my own part, I could not learn any more about their mode of operation, than what Omai told me, who ſaid, that they made uſe of the juice of a plant which grows amongſt the mountains; of cocoa-nut oil; and of frequent waſhing with ſea-water. I was alſo told, that the bodies of all their great men, who die a natural death, are preſerved in this manner; and that they expoſe them to public view for a very conſiderable time after. At firſt, they are laid out every day, when it does not rain; afterward, the intervals become greater and greater; and, at laſt, they are ſeldom to be ſeen. 1777. September.

In the evening, we returned from Oparre, where we left Otoo, and all the royal family; and I ſaw none of them till the 12th; when all, but the Chief himſelf, paid me a viſit. He, as they told me, was gone to Attahooroo, to aſſiſt, this day, at another human ſacrifice, which the Chief of Tiaraboo had ſent thither to be offered up at the *morai*. This ſecond inſtance, within the courſe of a few days, was too melancholy a proof, how numerous the victims of this bloody ſuperſtition are amongſt this humane people. I would have been preſent at this ſacrifice too, had I known of it in time; for, now, it was too late. From the very ſame cauſe, I miſſed being preſent at a public tranſaction, Friday 12.

1777. September. which had paſſed at Oparre the preceding day, when Otoo, with all the ſolemnities obſerved on ſuch occaſions, reſtored to the friends and followers of the late king Tootaha, the lands and poſſeſſions, which had been withheld from them ever ſince his death. Probably, the new ſacrifice was the concluding ceremony of what may be called the reverſal of attainder.

Saturday 13. Sunday 14. The following evening, Otoo returned from exerciſing this moſt diſagreeable of all his duties as ſovereign; and the next day, being now honoured with his company, Captain Clerke and I, mounted on horſeback, took a ride round the plain of Matavai, to the very great ſurprize of a great train of people who attended on the occaſion, gazing upon us, with as much aſtoniſhment as if we had been centaurs. Omai, indeed, had, once or twice, before this, attempted to get on horſeback; but he had as often been thrown off, before he could contrive to ſeat himſelf; ſo that this was the firſt time they had ſeen any body ride a horſe. What Captain Clerke and I began, was, after this, repeated every day, while we ſtaid, by one or another of our people. And yet the curioſity of the natives continued ſtill unabated. They were exceedingly delighted with theſe animals, after they had ſeen the uſe that was made of them; and, as far as I could judge, they conveyed to them a better idea of the greatneſs of other nations, than all the other novelties, put together, that their European viſiters had carried amongſt them. Both the horſe and mare were in good caſe, and looked extremely well.

Monday 15. The next day, Etary, or Olla, the god of Bolabola, who had, for ſeveral days paſt, been in the neighbourhood of Matavai, removed to Oparre, attended by ſeveral ſailing canoes. We were told, that Otoo did not approve of his being

ſo near our ſtation, where his people could more eaſily invade our property. I muſt do Otoo the juſtice to ſay, that he took every method prudence could ſuggeſt to prevent thefts and robberies; and it was more owing to his regulations, than to our own circumſpection, that ſo few were committed. He had taken care to erect a little houſe or two, on the other ſide of the river, behind our poſt; and two others, cloſe to our tents, on the bank between the river and the ſea. In all theſe places ſome of his own people conſtantly kept watch; and his father generally reſided on Matavai point; ſo that we were, in a manner, ſurrounded by them. Thus ſtationed, they not only guarded us in the night from thieves, but could obſerve every thing that paſſed in the day; and were ready to collect contributions from ſuch girls as had private connections with our people; which was generally done every morning. So that the meaſures adopted by him to ſecure our ſafety, at the ſame time ſerved the more eſſential purpoſe of enlarging his own profits. 1777. September.

Otoo informing me, that his preſence was neceſſary at Oparre, where he was to give audience to the great perſonage from Bolabola; and aſking me to accompany him, I readily conſented, in hopes of meeting with ſomething worth our notice. Accordingly I went with him, in the morning of the 16th, attended by Mr. Anderſon. Nothing, however, occurred on this occaſion, that was either intereſting or curious. We ſaw Etary and his followers preſent ſome coarſe cloth and hogs to Otoo; and each article was delivered with ſome ceremony, and a ſet ſpeech. After this, they, and ſome other Chiefs, held a conſultation about the expedition to Eimeo. Etary, at firſt, ſeemed to diſapprove of it; but, at laſt, his objections were over-ruled. Indeed, it appeared, Tueſday 16.

next

1777. September. next day, that it was too late to deliberate about this measure; and that Towha, Potatou, and another Chief, had already gone upon the expedition with the fleet of Attahoo-

Wedneſ. 17. roo. For a meſſenger arrived in the evening, with intelligence that they had reached Eimeo, and that there had been ſome ſkirmiſhes, without much loſs or advantage on either ſide.

Thurſday 18. In the morning of the 18th, Mr. Anderſon, myſelf, and Omai, went again with Otoo to Oparre, and took with us the ſheep which I intended to leave upon the iſland, conſiſting of an Engliſh ram and ewe, and three Cape ewes; all which I gave to Otoo. As all the three cows had taken the bull, I thought I might venture to divide them, and carry ſome to Ulietea. With this view, I had them brought before us, and propoſed to Etary, that if he would leave his bull with Otoo, he ſhould have mine, and one of the three cows; adding, that I would carry them for him to Ulietea; for I was afraid to remove the Spaniſh bull, leſt ſome accident ſhould happen to him, as he was a bulky ſpirited beaſt. To this propoſal of mine, Etary, at firſt, made ſome objections; but, at laſt, agreed to it; partly through the perſuaſion of Omai. However, juſt as the cattle were putting into the boat, one of Etary's followers valiantly oppoſed any exchange whatever being made. Finding this, and ſuſpecting that Etary had only conſented to the propoſed arrangement, for the preſent moment, to pleaſe me; and that, after I was gone, he might take away his bull, and then Otoo would not have one, I thought it beſt to drop the idea of an exchange, as it could not be made with the mutual conſent of both parties; and finally determined to leave them all with Otoo, ſtrictly injoining him never to ſuffer them to be removed from Oparre, not even the Spaniſh bull,

bull, nor any of the ſheep, till he ſhould get a ſtock of young ones; which he might then diſpoſe of to his friends, and ſend to the neighbouring iſlands. 1777. September.

This being ſettled, we left Etary and his party to ruminate upon their folly, and attended Otoo to another place, hard by, where we found the ſervants of a Chief, whoſe name I forgot to aſk, waiting with a hog, a pig, and a dog, as a preſent from their maſter to the ſovereign. Theſe were delivered with the uſual ceremonies, and with an harangue in form, in which the ſpeaker, in his maſter's name, enquired after the health of Otoo, and of all the principal people about him. This compliment was echoed back in the name of Otoo, by one of his miniſters; and then the diſpute with Eimeo was diſcuſſed, with many arguments for and againſt it. The deputies of this Chief were for proſecuting the war with vigour, and adviſed Otoo to offer a human ſacrifice. On the other hand, a Chief, who was in conſtant attendance on Otoo's perſon, oppoſed it, ſeemingly, with great ſtrength of argument. This confirmed me in the opinion, that Otoo himſelf never entered heartily into the ſpirit of this war. He now received repeated meſſages from Towha, ſtrongly ſoliciting him to haſten to his aſſiſtance. We were told, that his fleet was, in a manner, ſurrounded by that of Maheine; but that neither the one, nor the other, durſt hazard an engagement.

After dining with Otoo, we returned to Matavai, leaving him at Oparre. This day, and alſo the 19th, we were very ſparingly ſupplied with fruit. Otoo hearing of this, he and his brother, who had attached himſelf to Captain Clerke, came from Oparre, between nine and ten o'clock in the evening, with a large ſupply for both ſhips. This marked his humane attention more ſtrongly, than any thing he had Friday 19.

1777. September. Saturday 20. hitherto done for us. The next day, all the royal family came with preſents; ſo that our wants were not only relieved, but we had more proviſions than we could conſume.

Having got all our water on board, the ſhips being caulked, the rigging overhauled, and every thing put in order, I began to think of leaving the iſland, that I might have ſufficient time to ſpare for viſiting the others in this neighbourhood. With this view, we removed from the ſhore our obſervatories, and inſtruments, and bent the ſails. Early the next Sunday 21. morning, Otoo came on board to acquaint me, that all the war canoes of Matavai, and of three other diſtricts adjoining, were going to Oparre, to join thoſe belonging to that part of the iſland; and that there would be a general review there. Soon after, the ſquadron of Matavai was all in motion; and, after parading a while about the bay, aſſembled aſhore, near the middle of it. I now went in my boat to take a view of them.

Of thoſe with ſtages, on which they fight, or what they call their war canoes, there were about ſixty; with near as many more of a ſmaller ſize. I was ready to have attended them to Oparre; but, ſoon after, a reſolution was taken by the Chiefs, that they ſhould not move till the next day. I looked upon this to be a fortunate delay, as it afforded me a good opportunity to get ſome inſight into their manner of fighting. With this view, I expreſſed my wiſh to Otoo, that he would order ſome of them to go through the neceſſary manœuvres. Two were, accordingly, ordered out into the bay; in one of which, Otoo, Mr. King, and myſelf embarked; and Omai went on board the other. When we had got ſufficient ſea-room, we faced, and advanced upon each other, and retreated by turns, as quick as our rowers could paddle. During this, the warriors on the ſtages flouriſhed

riſhed their weapons, and played a hundred antic tricks, which could anſwer no other end, in my judgment, than to work up their paſſions, and prepare them for fighting. Otoo ſtood by the ſide of our ſtage, and gave the neceſſary orders, when to advance, and when to retreat. In this, great judgment, and a quick eye, combined together, ſeemed requiſite, to ſeize every advantage that might offer, and to avoid giving any advantage to the adverſary. At laſt, after advancing and retreating to and from each other, at leaſt a dozen of times, the two canoes cloſed, head to head, or ſtage to ſtage; and, after a ſhort conflict, the troops on our ſtage were ſuppoſed to be all killed, and we were boarded by Omai and his aſſociates. At that very inſtant, Otoo, and all our paddlers leaped over-board, as if reduced to the neceſſity of endeavouring to ſave their lives by ſwimming. 1777. September.

If Omai's information is to be depended upon, their naval engagements are not always conducted in this manner. He told me, that they ſometimes begin with laſhing the two veſſels together, head to head, and then fight till all the warriors are killed, on one ſide or the other. But this cloſe combat, I apprehend, is never practiſed, but when they are determined to conquer or die. Indeed, one or the other muſt happen; for all agree, that they never give quarter, unleſs it be to reſerve their priſoners for a more cruel death the next day.

The power and ſtrength of theſe iſlands lie entirely in their navies. I never heard of a general engagement on land; and all their deciſive battles are fought on the water. If the time and place of conflict are fixed upon by both parties, the preceding day and night are ſpent in diverſions and feaſting. Toward morning, they launch the canoes, put every thing in order, and, with the day, begin the

1777. September. battle; the fate of which generally decides the diſpute. The vanquiſhed ſave themſelves by a precipitate flight; and ſuch as reach the ſhore fly, with their friends, to the mountains; for the victors, while their fury laſts, ſpare neither the aged, nor women, nor children. The next day, they aſſemble at the *morai*, to return thanks to the *Eatooa* for the victory, and to offer up the ſlain as ſacrifices, and the priſoners alſo, if they have any. After this, a treaty is ſet on foot; and the conquerors, for the moſt part, obtain their own terms; by which particular diſtricts of land, and, ſometimes, whole iſlands, change their owners. Omai told us, that he was once taken a priſoner by the men of Bolabola, and carried to that iſland, where he and ſome others would have been put to death the next day, if they had not found means to eſcape in the night.

As ſoon as this mock-fight was over, Omai put on his ſuit of armour, mounted a ſtage in one of the canoes, and was paddled all along the ſhore of the bay; ſo that every one had a full view of him. His coat of mail did not draw the attention of his countrymen ſo much as might have been expected. Some of them, indeed, had ſeen a part of it before; and there were others, again, who had taken ſuch a diſlike to Omai, from his imprudent conduct at this place, that they would hardly look at any thing, however ſingular, that was exhibited by him.

CHAP. IV.

The Day of ſailing fixed.—Peace made with Eimeo.—Debates about it, and Otoo's Conduct blamed.—A Solemnity at the Morai on the Occaſion, deſcribed by Mr. King.—Obſervations upon it.—Inſtance of Otoo's Art.—Omai's War Canoe, and Remarks upon his Behaviour.—Otoo's Preſent, and Meſſage to the King of Great Britain.—Reflections on our Manner of Traffic, and on the good Treatment we met with at Otaheite.—Account of the Expedition of the Spaniards.—Their Fictions to depreciate the Engliſh.—Wiſhes expreſſed that no Settlement may be made.—Omai's Jealouſy of another Traveller.

EARLY in the morning of the 22d, Otoo and his father came on board, to know when I propoſed ſailing. For, having been informed, that there was a good harbour at Eimeo, I had told them, that I ſhould viſit that iſland on my way to Huaheine; and they were deſirous of taking a paſſage with me, and of their fleet ſailing, at the time, to reinforce Towha. As I was ready to take my departure, I left it to them to name the day; and the Wedneſday following was fixed upon; when I was to take on board Otoo, his father, mother, and, in ſhort, the whole family. Theſe points being ſettled, I propoſed ſetting out immediately for Oparre, where all the fleet, fitted out for the expedition, was to aſſemble this day, and to be reviewed. 1777. September. Monday 22.

I had

1777. September. I had but juſt time to get into my boat, when news was brought, that Towha had concluded a treaty with Maheine, and had returned with his fleet to Attahooroo. This unexpected event made all further proceedings, in the military way, quite unneceſſary; and the war canoes, inſtead of rendezvouſing at Oparre, were ordered home to their reſpective diſtricts. This alteration, however, did not hinder me from following Otoo to Oparre, accompanied by Mr. King and Omai. Soon after our arrival, and while dinner was preparing, a meſſenger arrived from Eimeo, and related the conditions of the peace; or rather of the truce, it being only for a limited time. The terms were diſadvantageous to Otaheite; and much blame was thrown upon Otoo, whoſe delay, in ſending reinforcements, had obliged Towha to ſubmit to a diſgraceful accommodation. It was even currently reported, that Towha, reſenting his not being ſupported, had declared, that, as ſoon as I ſhould leave the iſland, he would join his forces to thoſe of Tiaraboo, and attack Otoo at Matavai, or Oparre. This called upon me to declare, in the moſt public manner, that I was determined to eſpouſe the intereſt of my friend, againſt any ſuch combination; and that whoever preſumed to attack him, ſhould feel the weight of my heavy diſpleaſure, when I returned again to their iſland. My declaration, probably, had the deſired effect; and, if Towha had any ſuch hoſtile intention at firſt, we ſoon heard no more of the report. Whappai, Otoo's father, highly diſapproved of the peace, and blamed Towha very much for concluding it. This ſenſible old man wiſely judged, that my going down with them to Eimeo muſt have been of ſingular ſervice to their cauſe, though I ſhould take no other part whatever in the quarrel. And it was upon this that he built all his arguments, and maintained, that

Otoo

Otoo had acted properly by waiting for me; though this had prevented his giving aſſiſtance to Towha ſo ſoon as he expected. 1777. September.

Our debates at Oparre, on this ſubject, were hardly ended, before a meſſenger arrived from Towha, deſiring Otoo's attendance, the next day, at the *morai* in Attahooroo, to give thanks to the Gods for the peace he had concluded; at leaſt, ſuch was Omai's account to me, of the object of this ſolemnity. I was aſked to go; but being much out of order, was obliged to decline it. Deſirous, however, of knowing what ceremonies might be obſerved on ſo memorable an occaſion, I ſent Mr. King, and Omai, and returned on board my ſhip, attended by Otoo's mother, his three ſiſters, and eight more women. At firſt, I thought that this numerous train of females came into my boat with no other view than to get a paſſage to Matavai. But when we arrived at the ſhip, they told me, they intended paſſing the night on board, for the expreſs purpoſe of undertaking the cure of the diſorder I complained of; which was a pain of the rheumatic kind, extending from the hip to the foot. I accepted the friendly offer, had a bed ſpread for them upon the cabbin floor, and ſubmitted myſelf to their directions. I was deſired to lay myſelf down amongſt them. Then, as many of them as could get round me, began to ſqueeze me with both hands, from head to foot, but more particularly on the parts where the pain was lodged, till they made my bones crack, and my fleſh became a perfect mummy. In ſhort, after undergoing this diſcipline about a quarter of an hour, I was glad to get away from them. However, the operation gave me immediate relief, which encouraged me to ſubmit to another rubbing-down before I went to bed; and it was ſo effectual, that I found myſelf pretty eaſy all the night

1777. September. Tueſday 23. night after. My female phyſicians repeated their preſcription the next morning, before they went aſhore, and again, in the evening, when they returned on board; after which, I found the pains entirely removed; and the cure being Wedneſ. 24. perfected, they took their leave of me the following morning. This they call *romee*; an operation which, in my opinion, far exceeds the fleſh-bruſh, or any thing of the kind that we make uſe of externally. It is univerſally practiſed amongſt theſe iſlanders; being ſometimes performed by the men, but more generally by the women. If, at any time, one appears languid and tired, and ſits down by any of them, they immediately begin to practiſe the *romee* upon his legs; and I have always found it to have an exceedingly good effect *.

Thurſday 25. In the morning of the 25th, Otoo, Mr. King, and Omai, returned from Attahooroo; and Mr. King gave me the following account of what he had ſeen:

"Soon after you left me, a ſecond meſſenger came from Towha to Otoo, with a plantain-tree. It was ſunſet when we embarked in a canoe and left Oparre. About nine o'clock we landed at Tettaha, at that extremity which joins to Attahooroo. Before we landed, the people called to us from the ſhore; probably, to tell us that Towha was there. The meeting of Otoo and this Chief, I expected, would afford ſome incident worthy of obſervation. Otoo, and his attendants, went and ſeated themſelves on the beach, cloſe to the canoe in which Towha was. He was then aſleep; but his ſervants having awakened him, and mentioning Otoo's name, immediately a plantain-tree and a dog, were laid at

* See Captain Wallis's account of the ſame operation performed on himſelf, and his firſt Lieutenant, in *Hawkeſworth*'s *Collection*, Vol. i. p. 463.

Otoo's feet; and many of Towha's people came and talked with him, as I conceived, about their expedition to Eimeo. After I had, for ſome time, remained ſeated cloſe to Otoo, Towha neither ſtirring from his canoe, nor holding any converſation with us, I went to him. He aſked me if *Toote* was angry with him. I anſwered, No: that he was his *taio*; and that he had ordered me to go to Attahooroo to tell him ſo. Omai now had a long converſation with this Chief; but I could gather no information of any kind from him. On my returning to Otoo, he ſeemed deſirous, that I ſhould go to eat, and then to ſleep. Accordingly, Omai and I left him. On queſtioning Omai, he ſaid, the reaſon of Towha's not ſtirring from his canoe, was his being lame; but that, preſently, Otoo and he would converſe together in private. This ſeemed true; for in a little time, thoſe we left with Otoo came to us; and, about ten minutes after, Otoo himſelf arrived, and we all went to ſleep in his canoe. 1777. September.

The next morning, the *ava* was in great plenty. One man drank ſo much that he loſt his ſenſes. I ſhould have ſuppoſed him to be in a fit, from the convulſions that agitated him. Two men held him, and kept plucking off his hair by the roots. I left this ſpectacle to ſee another that was more affecting. This was the meeting of Towha and his wife, and a young girl, whom I underſtood to be his daughter. After the ceremony of cutting their heads, and diſcharging a tolerable quantity of blood and tears, they waſhed, embraced the Chief, and ſeemed unconcerned. But the young girl's ſufferings were not yet come to an end. Terridiri* arrived; and ſhe went, with great compoſure, to repeat the ſame ceremonies to him, which ſhe had juſt performed on meeting her father. Towha had brought a

* Terridiri is Oberea's ſon. See an account of the royal family of Otaheite, in *Hawkeſworth's Collection*, Vol. ii. p. 154.

1777. September. large war canoe from Eimeo. I enquired if he had killed the people belonging to her; and was told, that there was no man in her when ſhe was captured.

We left Tettaha, about ten or eleven o'clock, and landed, cloſe to the *morai* of Attahooroo, a little after noon. There lay three canoes, hauled upon the beach, oppoſite the *morai*, with three hogs expoſed in each: their ſheds, or awnings, had ſomething under them which I could not diſcern. We expected the ſolemnity to be performed the ſame afternoon; but as neither Towha nor Potatou had joined us, nothing was done.

A Chief from Eimeo came with a ſmall pig, and a plantain-tree, and placed them at Otoo's feet. They talked ſome time together; and the Eimeo Chief often repeating the words, *Warry, warry*, "falſe," I ſuppoſed that Otoo was relating to him what he had heard, and that the other denied it.

The next day (Wedneſday) Towha, and Potatou, with about eight large canoes, arrived, and landed near the *morai*. Many plantain-trees were brought, on the part of different Chiefs, to Otoo. Towha did not ſtir from his canoe. The ceremony began by the principal prieſt bringing out the *maro*, wrapped up; and a bundle, ſhaped like a large ſugar-loaf. Theſe were placed at the head of what I underſtood to be a grave. Then three prieſts came, and ſat down oppoſite, that is, at the other end of the grave; bringing with them a plantain-tree, the branch of ſome other tree, and the ſheath of the flower of the cocoa-nut tree.

The prieſts, with theſe things in their hands, ſeparately repeated ſentences; and, at intervals, two, and ſometimes all three ſung a melancholy ditty, little attended to by the people. This praying and ſinging continued for an hour. Then, after a ſhort prayer, the principal prieſt uncovered the

the *maro*; and Otoo roſe up, and wrapped it about him, holding, at the ſame time, in his hand, a cap or bonnet, compoſed of the red feathers of the tail of the tropic bird, mixed with other feathers of a dark colour. He ſtood in the middle ſpace, facing the three prieſts, who continued their prayers for about ten minutes; when a man, ſtarting from the crowd, ſaid ſomething which ended with the word *heiva!* and the crowd echoed back to him, three times, *Earee!* This, as I had been told before, was the principal part of the ſolemnity. 1777. September.

The company now moved to the oppoſite ſide of the great pile of ſtones, where is, what they call, the king's *morai*; which is not unlike a large grave. Here the ſame ceremony was performed over again, and ended in three cheers. The *maro* was now wrapped up, and encreaſed in its ſplendor by the addition of a ſmall piece of red feathers, which one of the prieſts gave Otoo when he had it on, and which he ſtuck into it.

From this place, the people went to a large hut, cloſe by the *morai*, where they ſeated themſelves in much greater order than is uſual among them. A man of Tiaraboo, then made on oration, which laſted about ten minutes. He was followed by an Attahooroo man; afterward Potatou ſpoke with much greater fluency and grace than any of them; for, in general, they ſpoke in ſhort, broken ſentences, with a motion of the hand that was rather awkward. Tooteo, Otoo's orator, ſpoke next; and, after him, a man from Eimeo. Two or three more ſpeeches were made; but not much attended to. Omai told me, that the ſpeeches declared, that they ſhould not fight, but all be friends. As many of the ſpeakers expreſſed themſelves with warmth, poſſibly there were ſome

1777. September. recriminations and proteſtations of their good intentions. In the midſt of their ſpeaking, a man of Attahooroo got up, with a ſling faſtened to his waiſt, and a large ſtone placed upon his ſhoulder. After parading near a quarter of an hour, in the open ſpace, repeating ſomething in a ſinging tone, he threw the ſtone down. This ſtone, and a plantain tree that lay at Otoo's feet, were, after the ſpeeches ended, carried to the *morai*; and one of the prieſts, and Otoo with him, ſaid ſomething upon the occaſion.

On our return to Oparre, the ſea breeze having ſet in, we were obliged to land; and had a pleaſant walk through almoſt the whole extent of Tettaha to Oparre. A tree, with two bundles of dried leaves ſuſpended upon it, marked the boundary of the two diſtricts. The man who had performed the ceremony of the ſtone and ſling came with us. With him, Otoo's father had a long converſation. He ſeemed very angry. I underſtood, he was enraged at the part Towha had taken in the Eimeo buſineſs."

From what I can judge of this ſolemnity, as thus deſcribed by Mr. King, it had not been wholly a thankſgiving, as Omai told us; but rather a confirmation of the treaty; or, perhaps, both. The grave, which Mr. King ſpeaks of, ſeems to be the very ſpot where the celebration of the rites began, when the human ſacrifice, at which I was preſent, was offered, and before which the victim was laid, after being removed from the ſea ſide. It is at this part of the *morai*, alſo, that they firſt inveſt their kings with the *maro*. Omai, who had been preſent when Otoo was made king, deſcribed to me the whole ceremony, when we were here; and I find it to be almoſt the ſame, as this that Mr. King has now deſcribed, though we underſtood it to be upon a very different occaſion. The plantain tree, ſo often mentioned, is always

the

the firſt thing introduced, not only in all their religious ceremonies, but in all their debates, whether of a public or private nature. It is alſo uſed on other occaſions; perhaps many more than we know of. While Towha was at Eimeo, one or more meſſengers came from him to Otoo every day. The meſſenger always came with a young plantain tree in his hand, which he laid down at Otoo's feet, before he ſpoke a word; then ſeated himſelf before him, and related what he was charged with. I have ſeen two men in ſuch high diſpute that I expected they would proceed to blows; yet, on one laying a plantain tree before the other, they have both become cool, and carried on the argument without farther animoſity. In ſhort, it is, upon all occaſions, the olive-branch of theſe people. 1777. September.

The war with Eimeo, and the ſolemn rites which were the conſequence of it, being thus finally cloſed, all our friends paid us a viſit on the 26th; and, as they knew that we were upon the point of failing, brought with them more hogs than we could take off their hands. For, having no ſalt left, to preſerve any, we wanted no more than for preſent uſe. Friday 26.

The next day, I accompanied Otoo to Oparre; and, before I left it, I looked at the cattle and poultry, which I had conſigned to my friend's care, at that place. Every thing was in a promiſing way; and properly attended unto. Two of the geeſe, and two of the ducks were ſitting; but the pea and turkey hens had not begun to lay. I got from Otoo four goats; two of which I intended to leave at Ulietea, where none had as yet been introduced; and the other two, I propoſed to reſerve for the uſe of any other iſlands I might meet with, in my paſſage to the North. Saturday 27.

A circum-

1777. September. A circumſtance which I ſhall now mention of Otoo, will ſhew, that theſe people are capable of much addreſs and art, to gain their purpoſes. Amongſt other things, which, at different times, I had given to this Chief, was a ſpying-glaſs. After having it in his poſſeſſion two or three days, tired of its novelty, and probably finding it of no uſe to him, he carried it privately to Captain Clerke, and told him, that, as he had been his very good friend, he had got a preſent for him, which he knew would be agreeable. "But, ſays Otoo, you muſt not let *Toote* know it, becauſe he wants it, and I would not let him have it." He then put the glaſs into Captain Clerke's hands; at the ſame time, aſſuring him, that he came honeſtly by it. Captain Clerke, at firſt, declined accepting it; but Otoo inſiſted upon it, and left it with him. Some days after, he put Captain Clerke in mind of the glaſs; who, though he did not want it, was yet deſirous of obliging Otoo; and thinking, that a few axes would be of more uſe at this iſland, produced four to give him in return. Otoo no ſooner ſaw this, than he ſaid, "*Toote* offered me five for it." "Well, ſays Captain Clerke, if that be the caſe, your friendſhip for me ſhall not make you a loſer, and you ſhall have ſix axes." Theſe he accepted; but deſired again, that I might not be told what he had done.

Our friend Omai got one good thing, at this iſland, for the many good things he gave away. This was a very fine double ſailing canoe, completely equipped, and fit for the ſea. Some time before, I had made up for him, a ſuit of Engliſh colours; but he thought theſe too valuable to be uſed at this time; and patched up a parcel of colours, ſuch as flags and pendants, to the number of ten or a dozen, which he ſpread on different parts of his veſſel, all at the

ſame

ſame time; and drew together as many people to look at her, as a man of war would, dreſſed, in a European port. Theſe ſtreamers of Omai were a mixture of Engliſh, French, Spaniſh, and Dutch, which were all the European colours that he had ſeen. When I was laſt at this iſland, I gave to Otoo an Engliſh jack and pendant, and to Towha a pendant; which I now found they had preſerved with the greateſt care. 1777. September.

Omai had alſo provided himſelf with a good ſtock of cloth and cocoa-nut oil, which are not only in greater plenty, but much better, at Otaheite, than at any of the Society Iſlands; inſomuch, that they are articles of trade. Omai would not have behaved ſo inconſiſtently, and ſo much unlike himſelf, as he did, in many inſtances, but for his ſiſter and brother-in-law, who, together with a few more of their acquaintance, engroſſed him entirely to themſelves, with no other view than to ſtrip him of every thing he had got. And they would, undoubtedly, have ſucceeded in their ſcheme, if I had not put a ſtop to it in time, by taking the moſt uſeful articles of his property into my poſſeſſion. But even this would not have ſaved Omai from ruin, if I had ſuffered theſe relations of his to have gone with, or to have followed us to, his intended place of ſettlement, Huaheine. This they had intended; but I diſappointed their farther views of plunder, by forbidding them to ſhew themſelves in that iſland, while I remained in the neighbourhood; and they knew me too well not to comply.

On the 28th, Otoo came on board, and informed me, that he had got a canoe, which he deſired I would take with me, and carry home, as a preſent from him to the *Earee rahie no Pretane*; it being the only thing, he ſaid, that he could ſend Sunday 28.

1777. September. ſend worth his Majeſty's acceptance. I was not a little pleaſed with Otoo, for this mark of his gratitude. It was a thought entirely his own, not one of us having given him the leaſt hint about it; and it ſhewed, that he fully underſtood to whom he was indebted for the moſt valuable preſents that he had received. At firſt, I thought, that this canoe had been a model of one of their veſſels of war; but I ſoon found, that it was a ſmall *iváhah*, about ſixteen feet long. It was double, and ſeemed to have been built for the purpoſe; and was decorated with all thoſe pieces of carved work, which they uſually fix upon their canoes. As it was too large for me to take on board, I could only thank him for his good intention; but it would have pleaſed him much better, if his preſent could have been accepted.

We were detained here ſome days longer than I expected, by light breezes from the Weſt, and calms by turns; ſo that we could not get out of the bay. During this time, the ſhips were crowded with our friends, and ſurrounded by a multitude of canoes; for not one would leave the place, till we were gone. At length, at three o'clock in the afternoon
Monday 29. of the 29th, the wind came at Eaſt, and we weighed anchor.

As ſoon as the ſhips were under ſail, at the requeſt of Otoo, and to gratify the curioſity of his people, I fired ſeven guns, loaded with ſhot; after which, all our friends, except him, and two or three more, left us with ſuch marks of affection and grief, as ſufficiently ſhewed how much they regretted our departure. Otoo being deſirous of ſeeing the ſhip ſail, I made a ſtretch out to ſea, and then in again; when he alſo bid us farewell, and went aſhore in his canoe.

The frequent viſits we had lately paid to this iſland, ſeem to have created a full perſuaſion, that the intercourſe will not be diſcontinued. It was ſtrictly enjoined to me by Otoo,

to

to requeſt, in his name, the *Earee rahie no Pretane*, to ſend him, by the next ſhips, red feathers, and the birds that produce them; axes; half a dozen muſkets, with powder and ſhot; and, by no means, to forget horſes. 1777. September.

I have occaſionally mentioned my receiving conſiderable preſents from Otoo, and the reſt of the family, without ſpecifying what returns I made. It is cuſtomary for theſe people, when they make a preſent, to let us know what they expect in return; and we find it neceſſary to gratify them; ſo that, what we get by way of preſent, comes dearer than what we get by barter. But as we were ſometimes preſſed by occaſional ſcarcity, we could have recourſe to our friends for a preſent, or ſupply, when we could not get our wants relieved by any other method; and, therefore, upon the whole, this way of traffic was full as advantageous to us as to the natives. For the moſt part, I paid for each ſeparate article as I received it, except in my intercourſe with Otoo. His preſents, generally, came ſo faſt upon me, that no account was kept between us. Whatever he aſked for, that I could ſpare, he had whenever he aſked for it; and I always found him moderate in his demands.

If I could have prevailed upon Omai to fix himſelf at Otaheite, I ſhould not have left it ſo ſoon as I did. For there was not a probability of our being better or cheaper ſupplied with refreſhments at any other place, than we continued to be here, even at the time of our leaving it. Beſides, ſuch a cordial friendſhip and confidence ſubſiſted between us and the inhabitants, as could hardly be expected any where elſe; and, it was a little extraordinary, that this friendly intercourſe had never once been ſuſpended, by any untoward accident; nor had there been a theft committed

1777. September. that deſerves to be mentioned. Not that I believe their morals, in this reſpect, to be much mended; but am rather of opinion, that their regularity of conduct was owing to the fear, the Chiefs were under, of interrupting a traffic which they might conſider as the means of ſecuring to themſelves a more conſiderable ſhare of our commodities, than could have been got by plunder or pilfering. Indeed, this point I ſettled at the firſt interview with their Chiefs, after my arrival. For, obſerving the great plenty that was in the iſland, and the eagerneſs of the natives to poſſeſs our various articles of trade, I reſolved to make the moſt of theſe two favourable circumſtances, and explained myſelf, in the moſt deciſive terms, that I would not ſuffer them to rob us, as they had done upon many former occaſions. In this, Omai was of great uſe, as I inſtructed him to point out to them the good conſequences of their honeſt conduct; and the fatal miſchiefs they muſt expect to ſuffer by deviating from it.

It is not always in the power of the Chiefs to prevent robberies; they are frequently robbed themſelves; and complain of it as a great evil. Otoo left the moſt valuable things he had from me, in my poſſeſſion, till the day before we ſailed; and the reaſon he gave for it was, that they were no where ſo ſafe. Since the bringing in of new riches, the inducements to pilfering muſt have increaſed. The Chiefs, ſenſible of this, are now extremely deſirous of cheſts. They ſeemed to ſet much value upon a few that the Spaniards had left amongſt them; and they were continually aſking us for ſome. I had one made for Otoo, the dimenſions of which, according to his own directions, were eight feet in length, five in breadth, and about three in depth. Locks and bolts were not a ſufficient ſecurity; but it muſt be large

enough for two people to ſleep upon, by way of guarding it in the night. 1777. September.

It will appear a little extraordinary, that we, who had a ſmattering of their language, and Omai, beſides, for an interpreter, could never get any clear account of the time when the Spaniards arrived, how long they ſtayed, and when they departed. The more we inquired into this matter, the more we were convinced of the inability of moſt of theſe people to remember, or note the time, when paſt events happened; eſpecially if it exceeded ten or twenty months. It, however, appeared, by the date of the inſcription upon the croſs, and by the information we received from the moſt intelligent of the natives, that two ſhips arrived at Oheitepeha in 1774, ſoon after I left Matavai, which was in May, the ſame year. They brought with them the houſe and live ſtock, before mentioned. Some ſaid, that, after landing theſe things, and ſome men, they ſailed in queſt of me, and returned in about ten days. But I have ſome doubt of the truth of this, as they were never ſeen, either at Huaheine, or at Ulietea. The live ſtock they left here, conſiſted of one bull, ſome goats, hogs, and dogs, and the male of ſome other animal; which we afterward found to be a ram, and, at this time, was at Bolabola, whither the bull was alſo to have been tranſported.

The hogs are of a large kind; have already greatly improved the breed originally found by us upon the iſland; and, at the time of our late arrival, were very numerous. Goats are, alſo, in tolerable plenty, there being hardly a Chief of any note who has not got ſome. As to the dogs that the Spaniards put aſhore, which are of two or three ſorts, I think they would have done the iſland a great deal more ſervice, if they had hanged them all, inſtead of leav-

1777. September. ing them upon it. It was to one of them, that my young ram fell a victim.

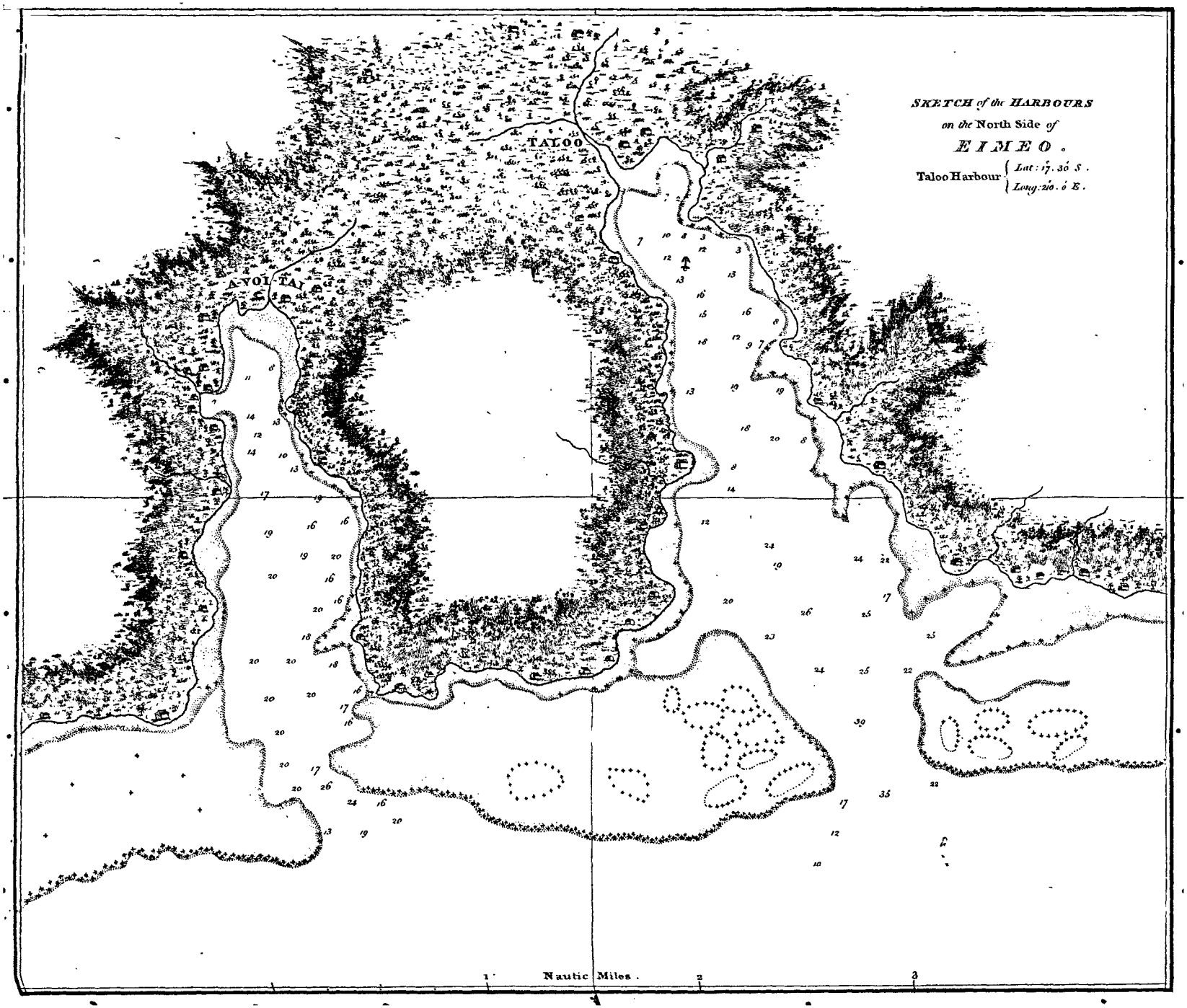
When theſe ſhips left the iſland, four Spaniards remained behind. Two were prieſts, one a ſervant, and the fourth made himſelf very popular among the natives, who diſtinguiſh him by the name of Mateema. He ſeems to have been a perſon who had ſtudied their language; or, at leaſt, to have ſpoken it ſo as to be underſtood; and to have taken uncommon pains to impreſs the minds of the iſlanders with the moſt exalted ideas of the greatneſs of the Spaniſh nation, and to make them think meanly of the Engliſh. He even went ſo far as to aſſure them, that we no longer exiſted as an independent nation; that *Pretane* was only a ſmall iſland, which they, the Spaniards, had entirely deſtroyed; and, for me, that they had met with me at ſea, and, with a few ſhot, had ſent my ſhip, and every ſoul in her, to the bottom; ſo that my viſiting Otaheite, at this time, was, of courſe, very unexpected. All this, and many other improbable falſehoods, did this Spaniard make theſe people believe. If Spain had no other views, in this expedition, but to depreciate the Engliſh, they had better have kept their ſhips at home; for my returning again to Otaheite, was conſidered as a complete confutation of all that Mateema had ſaid.

With what deſign the prieſts ſtayed, we can only gueſs. If it was to convert the natives to the catholic faith, they have not ſucceeded in any one inſtance. But it does not appear, that they ever attempted it; for, if the natives are to be believed, they never converſed with them, either on this, or on any other ſubject. The prieſts reſided conſtantly in the houſe at Oheitepeha; but Mateema roved about, viſiting moſt parts of the iſland. At length, after he and his com-

panions had ſtaid ten months, two ſhips came to Oheitepeha, took them on board, and ſailed again in five days. This haſty departure ſhews, that, whatever deſign the Spaniards might have had upon this iſland, they had now laid it aſide. And yet, as I was informed by Otoo, and many others, before they went away, they would have the natives believe, that they ſtill meant to return, and to bring with them houſes, all kinds of animals, and men and women who were to ſettle, live, and die, on the iſland. Otoo, when he told me this, added, that if the Spaniards ſhould return, he would not let them come to Matavai Fort, which, he ſaid, was ours. It was eaſy to ſee, that the idea pleaſed him; little thinking, that the completion of it would, at once, deprive him of his kingdom, and the people of their liberties. This ſhews with what facility a ſettlement might be made at Otaheite; which, grateful as I am for repeated good offices, I hope will never happen. Our occaſional viſits may, in ſome reſpects, have benefited its inhabitants; but a permanent eſtabliſhment amongſt them, conducted as moſt European eſtabliſhments amongſt Indian nations have unfortunately been, would, I fear, give them juſt cauſe to lament, that our ſhips had ever found them out. Indeed, it is very unlikely, that any meaſure of this kind ſhould ever be ſeriouſly thought of, as it can neither ſerve the purpoſes of public ambition, nor of private avarice; and, without ſuch inducements, I may pronounce, that it will never be undertaken. 1777. September.

I have already mentioned the viſit that I had from one of the two natives of this iſland, who had been carried by the Spaniards to Lima. I never ſaw him afterward; which I rather wondered at, as I had received him with uncommon civility. I believe, however, that Omai had kept him at a diſtance

1777. September. diſtance from me, by ſome rough uſage; jealous, that there ſhould be another traveller upon the iſland, who might vie with himſelf. Our touching at Teneriffe was à fortunate circumſtance for Omai; as he prided himſelf in having viſited a place belonging to Spain, as well as this man. I did not meet with the other, who had returned from Lima; but Captain Clerke, who had ſeen him, ſpoke of him as a low fellow, and as a little out of his ſenſes. His own countrymen, I found, agreed in the ſame account of him. In ſhort, theſe two adventurers ſeemed to be held in no eſteem. They had not, indeed, been ſo fortunate as to return home with ſuch valuable acquiſitions of property, as we had beſtowed upon Omai; and with the advantages he reaped from his voyage to England, it muſt be his own fault, if he ſhould ſink into the ſame ſtate of inſignificance.


SKETCH of the HARBOURS
on the North Side of
EIMEO.
Taloo Harbour { Lat: 17. 30 S.
Long: 210. 0 E.
TALOO
A-VOI TAI
Nautic Miles.
1
2
3

CHAP. V.

Arrival at Eimeo.—Two Harbours there, and an Account of them.—Viſit from Maheine, Chief of the Iſland.—His Perſon deſcribed.—A Goat ſtolen, and ſent back with the Thief.—Another Goat ſtolen and ſecreted—Meaſures taken on the Occaſion.—Expedition croſs the Iſland.—Houſes and Canoes burnt.—The Goat delivered up, and Peace reſtored.—Some Account of the Iſland, &c.

AS I did not give up my deſign of touching at Eimeo; at day-break, in the morning of the 30th, after leaving Otaheite, I ſtood for the North end of the iſland; the harbour, which I wiſhed to examine, being at that part of it. Omai, in his canoe, having arrived there long before us, had taken ſome neceſſary meaſures to ſhew us the place. However, we were not without pilots, having ſeveral men of Otaheite on board, and not a few women. Not caring to truſt entirely to theſe guides, I ſent two boats to examine the harbour; and on their making the ſignal for ſafe anchorage, we ſtood in with the ſhips, and anchored cloſe up to the head of the inlet, in ten fathoms water, over a bottom of ſoft mud, and moored with a hawſer faſt to the ſhore. 1777. September. Tueſday 30.

This harbour, which is called Taloo, is ſituated upon the North ſide of the iſland, in the diſtrict of Oboonohoo, or Poonolioo,

1777. September. Poonohoo. It runs in South, or South by Eaſt, between the hills, above two miles. For ſecurity, and goodneſs of its bottom, it is not inferior to any harbour that I have met with at any of the iſlands in this ocean; and it has this advantage over moſt of them, that a ſhip can ſail in and out, with the reigning trade wind; ſo that the acceſs and receſs are equally eaſy. There are ſeveral rivulets that fall into it. The one, at the head, is ſo conſiderable as to admit boats to go a quarter of a mile up, where we found the water perfectly freſh. Its banks are covered with the *pooroo* tree, as it is called by the natives, which makes good firing, and which they ſet no value upon; ſo that wood and water are to be got here with great facility.

On the ſame ſide of the iſland, and about two miles to the Eaſtward, is the harbour of Parowroah, much larger within than that of Taloo; but the entrance, or opening in the reef (for the whole iſland is ſurrounded by a reef of coral rock) is conſiderably narrower, and lies to leeward of the harbour. Theſe two defects are ſo ſtriking, that the harbour of Taloo muſt always have a decided preference. It is a little extraordinary, that I ſhould have been three times at Otaheite before, and have once ſent a boat to Eimeo, and yet not know, till now, that there was a harbour in it. On the contrary, I always underſtood, there was not. Whereas, there are not only the two above mentioned, but one or two more, on the South ſide of the iſland. But theſe laſt are not ſo conſiderable as the two we have juſt deſcribed, and of which a ſketch has been made for the uſe of thoſe who may follow us in ſuch a voyage.

We had no ſooner anchored, than the ſhips were crowded with the inhabitants, whom curioſity alone brought on board;

board; for they had nothing with them for the purpoſes of barter. But, the next morning, this deficiency was ſupplied; ſeveral canoes then arriving from more diſtant parts, which brought with them abundance of bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and a few hogs. Theſe they exchanged for hatchets, nails, and beads; for red feathers were not ſo much ſought after here as at Otaheite. The ſhip being a good deal peſtered with rats, I hauled her within thirty yards of the ſhore, as near as the depth of water would allow, and made a path for them to get to the land, by faſtening hawſers to the trees. It is ſaid, that this experiment has ſometimes ſucceeded; but, I believe, we got clear of very few, if any, of the numerous tribe that haunted us. 1777. October. Wedneſ. 1.

In the morning of the 2d, Maheine, the Chief of the iſland, paid me a viſit. He approached the ſhip with great caution, and it required ſome perſuaſion to get him on board. Probably, he was under ſome apprehenſions of miſchief from us, as friends of the Otaheiteans; theſe people, not being able to comprehend, how we can be friends with any one, without adopting, at the ſame time, his cauſe againſt his enemies. Maheine was accompanied by his wife, who, as I was informed, is ſiſter to Oamo, of Otaheite, of whoſe death we had an account, while we were at this iſland. I made preſents to both of them, of ſuch things as they ſeemed to ſet the higheſt value upon; and after a ſtay of about half an hour, they went away. Not long after, they returned with a large hog, which they meant as a return for my preſent; but I made them another preſent to the full value of it. After this, they paid a viſit to Captain Clerke. Thurſday 2.

This Chief, who, with a few followers, has made himſelf, in a manner, independent of Otaheite, is between forty and

1777. October. fifty years old. He is bald-headed; which is rather an uncommon appearance in theſe iſlands, at that age. He wore a kind of turban, and ſeemed aſhamed to ſhew his head. But, whether they themſelves conſidered this deficiency of hair as a mark of diſgrace, or whether they entertained a notion of our conſidering it as ſuch, I cannot ſay. We judged that the latter ſuppoſition was the truth, from this circumſtance, that they had ſeen us ſhave the head of one of their people, whom we had caught ſtealing. They, therefore, concluded, that this was the puniſhment uſually inflicted by us upon all thieves; and one or two of our gentlemen, whoſe heads were not over-burthened with hair, we could obſerve, lay under violent ſuſpicions of being *tetos*.

In the evening, Omai and I mounted on horſeback, and took a ride along the ſhore to the Eaſtward. Our train was not very numerous, as Omai had forbid the natives to follow us; and many complied; the fear of giving offence, getting the better of their curioſity. Towha had ſtationed his fleet in this harbour; and though the war laſted but a few days, the marks of its devaſtation were every where to be ſeen. The trees were ſtripped of their fruit; and all the houſes in the neighbourhood, had been pulled down or burnt.

Having employed two or three days in getting up all our ſpirit caſks, to tar their heads, which we found neceſſary, to ſave them from the efforts of a ſmall inſect to deſtroy them, Monday 6. we hauled the ſhip off into the ſtream, on the 6th in the morning, intending to put to ſea the next day; but an accident happened that prevented it, and gave me a good deal of trouble. We had ſent our goats aſhore, in the day time, to graze, with two men to look after them; notwithſtanding which

which precaution, the natives had contrived to ſteal one of them this evening. The loſs of this goat would have been of little conſequence, if it had not interfered with my views of ſtocking other iſlands with theſe animals; but this being the caſe, it became neceſſary to recover it, if poſſible. The next morning, we got intelligence, that it had been carried to Maheine, the Chief, who was, at this time, at Parowroah harbour. Two old men offered to conduct any of my people, whom I might think proper to ſend to him, to bring back the goat. Accordingly, I diſpatched them in a boat, charged with a threatening meſſage to Maheine, if the goat was not immediately given up to me, and alſo the thief. 1777. October. Tueſday 7.

It was only the day before, that this Chief had requeſted me to give him two goats. But, as I could not ſpare them, unleſs at the expence of other iſlands, that might never have another opportunity to get any, and had, beſides, heard that there were already two upon this iſland, I did not gratify him. However, to ſhew my inclination to aſſiſt his views in this reſpect, I deſired Tidooa, an Otaheite Chief, who was preſent, to beg Otoo, in my name, to ſend two of theſe animals to Maheine; and, by way of inſuring a compliance with this requeſt, I ſent to Otoo, by this Chief, a large piece of red feathers, equal to the value of the two goats that I required. I expected that this arrangement would have been ſatisfactory to Maheine, and all the other Chiefs of the iſland; but the event ſhewed that I was miſtaken.

Not thinking, that any one would dare to ſteal a ſecond, at the very time I was taking meaſures to recover the firſt, the goats were put aſhore again this morning; and in the

1777. October. evening a boat was ſent to bring them on board. As our people were getting them into the boat, one was carried off undiſcovered. It being immediately miſſed, I made no doubt of recovering it without much trouble, as there had not been time to carry it to any conſiderable diſtance. Ten or twelve of the natives ſet out, ſoon after, different ways, to bring it back, or to look for it; for not one of them would own that it was ſtolen, but all tried to perſuade us, that it had ſtrayed into the woods; and, indeed, I thought ſo myſelf. I was convinced to the contrary, however, when I found that not one of thoſe who went in purſuit of it, returned; ſo that their only view was to amuſe me, till their prize was beyond my reach; and night coming on, put a ſtop to all farther ſearch. About this time, the boat returned with the other goat, bringing alſo one of the men who had ſtolen it; the firſt inſtance of the kind that I had met with amongſt theſe iſlands.

Wedneſ. 8. The next morning, I found that moſt of the inhabitants in the neighbourhood, had moved off; carrying with them a corpſe which lay on a *toopapaoo* oppoſite the ſhip; and that Maheine himſelf had retired to the moſt diſtant part of the iſland. It ſeemed now no longer doubtful, that a plan had been laid to ſteal what I had refuſed to give; and that, though they had reſtored one, they were reſolved to keep the other; which was a ſhe-goat, and big with kid. I was equally fixed in my reſolution that they ſhould not keep it. I, therefore, applied to the two old men who had been inſtrumental in getting back the firſt. They told me, that this had been carried to Watea, a diſtrict on the South ſide of the iſland, by Hamoa, the Chief of that place; but that, if I would ſend any body for it, it would be delivered up. They offered to conduct ſome of my people croſs the iſland; but

on

on my learning from them, that a boat might go and return the ſame day, I ſent one, with two petty officers, Mr. Roberts and Mr. Shuttleworth; one to remain with the boat, in caſe ſhe could not get to the place, while the other ſhould go with the guides, and one or two of our people. 1777. October.

Late in the evening, the boat returned, and the officers informed me, that after proceeding as far in the boat as rocks and ſhoals would permit, Mr. Shuttleworth, with two marines, and one of the guides, landed and travelled to Watea, to the houſe of Hamoa, where the people of the place amuſed them for ſome time, by telling them, that the goat would ſoon be brought, and pretended they had ſent for it. It however never came; and the approach of night obliged Mr. Shuttleworth to return to the boat without it.

I was now very ſorry, that I had proceeded ſo far; as I could not retreat with any tolerable credit, and without giving encouragement to the people of the other iſlands we had yet to viſit, to rob us with impunity. I aſked Omai and the two old men, what methods I ſhould next take; and they, without heſitation, adviſed me to go with a party of men into the country, and ſhoot every ſoul I ſhould meet with. This bloody counſel I could not follow; but I reſolved to march a party of men croſs the iſland; and, at day-break the next morning, ſet out with thirty-five of my people, accompanied by one of the old men, by Omai, and three or four of his attendants. At the ſame time, I ordered Lieutenant Williamſon, with three armed boats, round the Weſtern part of the iſland, to meet us. Thurſday 9.

I had no ſooner landed with my party, than the few natives who ſtill remained in the neighbourhood, fled before us. The firſt man that we met with upon our march, run ſome riſk of

1777. October. his life; for Omai, the moment he ſaw him, aſked me if he ſhould ſhoot him; ſo fully was he perſuaded, that I was going to carry his advice into execution. I immediately ordered both him and our guide to make it known, that I did not intend to hurt, much leſs to kill, a ſingle native. Theſe glad tidings flew before us like lightning, and ſtopped the flight of the inhabitants; ſo that no one quitted his houſe, or employment, afterward.

As we began to aſcend the ridge of hills over which lay our road, we got intelligence, that the goat had been carried that way before us; and, as we underſtood, could not, as yet, have paſſed the hills; ſo that we marched up, in great ſilence, in hopes of ſurpriſing the party who were bearing off the prize. But when we had got to the uppermoſt plantation on the ſide of the ridge, the people there told us, that what we were in ſearch of had, indeed, been kept there the firſt night, but had been carried, the next morning, to Watea, by Hamoa. We then croſſed the ridge without making any further inquiry, till we came within ſight of Watea, where ſome people ſhewed us Hamoa's houſe, and told us, that the goat was there; ſo that I made no doubt of getting it immediately upon my arrival. But when I reached the houſe, to my very great ſurprize, the few people we met with denied that they had ever ſeen it, or knew any thing about it; even Hamoa himſelf came, and made the ſame declaration.

On our firſt coming to the place, I obſerved ſeveral men running to and fro in the woods, with clubs and bundles of darts in their hands; and Omai, who followed them, had ſome ſtones thrown at him; ſo that it ſeemed as if they had intended to oppoſe any ſtep I ſhould take, by force; but on ſeeing

ſeeing my party was too ſtrong, had dropped the deſign. I was confirmed in this notion, by obſerving, that all their houſes were empty. Afer getting a few of the people of the place together, I deſired Omai to expoſtulate with them on the abſurdity of the conduct they were purſuing; and to tell them, that, from the teſtimony of many on whom I could depend, I was well aſſured, that the goat was in their poſſeſſion; and, therefore, inſiſted upon its being delivered up, otherwiſe I would burn their houſes and canoes. But, notwithſtanding all that I or Omai could ſay, they continued to deny their having any knowledge of it. The conſequence was, that I ſet fire to ſix or eight houſes, which were preſently conſumed, with two or three war-canoes that lay contiguous to them. This done, I marched off to join the boats, which were about ſeven or eight miles from us; and, in our way, we burnt ſix more war-canoes, without any one attempting to oppoſe us; on the contrary, many aſſiſted, though, probably, more out of fear than good-will. In one place, Omai, who had advanced a little before, came back with information, that a great many men were getting together to attack us. We made ready to receive them; but, inſtead of enemies, we found petitioners with plantain-trees in their hands, which they laid down at my feet, and begged that I would ſpare a canoe that lay cloſe by; which I readily complied with. 1777. October.

At length, about four in the afternoon, we got to the boats, that were waiting at Wharrarade, the diſtrict belonging to Tiarataboonoue; but this Chief, as well as all the principal people of the place, had fled to the hills; though I touched not a ſingle thing that was their property, as they were the friends of Otoo. After reſting ourſelves here about an hour, we ſet out for the ſhips, where we ar-

1777. October. rived about eight o'clock in the evening. At that time, no account of the goat had been received; ſo that the operations of this day had not produced the deſired effect.

Friday 10. Early next morning, I diſpatched one of Omai's men to Maheine, with this peremptory meſſage, that, if he perſiſted in his refuſal, I would not leave him a ſingle canoe upon the iſland, and that he might expect a continuation of hoſtilities as long as the ſtolen animal remained in his poſſeſſion. And, that the meſſenger might ſee that I was in earneſt, before he left me, I ſent the carpenter to break up three or four canoes that lay aſhore at the head of the harbour. The plank was carried on board, as materials for building a houſe for Omai, at the place where he intended to ſettle. I afterward went, properly accompanied, to the next harbour, where we broke up three or four more canoes, and burnt an equal number; and then returned on board about ſeven in the evening. On my arrival, I found that the goat had been brought back, about half an hour before; and, on inquiry, it appeared that it had come from the very place where I had been told, the day before, by the inhabitants, that they knew nothing of it. But in conſequence of the meſſage I ſent to the Chief in the morning, it was judged prudent to trifle with me no longer.

Thus ended this troubleſome, and rather unfortunate, buſineſs; which could not be more regretted on the part of the natives, than it was on mine. And it grieved me to reflect, that, after refuſing the preſſing ſolicitations of my friends at Otaheite to favour their invaſion of this iſland, I ſhould, ſo ſoon, find myſelf reduced to the neceſſity of engaging in hoſtilities againſt its inhabitants, which, perhaps, did them more miſchief than they had ſuffered from Towha's expedition.

The

The next morning, our intercourſe with the natives was renewed; and ſeveral canoes brought, to the ſhips, bread-fruit and cocoa-nuts to barter; from whence it was natural for me to draw this concluſion, that they were conſcious it was their own fault, if I had treated them with ſeverity; and that the cauſe of my diſpleaſure being removed, they had a full confidence that no further miſchief would enſue. About nine o'clock, we weighed with a breeze down the harbour; but it proved ſo faint and variable, that it was noon before we got out to ſea, when I ſteered for Huaheine, attended by Omai in his canoe. He did not depend entirely upon his own judgment, but had got on board a pilot. I obſerved, that they ſhaped as direct a courſe for the iſland as I could do. 1777. October. Saturday 11.

At Eimeo we abundantly ſupplied the ſhips with firewood. We had not taken in any at Otaheite, where the procuring this article would have been very inconvenient; there not being a tree at Matavai, but what is uſeful to the inhabitants. We alſo got here good ſtore of refreſhments, both in hogs and vegetables; that is, bread-fruit and cocoa-nuts; little elſe being in ſeaſon. I do not know that there is any difference between the produce of this iſland and of Otaheite; but there is a very ſtriking difference in their women, that I can by no means account for. Thoſe of Eimeo are of low ſtature, have a dark hue; and, in general, forbidding features. If we met with a fine woman amongſt them, we were ſure, upon enquiry, to find that ſhe had come from ſome other iſland.

The general appearance of Eimeo is very different from that of Otaheite. The latter riſing in one ſteep hilly body, has little low land, except ſome deep valleys; and the flat bor-

1777. October.

der that ſurrounds the greateſt part of it, toward the ſea. Eimeo, on the contrary, has hills running in different directions, which, are very ſteep and rugged, leaving, in the interſpaces, very large valleys, and gently-riſing grounds about their ſides. Theſe hills, though of a rocky diſpoſition, are, in general, covered, almoſt to their tops, with trees; but the lower parts, on the ſides, frequently only with fern. At the bottom of the harbour, where we lay, the ground riſes gently to the foot of the hills which run acroſs nearly in the middle of the iſland; but its flat border, on each ſide, at a very ſmall diſtance from the ſea, becomes quite ſteep. This gives it a romantic caſt, which renders it a proſpect ſuperior to any thing we ſaw at Otaheite. The ſoil, about the low grounds, is a yellowiſh and pretty ſtiff mould; but, upon the lower hills, it is blacker and more looſe: and the ſtone that compoſes the hills is, when broken, of a blueiſh colour, but not very compact texture, with ſome particles of *glimmer* interſperſed. Theſe particulars ſeem worthy of obſervation. Perhaps the reader will think differently of my judgment, when I add, that, near the ſtation of our ſhips, were two large ſtones, or rather rocks, concerning which the natives have ſome ſuperſtitious notions. They conſider them as *Eatoas*, or Divinities; ſaying, that they are brother and ſiſter, and that they came, by ſome ſupernatural means, from Ulietea.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

Arrival at Huaheine.—Council of the Chiefs.—Omai's Offerings, and Speech to the Chiefs.—His Eſtabliſhment in this Iſland agreed to.—A Houſe built, and Garden planted for him.—Singularity of his Situation.—Meaſures taken to inſure his Safety.—Damage done by Cock-roaches on board the Ships.—A Thief detected and puniſhed.—Fire-works exhibited.—Animals left with Omai.—His Family.—Weapons.—Inſcription on his Houſe.—His Behaviour on the Ship's leaving the Iſland.—Summary View of his Conduct and Character.—Account of the two New Zealand Youths.

HAVING left Eimeo, with a gentle breeze and fine weather, at day-break, the next morning, we ſaw Huaheine, extending from South Weſt by Weſt, half Weſt, to Weſt by North. At noon, we anchored at the North entrance of Owharre harbour *, which is on the Weſt ſide of the iſland. The whole afternoon was ſpent in warping the ſhips into a proper birth, and mooring. Omai entered the harbour juſt before us, in his canoe, but did not land. Nor did he take much notice of any of his countrymen, though many crowded to ſee him; but far more of them came off to the ſhips, inſomuch that we could hardly work on account of their numbers. Our paſſengers pre- 1777. October. Sunday 12.

* See a plan of this harbour in Hawkeſworth's Collection, Vol. ii. p. 248.

1777. October. ſently acquainted them with what we had done at Eimeo, and multiplied the number of houſes and canoes that we had deſtroyed, by ten at leaſt. I was not ſorry for this exaggerated account; as I ſaw, that it made a great impreſſion upon all who heard it; ſo that I had hopes it would induce the inhabitants of this iſland to behave better to us, than they had done during my former viſits.

While I was at Otaheite, I had learned that my old friend Oree was no longer the Chief of Huaheine; and that, at this time, he reſided at Ulietea. Indeed, he never had been more than regent during the minority of Taireetareea, the preſent *Earee rahie*; but he did not give up the regency, till he was forced. His two ſons, Opoony and Towha, were the firſt who paid me a viſit, coming on board before the ſhip was well in the harbour, and bringing a preſent with them.

Our arrival brought all the principal people of the iſland
Monday 13. to our ſhips, on the next morning, being the 13th. This was juſt what I wiſhed, as it was high time to think of ſettling Omai; and the preſence of theſe Chiefs, I gueſſed, would enable me to do it in the moſt ſatisfactory manner. He now ſeemed to have an inclination to eſtabliſh himſelf at Ulietea; and if he and I could have agreed about the mode of bringing that plan to bear, I ſhould have had no objection to adopt it. His father had been diſpoſſeſſed by the men of Bolabola, when they conquered Ulietea, of ſome land in that iſland; and I made no doubt of being able to get it reſtored to the ſon in an amicable manner. For that purpoſe it was neceſſary, that he ſhould be upon good terms with thoſe who now were maſters of the iſland; but he was too great a patriot to liſten to any ſuch thing; and was vain

vain enough to ſuppoſe, that I would reinſtate him in his forfeited lands by force. This made it impoſſible to fix him at Ulietea, and pointed out to me Huaheine as the proper place. I, therefore, reſolved to avail myſelf of the preſence of the chief men of the iſland, and to make this propoſal to them. 1777. October.

After the hurry of the morning was over, we got ready to pay a formal viſit to Taireetareea, meaning then to introduce this buſineſs. Omai dreſſed himſelf very properly on the occaſion; and prepared a handſome preſent for the Chief himſelf, and another for his *Eatooa*. Indeed, after he had got clear of the gang that ſurrounded him at Otaheite, he behaved with ſuch prudence as to gain reſpect. Our landing drew moſt of our viſiters from the ſhips; and they, as well as thoſe that were on ſhore, aſſembled in a large houſe. The concourſe of people, on this occaſion, was very great; and, amongſt them, there appeared to be a greater proportion of perſonable men and women than we had ever ſeen in one aſſembly at any of theſe new iſlands. Not only the bulk of the people ſeemed, in general, much ſtouter and fairer than thoſe of Otaheite, but there was alſo a much greater number of men who appeared to be of conſequence, in proportion to the extent of the iſland; moſt of whom had exactly the corpulent appearance of the Chiefs of Wateeo. We waited ſome time for Taireetareea, as I would do nothing till the *Earee rahie* came; but when he appeared, I found that his preſence might have been diſpenſed with, as he was not above eight or ten years of age. Omai, who ſtood at a little diſtance from this circle of great men, began with making his offering to the Gods, conſiſting of red feathers, cloth, *&c.* Then followed another offering, which was to be given to the Gods by the Chief; and, after that,

1777. October. ſeveral other ſmall pieces and tufts of red feathers were preſented. Each article was laid before one of the company, who, I underſtood, was a prieſt, and was delivered with a ſet ſpeech or prayer, ſpoken by one of Omai's friends, who ſat by him, but moſtly dictated by himſelf. In theſe prayers, he did not forget his friends in England, nor thoſe who had brought him ſafe back. The *Earee rahie no Pretane*, Lord Sandwich, *Toote*, *Tatee**, were mentioned in every one of them. When Omai's offerings and prayers were finiſhed, the prieſt took each article, in the ſame order in which it had been laid before him, and after repeating a prayer, ſent it to the *morai*; which, as Omai told us, was at a great diſtance, otherwiſe the offerings would have been made there.

Theſe religious ceremonies having been performed, Omai ſat down by me, and we entered upon buſineſs, by giving the young Chief my preſent, and receiving his in return; and, all things conſidered, they were liberal enough, on both ſides. Some arrangements were next agreed upon, as to the manner of carrying on the intercourſe betwixt us; and I pointed out the miſchievous conſequences that would attend their robbing us, as they had done during my former viſits. Omai's eſtabliſhment was then propoſed to the aſſembled Chiefs.

He acquainted them, "That he had been carried by us into our country, where he was well received by the great King and his *Earees*, and treated with every mark of regard and affection, while he ſtaid amongſt us; that he had been brought back again, enriched, by our liberality, with a variety of articles, which would prove very uſeful to his

* Cook and Clerke.

countrymen; and that, beſides the two horſes which were to remain with him, ſeveral other new and valuable animals had been left at Otaheite, which would ſoon multiply, and furniſh a ſufficient number for the uſe of all the iſlands in the neighbourhood. He then ſignified to them, that it was my earneſt requeſt, in return for all my friendly offices, that they would give him a piece of land, to build a houſe upon, and to raiſe proviſions for himſelf and ſervants; adding, that, if this could not be obtained for him in Huaheine, either by gift or by purchaſe, I was determined to carry him to Ulietea, and fix him there." 1777. October.

Perhaps I have here made a better ſpeech for my friend, than he actually delivered; but theſe were the topics I dictated to him. I obſerved, that what he concluded with, about carrying him to Ulietea, ſeemed to meet with the approbation of all the Chiefs; and I inſtantly ſaw the reaſon. Omai had, as I have already mentioned, vainly flattered himſelf, that I meant to uſe force in reſtoring him to his father's lands in Ulietea, and he had talked idly, and without any authority from me, on this ſubject, to ſome of the preſent aſſembly; who dreamed of nothing leſs than a hoſtile invaſion of Ulietea, and of being aſſiſted by me to drive the Bolabola men out of that iſland. It was of conſequence, therefore, that I ſhould undeceive them; and, in order to this, I ſignified, in the moſt peremptory manner, that I neither would aſſiſt them in ſuch an enterprize, nor ſuffer it to be put in execution, while I was in their ſeas; and that, if Omai fixed himſelf in Ulietea, he muſt be introduced as a friend, and not forced upon the Bolabola men as their conqueror.

This declaration gave a new turn to the ſentiments of the council. One of the Chiefs immediately expreſſed himſelf

to

1777. October. to this effect: "That the whole iſland of Huaheine, and every thing in it, were mine; and that, therefore, I might give what portion of it I pleaſed to my friend." Omai, who, like the reſt of his countrymen, ſeldom ſees things beyond the preſent moment, was greatly pleaſed to hear this; thinking, no doubt, that I ſhould be very liberal, and give him enough. But to offer what it would have been improper to accept, I conſidered as offering nothing at all; and, therefore, I now deſired, that they would not only aſſign the particular ſpot, but alſo the exact quantity of land, which they would allot for the ſettlement. Upon this, ſome Chiefs, who had already left the aſſembly, were ſent for; and, after a ſhort conſultation among themſelves, my requeſt was granted by general conſent; and the ground immediately pitched upon, adjoining to the houſe where our meeting was held. The extent, along the ſhore of the harbour, was about two hundred yards; and its depth, to the foot of the hill, ſomewhat more; but a proportional part of the hill was included in the grant.

This buſineſs being ſettled to the ſatisfaction of all parties, I ſet up a tent aſhore, eſtabliſhed a poſt, and erected the obſervatories. The carpenters of both ſhips were alſo ſet to work, to build a ſmall houſe for Omai, in which he might ſecure the European commodities that were his property. At the ſame time, ſome hands were employed in making a garden for his uſe, planting ſhaddocks, vines, pine-apples, melons, and the ſeeds of ſeveral other vegetable articles; all of which I had the ſatisfaction of obſerving to be in a flouriſhing ſtate before I left the iſland.

Omai now began ſeriouſly to attend to his own affairs, and repented heartily of his ill-judged prodigality while at Otaheite.

Otaheite. He found at Huaheine, a brother, a ſiſter, and a brother-in-law; the ſiſter being married. But theſe did not plunder him, as he had lately been by his other relations. I was ſorry, however, to diſcover, that, though they were too honeſt to do him any injury, they were of too little conſequence in the iſland to do him any poſitive good. They had neither authority nor influence to protect his perſon, or his property; and, in that helpleſs ſituation, I had reaſon to apprehend, that he run great riſk of being ſtripped of every thing he had got from us, as ſoon as he ſhould ceaſe to have us within his reach, to enforce the good behaviour of his countrymen, by an immediate appeal to our irreſiſtible power. 1777. October.

A man who is richer than his neighbours is ſure to be envied, by numbers who wiſh to ſee him brought down to their own level. But in countries where civilization, law, and religion, impoſe their reſtraints, the rich have a reaſonable ground of ſecurity. And, beſides, there being, in all ſuch communities, a diffuſion of property, no ſingle individual need fear, that the efforts of all the poorer ſort can ever be united to injure him, excluſively of others who are equally the objects of envy. It was very different with Omai. He was to live amongſt thoſe who are ſtrangers, in a great meaſure, to any other principle of action beſides the immediate impulſe of their natural feelings. But, what was his principal danger, he was to be placed in the very ſingular ſituation, of being the only rich man in the community to which he was to belong. And having, by a fortunate connection with us, got into his poſſeſſion an accumulated quantity of a ſpecies of treaſure which none of his countrymen could create by any art or induſtry of their own; while all coveted a ſhare of this envied wealth, it

1777. October. was natural to apprehend, that all would be ready to join in attempting to ſtrip its ſole proprietor.

To prevent this, if poſſible, I adviſed him to make a proper diſtribution of ſome of his moveables, to two or three of the principal Chiefs; who, being thus gratified themſelves, might be induced to take him under their patronage, and protect him from the injuries of others. He promiſed to follow my advice; and I heard, with ſatisfaction, before I ſailed, that this very prudent ſtep had been taken. Not truſting, however, entirely to the operations of gratitude, I had recourſe to the more forcible motive of intimidation. With this view, I took every opportunity of notifying to the inhabitants, that it was my intention to return to their iſland again, after being abſent the uſual time; and that, if I did not find Omai in the ſame ſtate of ſecurity in which I was now to leave him, all thoſe whom I ſhould then diſcover to have been his enemies, might expect to feel the weight of my reſentment. This threatening declaration will, probably, have no inconſiderable effect. For our ſucceſſive viſits of late years have taught theſe people to believe, that our ſhips are to return at certain periods; and while they continue to be impreſſed with ſuch a notion, which I thought it a fair ſtratagem to confirm, Omai has ſome proſpect of being permitted to thrive upon his new plantation.

While we lay in this harbour, we carried aſhore the bread, remaining in the bread-room, to clear it of vermin. The number of cock-roaches that infeſted the ſhip, at this time, is incredible. The damage they did us was very conſiderable; and every method deviſed by us to deſtroy them proved ineffectual. Theſe animals, which, at firſt, were a

nuiſance, like all other inſects, had now become a real peſt; and ſo deſtructive, that few things were free from their ravages. If food of any kind was expoſed, only for a few minutes, it was covered with them; and they ſoon pierced it full of holes, reſembling a honeycomb. They were particularly deſtructive to birds, which had been ſtuffed and preſerved as curioſities; and, what was worſe, were uncommonly fond of ink; ſo that the writing on the labels, faſtened to different articles, was quite eaten out; and the only thing that preſerved books from them, was the cloſeneſs of the binding, which prevented theſe devourers getting between the leaves. According to Mr. Anderſon's obſervations, they were of two ſorts, the *blatta orientalis*, and *germanica*. The firſt of theſe had been carried home in the ſhip from her former voyage, where they withſtood the ſeverity of the hard winter in 1776, though ſhe was in dock all the time. The others had only made their appearance ſince our leaving New Zealand; but had increaſed ſo faſt, that they now not only did all the miſchief mentioned above, but had even got amongſt the rigging; ſo that when a ſail was looſened, thouſands of them fell upon the decks. The *orientales*, though in infinite numbers, ſcarcely came out but in the night, when they made every thing in the cabins ſeem as if in motion, from the particular noiſe in crawling about. And, beſides their diſagreeable appearance, they did great miſchief to our bread, which was ſo beſpattered with their excrement, that it would have been badly reliſhed by delicate feeders. 1777. October.

The intercourſe of trade, and friendly offices, was carried on, between us and the natives, without being diſturbed by any one accident, till the evening of the 22d, when a man found means to get into Mr. Bayly's obſervatory, and to Wedneſ. 22.

1777. October. carry off a ſextant, unobſerved. As ſoon as I was made acquainted with the theft, I went aſhore, and got Omai to apply to the Chiefs, to procure reſtitution. He did ſo; but they took no ſteps toward it, being more attentive to a *heeva*, that was then acting, till I ordered the performers of the exhibition to deſiſt. They were now convinced, that I was in earneſt, and began to make ſome enquiry after the thief, who was ſitting in the midſt of them, quite unconcerned, inſomuch that I was in great doubt of his being the guilty perſon; eſpecially as he denied it. Omai, however, aſſuring me that he was the man, I ſent him on board the ſhip, and there confined him. This raiſed a general ferment amongſt the aſſembled natives; and the whole body fled, in ſpite of all my endeavours to ſtop them. Having employed Omai to examine the priſoner, with ſome difficulty he was brought to confeſs where he had hid the ſextant; but, as it
Thurſday 23. was now dark, we could not find it till day-light the next morning, when it was brought back unhurt. After this, the natives recovered from their fright, and began to gather about us as uſual. And, as to the thief, he appearing to be a hardened ſcoundrel, I puniſhed him more ſeverely than I had ever done any one culprit before. Beſides having his head and beard ſhaved, I ordered both his ears to be cut off, and then diſmiſſed him.

This, however, did not deter him from giving us farther
Saturday 25. trouble; for, in the night between the 24th and 25th, a general alarm was ſpread, occaſioned, as was ſaid, by one of our goats being ſtolen by this very man. On examination, we found, that all was ſafe in that quarter. Probably, the goats were ſo well guarded, that he could not put his deſign in execution. But his hoſtilities had ſucceeded against another object; and it appeared, that he had deſtroyed and carried

carried off ſeveral vines and cabbage-plants in Omai's grounds; and he publicly threatened to kill him, and to burn his houſe, as ſoon as we ſhould leave the iſland. To prevent the fellow's doing me and Omai any more miſchief, I had him ſeized, and confined again on board the ſhip, with a view of carrying him off the iſland; and it ſeemed to give general ſatisfaction to the Chiefs, that I meant thus to diſpoſe of him. He was from Bolabola; but there were too many of the natives here ready to aſſiſt him in any of his deſigns, whenever he ſhould think of executing them. I had always met with more troubleſome people in Huaheine, than in any other of the neighbouring iſlands; and it was only fear, and the want of opportunities, that induced them to behave better now. Anarchy ſeemed to prevail amongſt them. Their nominal ſovereign the *Earee rahie*, as I have before obſerved, was but a child; and I did not find, that there was any one man, or ſet of men, who managed the government for him; ſo that, whenever any miſunderſtanding happened between us, I never knew, with ſufficient preciſion, where to make application, in order to bring about an accommodation, or to procure redreſs. The young Chief's mother would, indeed, ſometimes exert herſelf; but I did not perceive that ſhe had greater authority than many others. 1777. October.

Omai's houſe being nearly finiſhed, many of his moveables were carried aſhore on the 26th. Amongſt a variety of other uſeleſs articles was a box of toys, which, when expoſed to public view, ſeemed greatly to pleaſe the gazing multitude. But, as to his pots, kettles, diſhes, plates, drinking-mugs, glaſſes, and the whole train of our domeſtic accomodations, hardly any one of his countrymen would ſo much as look at them. Omai himſelf now began to think Sunday 26.

85521

1777. October. that they were of no manner of uſe to him; that a baked hog was more ſavory food than a boiled one; that a plantain-leaf made as good a diſh or plate as pewter; and that a cocoa-nut ſhell was as convenient a goblet as a black-jack. And, therefore, he very wiſely diſpoſed of as many of theſe articles of Engliſh furniture for the kitchen and pantry, as he could find purchaſers for, amongſt the people of the ſhips; receiving from them, in return, hatchets, and other iron tools, which had a more intrinſic value in this part of the world, and added more to his diſtinguiſhing ſuperiority over thoſe with whom he was to paſs the remainder of his days.

Tueſday 28. In the long liſt of the preſents beſtowed upon him in England, fire-works had not been forgot. Some of theſe we exhibited, in the evening of the 28th, before a great concourſe of people, who beheld them with a mixture of pleaſure and fear. What remained, after the evening's entertainment, were put in order, and left with Omai, agreeably to their original deſtination. Perhaps we need not lament it as a ſerious misfortune, that the far greater ſhare of this part of his cargo, had been already expended in exhibitions at other iſlands, or rendered uſeleſs by being kept ſo long.

Thurſday 30. Between midnight and four in the morning of the 30th, the Bolabola man, whom I had in confinement, found means to make his eſcape out of the ſhip. He carried with him the ſhackle of the bilboo-bolt that was about his leg, which was taken from him, as ſoon as he got on ſhore, by one of the Chiefs, and given to Omai; who came on board, very early in the morning, to acquaint me that his mortal enemy was again let looſe upon him. Upon enquiry, it appeared, that not only the ſentry placed over the priſoner, but the whole watch, upon the quarter-deck where he was confined, had laid themſelves down to ſleep. He ſeized the opportunity

13636

nity to take the key of the irons out of the binnacle-drawer, where he had ſeen it put, and ſet himſelf at liberty. This eſcape convinced me, that my people had been very remiſs in their night-duty; which made it neceſſary to puniſh thoſe who were now in fault, and to eſtabliſh ſome new regulations to prevent the like negligence for the future. I was not a little pleaſed to hear, afterward, that the fellow who eſcaped, had tranſported himſelf to Ulietea; in this, ſeconding my views of putting him a ſecond time in irons. 1777. October.

As ſoon as Omai was ſettled in his new habitation, I began to think of leaving the iſland; and got every thing off from the ſhore, this evening, except the horſe and mare, and a goat big with kid; which were left in the poſſeſſion of our friend, with whom we were now finally to part. I alſo gave him a boar and two ſows of the Engliſh breed; and he had got a ſow or two of his own. The horſe covered the mare while we were at Otaheite; ſo that I conſider the introduction of a breed of horſes into theſe iſlands, as likely to have ſucceeded, by this valuable preſent.

The hiſtory of Omai will, perhaps, intereſt a very numerous claſs of readers, more than any other occurrence of a voyage, the objects of which do not, in general, promiſe much entertainment. Every circumſtance, therefore, which may ſerve to convey a ſatisfactory account of the exact ſituation in which he was left, will be thought worth preſerving; and the following particulars are added, to complete the view of his domeſtic eſtabliſhment. He had picked up at Otaheite four or five *Toutous*; the two New Zealand youths remained with him; and his brother, and ſome others, joined him at Huaheine: ſo that his family conſiſted already of eight or ten perſons; if that can be called a family, to which

1777. October. which not a ſingle female, as yet, belonged; nor, I doubt, was likely to belong, unleſs its maſter became leſs volatile. At preſent, Omai did not ſeem at all diſpoſed to take unto himſelf a wife.

The houſe which we erected for him was twenty-four feet by eighteen; and ten feet high. It was compoſed of boards, the ſpoils of our military operations at Eimeo; and, in building it, as few nails, as poſſible, were uſed, that there might be no inducement, from the love of iron, to pull it down. It was ſettled, that immediately after our departure, he ſhould begin to build a large houſe after the faſhion of his country; one end of which was to be brought over that which we had erected, ſo as to encloſe it entirely for greater ſecurity. In this work, ſome of the Chiefs promiſed to aſſiſt him; and, if the intended building ſhould cover the ground which he marked out, it will be as large as moſt upon the iſland.

His European weapons conſiſted of a muſket, bayonet, and cartouch-box; a fowling-piece; two pair of piſtols; and two or three ſwords or cutlaſſes. The poſſeſſion of theſe made him quite happy; which was my only view in giving him ſuch preſents. For I was always of opinion, that he would have been happier without fire-arms, and other European weapons, than with them; as ſuch implements of war, in the hands of one, whoſe prudent uſe of them I had ſome grounds for miſtruſting, would rather encreaſe his dangers than eſtabliſh his ſuperiority. After he had got on ſhore every thing that belonged to him, and was ſettled in his houſe, he had moſt of the officers of both ſhips, two or three times, to dinner; and his table was always well ſupplied with the very beſt proviſions that the iſland produced.

Before

Before I ſailed, I had the following inſcription cut upon the outſide of his houſe: 1777. October.

Georgius Tertius, Rex, 2 Novembris, 1777.
Naves { *Reſolution, Jac. Cook, Pr.*
{ *Diſcovery, Car. Clerke, Pr.*

On the ſecond of November, at four in the afternoon, I took the advantage of a breeze, which then ſprung up at Eaſt, and ſailed out of the harbour. Moſt of our friends remained on board till the ſhips were under ſail; when, to gratify their curioſity, I ordered five guns to be fired. They then all took their leave, except Omai, who remained till we were at ſea. We had come to ſail by a hawſer faſtened to the ſhore. In caſting the ſhip, it parted, being cut by the rocks, and the outer end was left behind; as thoſe who caſt it off, did not perceive that it was broken; ſo that it became neceſſary to ſend a boat to bring it on board. In this boat, Omai went aſhore, after taking a very affectionate farewel of all the officers. He ſuſtained himſelf with a manly reſolution, till he came to me. Then his utmoſt efforts to conceal his tears failed; and Mr. King, who went in the boat, told me, that he wept all the time in going aſhore. November. Sunday 2.

It was no ſmall ſatisfaction to reflect, that we had brought him ſafe back to the very ſpot from which he was taken. And, yet, ſuch is the ſtrange nature of human affairs, that it is probable we left him in a leſs deſirable ſituation, than he was in before his connexion with us. I do not, by this, mean, that, becauſe he has taſted the ſweets of civilized life, he muſt become more miſerable from being obliged to abandon all thoughts of continuing them. I confine myſelf to this ſingle diſagreeable circumſtance, that the advantages

1777. November. he received from us, have placed him in a more hazardous ſituation, with reſpect to his perſonal ſafety. Omai, from being much careſſed in England, loſt ſight of his original condition; and never conſidered in what manner his acquiſitions, either of knowledge or of riches, would be eſtimated by his countrymen, at his return; which were the only things he could have to recommend him to them now, more than before, and on which he could build either his future greatneſs or happineſs. He ſeemed even to have miſtaken their genius in this reſpect; and, in ſome meaſure, to have forgotten their cuſtoms; otherwiſe he muſt have known the extreme difficulty there would be in getting himſelf admitted as a perſon of rank, where there is, perhaps, no inſtance of a man's being raiſed from an inferior ſtation by the greateſt merit. Rank ſeems to be the very foundation of all diſtinction here, and, of its attendant, power; and ſo pertinaciouſly, or rather blindly adhered to, that, unleſs a perſon has ſome degree of it, he will certainly be deſpiſed and hated, if he aſſumes the appearance of exerciſing any authority. This was really the caſe, in ſome meaſure, with Omai; though his countrymen were pretty cautious of expreſſing their ſentiments while we remained amongſt them. Had he made a proper uſe of the preſents he brought with him from England, this, with the knowledge he had acquired by travelling ſo far, might have enabled him to form the moſt uſeful connections. But we have given too many inſtances, in the courſe of our narrative, of his childiſh inattention to this obvious means of advancing his intereſt. His ſchemes ſeemed to be of a higher, though ridiculous nature; indeed, I might ſay, meaner; for revenge, rather than a deſire of becoming great, appeared to actuate him from the beginning.

beginning. This, however, may be excuſed, if we conſider that it is common to his countrymen. His father was, doubtleſs, a man of conſiderable property in Ulietea, when that iſland was conquered by thoſe of Bolabola; and, with many others, ſought refuge in Huaheine, where he died, and left Omai, with ſome other children; who, by that means, became totally dependent. In this ſituation he was taken up by Captain Furneaux, and carried to England. Whether he really expected, from his treatment there, that any aſſiſtance would be given him againſt the enemies of his father and his country; or whether he imagined that his own perſonal courage, and ſuperiority of knowledge, would be ſufficient to diſpoſſeſs the conquerors of Ulietea, is uncertain; but from the beginning of the voyage, this was his conſtant theme. He would not liſten to our remonſtrances on ſo wild a determination; but flew into a paſſion, if more moderate and reaſonable counſels were propoſed for his advantage. Nay, ſo infatuated and attached to his favourite ſcheme was he, that he affected to believe theſe people would certainly quit the conquered iſland, as ſoon as they ſhould hear of his arrival in Otaheite. As we advanced, however, on our voyage, he became more ſenſible of his error; and, by the time we reached the Friendly Iſlands, had even ſuch apprehenſions of his reception at home, that, as I have mentioned in my journal, he would fain have ſtaid behind at Tongataboo, under Feenou's protection. At theſe iſlands, he ſquandered away much of his European treaſure very unneceſſarily; and he was equally imprudent, as I alſo took notice of above, at Tiaraboo, where he could have no view of making friends, as he had not any intention of remaining there. At Matavai, he continued the ſame inconſiderate behaviour, till I abſolutely put a ſtop to his profu-

1777. November.

1777. November. ſion; and he formed ſuch improper connections there, that Otoo, who was, at firſt, much diſpoſed to countenance him, afterward openly expreſſed his diſlike of him, on account of his conduct. It was not, however, too late to recover his favour; and he might have ſettled, to great advantage, in Otaheite, as he had formerly lived ſeveral years there, and was now a good deal noticed by Towha, whoſe valuable preſent, of a very large double canoe, we have ſeen above. The objection to admitting him to ſome rank would have alſo been much leſſened, if he had fixed at Otaheite; as a native will always find it more difficult to accompliſh ſuch a change of ſtate amongſt his countrymen, than a ſtranger, who naturally claims reſpect. But Omai remained undetermined to the laſt, and would not, I believe, have adopted my plan of ſettlement in Huaheine, if I had not ſo explicitly refuſed to employ force in reſtoring him to his father's poſſeſſions. Whether the remains of his European wealth, which, after all his improvident waſte, was ſtill conſiderable, will be more prudently adminiſtered by him, or whether the ſteps I took, as already explained, to inſure him protection in Huaheine, ſhall have proved effectual, muſt be left to the deciſion of future navigators of this Ocean; with whom it cannot but be a principal object of curioſity to trace the future fortunes of our traveller. At preſent, I can only conjecture, that his greateſt danger will ariſe from the very impolitic declarations of his antipathy to the inhabitants of Bolabola. For theſe people, from a principle of jealouſy, will, no doubt, endeavour to render him obnoxious to thoſe of Huaheine; as they are at peace with that iſland at preſent, and may eaſily effect their deſigns, many of them living there. This is a circumſtance, which, of all others, he might, the moſt eaſily, have avoided. For they were not

only free from any averſion to him, but the perſon, mentioned before, whom we found at Tiaraboo as an ambaſſador, prieſt, or God, abſolutely offered to reinſtate him in the property that was formerly his father's. But he refuſed this peremptorily; and, to the very laſt, continued determined to take the firſt opportunity that offered of ſatisfying his revenge in battle. To this, I gueſs, he is not a little ſpurred by the coat of mail he brought from England; clothed in which, and in poſſeſſion of ſome fire-arms, he fancies that he ſhall be invincible. 1777. November.

Whatever faults belonged to Omai's character, they were more than overbalanced by his great good nature and docile diſpoſition. During the whole time he was with me, I very ſeldom had reaſon to be ſeriouſly diſpleaſed with his general conduct. His grateful heart always retained the higheſt ſenſe of the favours he had received in England; nor will he ever forget thoſe who honoured him with their protection and friendſhip, during his ſtay there. He had a tolerable ſhare of underſtanding, but wanted application and perſeverance to exert it; ſo that his knowledge of things was very general, and, in many inſtances, imperfect. He was not a man of much obſervation. There were many uſeful arts, as well as elegant amuſements, amongſt the people of the Friendly Iſlands, which he might have conveyed to his own; where they probably would have been readily adopted, as being ſo much in their own way. But I never found that he uſed the leaſt endeavour to make himſelf maſter of any one. This kind of indifference is, indeed, the characteriſtic foible of his nation. Europeans have viſited them, at times, for theſe ten years paſt; yet we could not diſcover the ſlighteſt trace of any attempt to profit by this intercourſe; nor have they hitherto copied after

1777. November.

after us in any one thing. We are not, therefore, to expect that Omai will be able to introduce many of our arts and cuſtoms amongſt them, or much improve thoſe to which they have been long habituated. I am confident, however, that he will endeavour to bring to perfection the various fruits and vegetables we planted, which will be no ſmall acquiſition. But the greateſt benefit theſe iſlands are likely to receive from Omai's travels, will be in the animals that have been left upon them; which, probably, they never would have got, had he not come to England. When theſe multiply, of which I think there is little doubt, Otaheite, and the Society Iſlands, will equal, if not exceed, any place in the known world, for proviſions.

Omai's return, and the ſubſtantial proofs he brought back with him of our liberality, encouraged many to offer themſelves as volunteers to attend me to *Pretane*. I took every opportunity of expreſſing my determination to reject all ſuch applications. But, notwithſtanding this, Omai, who was very ambitious of remaining the only great traveller, being afraid leſt I might be prevailed upon to put others in a ſituation of rivalling him, frequently put me in mind, that Lord Sandwich had told him, no others of his countrymen were to come to England.

If there had been the moſt diſtant probability of any ſhip being again ſent to New Zealand, I would have brought the two youths of that country home with me; as both of them were very deſirous of continuing with us. Tiarooa, the eldeſt, was an exceedingly well diſpoſed young man, with ſtrong natural ſenſe, and capable of receiving any inſtruction. He ſeemed to be fully ſenſible of the inferiority of his own country to theſe iſlands, and reſigned himſelf,

though perhaps with reluctance, to end his days, in eaſe and plenty, in Huaheine. But the other was ſo ſtrongly attached to us, that he was taken out of the ſhip, and carried aſhore by force. He was a witty, ſmart boy; and, on that account, much noticed on board. 1777. November.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

Arrival at Ulietea.—Aſtronomical Obſervations.—A Marine deſerts, and is delivered up.—Intelligence from Omai.—Inſtructions to Captain Clerke.—Another Deſertion of a Midſhipman and a Seaman.—Three of the chief Perſons of the Iſland confined on that Account.—A Deſign to ſeize Captains Cook and Clerke, diſcovered.—The two Deſerters brought back, and the Priſoners releaſed.—The Ships ſail.—Refreſhments received at Ulietea.—Preſent and former State of that Iſland.—Account of its dethroned King, and of the late Regent of Huaheine.

1777. November. THE boat which carried Omai aſhore, never to join us again, having returned to the ſhip, with the remainder of the hawſer, we hoiſted her in, and immediately ſtood over for Ulietea, where I intended to touch next. At ten o'clock at night, we brought to, till four the next morning, when we made ſail round the South end of the iſland, for the harbour of Ohamaneno*. We met with calms and light airs of wind, from different directions, by turns; ſo that, at noon, we were ſtill a league from the entrance of the harbour. While we were thus detained, my old friend Oreo, Chief of the iſland, with his ſon, and Pootoe, his ſon-in-law, come off to viſit us.

* See a plan of this harbour, in Hawkeſworth's Collection, Vol. ii. p. 248.

Being

Being reſolved to puſh for the harbour, I ordered all the boats to be hoiſted out, and ſent them a-head to tow, being aſſiſted by a ſlight breeze from the Southward. This breeze failed too ſoon, and being ſucceeded by one from the Eaſt, which blew right out of the harbour, we were obliged to come to an anchor, at its entrance, at two o'clock, and to warp in, which employed us till night ſet in. As ſoon as we were within the harbour, the ſhips were ſurrounded with canoes filled with people, who brought hogs and fruit to barter with us for our commodities; ſo that, wherever we went, we found plenty. 1777. November.

Next morning, being the 4th, I moored the ſhip, head and ſtern, cloſe to the North ſhore, at the head of the harbour; hauled up the cables on deck; and opened one of the ballaſt-ports. From this a ſlight ſtage was made to the land, being at the diſtance of about twenty feet, with a view to get clear of ſome of the rats that continued to infeſt us. The Diſcovery moored along-ſide the South ſhore for the ſame purpoſe. While this work was going forward, I returned Oreo's viſit. The preſent I made him, on the occaſion, conſiſted of a linen gown, a ſhirt, a red-feathered cap from Tongataboo, and other things of leſs value. I then brought him, and ſome of his friends, on board to dinner. Tueſday 4.

On the 6th, we ſet up the obſervatories, and got the neceſſary inſtruments on ſhore. The two following days, we obſerved the ſun's azimuths, both on board and aſhore, with all the compaſſes, in order to find the variation; and in the night of the latter, obſerved an occultation of ς *Capricorni*, by the moon's dark limb. Mr. Bayly and I agreed in fixing the time of its happening, at ſix minutes and fifty-four ſeconds and a half, paſt ten o'clock. Mr. King made it half a ſecond ſooner. Mr. Bayly obſerved with the achromatic tele- Thurſday 6.

1777. November. ſcope belonging to the Board of Longitude; Mr. King, with the reflector belonging alſo to the Board; and I made uſe of my own reflector, of eighteen inches. There was alſo an immerſion of π *Capricorni* behind the moon's dark limb, ſome time before; but it was obſerved by Mr. Bayly alone. I attempted to trace it, with a ſmall achromatic; but found its magnifying power not ſufficient.

Nothing worthy of note happened, till the night between
Wedneſ. 12. Thurſday 13. the 12th and 13th, when John Harriſon, a marine, who was ſentinel at the obſervatory, deſerted; carrying with him his muſquet and accoutrements. Having in the morning got intelligence which way he had moved off, a party was ſent after him; but they returned in the evening, after an ineffectual enquiry and ſearch. The next day, I applied to the
Friday 14. Chief to intereſt himſelf in this matter. He promiſed to ſend a party of his men after him, and gave me hopes that he ſhould be brought back the ſame day. But this did not happen; and I had reaſon to ſuſpect, that no ſteps had been taken by him. We had, at this time, a great number of the natives about the ſhips, and ſome thefts were committed; the conſequence of which being dreaded by them, very few
Saturday 15. viſiters came near us the next morning. The Chief himſelf joined in the alarm, and he and his whole family fled. I thought this a good opportunity to oblige them to deliver up the deſerter; and having got intelligence that he was at a place called Hamoa, on the other ſide of the iſland, I went thither with two armed boats, accompanied by one of the natives; and, in our way, we found the Chief, who alſo embarked with me. I landed about a mile and a half from the place, with a few people, and marched briſkly up to it, leſt the ſight of the boats ſhould give the alarm, and allow the man time to eſcape to the mountains. But this precaution

tion was unneceſſary; for the natives there had got information of my coming, and were prepared to deliver him up. 1777. November.

I found Harriſon, with the muſquet lying before him, ſitting between two women, who, the moment that I entered the houſe, roſe up to plead in his behalf. As it was highly proper to diſcourage ſuch proceedings, I frowned upon them, and bid them begone. Upon this they burſt into tears, and walked off. Paha, the Chief of the diſtrict, now came with a plantain tree, and a ſucking pig, which he would have preſented to me, as a peace-offering. I rejected it, and ordered him out of my ſight; and having embarked, with the deſerter, on board the firſt boat that arrived, returned to the ſhips. After this, harmony was again reſtored. The fellow had nothing to ſay in his defence, but that the natives had enticed him away; and this might in part be true, as it was certain, that Paha, and alſo the two women above-mentioned, had been at the ſhip the day before he deſerted. As it appeared, that he had remained upon his poſt, till within a few minutes of the time when he was to have been relieved, the puniſhment that I inflicted upon him was not very ſevere.

Though we had ſeparated from Omai, we were ſtill near enough to have intelligence of his proceedings; and I had deſired to hear from him. Accordingly, about a fortnight after our arrival at Ulietea, he ſent two of his people in a canoe; who brought me the ſatisfactory intelligence, that he remained undiſturbed by the people of the iſland, and that every thing went well with him, except that his goat had died in kidding. He accompanied this intelligence, with a requeſt, that I would ſend him another goat, and

1777. November. two axes. Being happy to have this additional opportunity of ſerving him, the meſſengers were ſent back to Huaheine,

Tueſday 18. on the 18th, with the axes, and two kids, male and female, which were ſpared for him out of the Diſcovery.

Wedneſ. 19. The next day, I delivered to Captain Clerke inſtructions how to proceed, in caſe of being ſeparated from me, after leaving theſe iſlands; and it may not be improper to give them a place here.

By Captain James Cook, Commander of his Majeſty's Sloop the Reſolution.

" WHEREAS the paſſage from the Society Iſlands, to the Northern coaſt of America, is of conſiderable length, both in diſtance and in time, and as a part of it muſt be performed in the very depth of winter, when gales of wind and bad weather muſt be expected, and may, poſſibly, occaſion a ſeparation, you are to take all imaginable care to prevent this. But if, notwithſtanding all our endeavours to keep company, you ſhould be ſeparated from me, you are firſt to look for me where you laſt ſaw me. Not ſeeing me in five days, you are to proceed (as directed by the inſtructions of their Lordſhips, a copy of which you have already received) for the coaſt of New Albion; endeavouring to fall in with it in the latitude of 45°.

In that latitude, and at a convenient diſtance from the land, you are to cruize for me ten days. Not ſeeing me in that time, you are to put into the firſt convenient port, in or to the North of that latitude, to recruit your wood and water, and to procure refreſhments.

During your ſtay in port, you are conſtantly to keep a good look-out for me. It will be neceſſary, therefore, to make

make choice of a ſtation, ſituated as near the ſea-coaſt as is poſſible, the better to enable you to ſee me, when I ſhall appear in the offing. 1777. November.

If I do not join you before the 1ſt of next April, you are to put to ſea, and proceed Northward to the latitude 56°; in which latitude, and at a convenient diſtance from the coaſt, never exceeding fifteen leagues, you are to cruize for me till the 10th of May.

Not ſeeing me in that time, you are to proceed Northward, and endeavour to find a paſſage into the Atlantic Ocean, through Hudſon's or Baffin's Bays, as directed by the above-mentioned inſtructions.

But if you ſhould fail in finding a paſſage through either of the ſaid bays, or by any other way, as the ſeaſon of the year may render it unſafe for you to remain in high latitudes, you are to repair to the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, in Kamtſchatka, in order to refreſh your people, and to paſs the winter.

But, nevertheleſs, if you find, that you cannot procure the neceſſary refreſhments at the ſaid port, you are at liberty to go where you ſhall judge moſt proper; taking care, before you depart, to leave with the Governor an account of your intended deſtination, to be delivered to me upon my arrival: And in the ſpring of the enſuing year, 1779, you are to repair back to the above-mentioned port, endeavouring to be there by the 10th of May, or ſooner.

If, on your arrival, you receive no orders from, or account of me, ſo as to juſtify your purſuing any other meaſures than what are pointed out in the before mentioned inſtructions, your future proceedings are to be governed by them.

You

1777. November. You are alſo to comply with ſuch parts of ſaid inſtructions, as have not been executed, and are not contrary to theſe orders. And in caſe of your inability, by ſickneſs or otherwiſe, to carry theſe, and the inſtructions of their Lordſhips, into execution, you are to be careful to leave them with the next officer in command, who is hereby required to execute them in the beſt manner he can.

Given under my hand, on board the Reſolution, at Ulietea, the 18th Day of November 1777.

J. COOK."

"*To Captain Charles Clerke, Commander of his Majeſty's Sloop, the Diſcovery.*"

While we lay moored to the ſhore, we heeled, and ſcrubbed both ſides of the bottoms of the ſhips. At the ſame time, we fixed ſome tin-plates under the binds; firſt taking off the old ſheathing, and putting in a piece unfilled, over which the plates were nailed. Theſe plates I had from the ingenious Mr. Pelham, Secretary to the Commiſſioners for Victualling his Majeſty's Navy; with a view of trying whether tin would anſwer the ſame end as copper, on the bottoms of ſhips.

Monday 24. On the 24th in the morning, I was informed that a midſhipman, and a ſeaman, both belonging to the Diſcovery, were miſſing. Soon after, we learnt from the natives, that they went away in a canoe the preceding evening, and were, at this time, at the other end of the iſland. As the midſhipman was known to have expreſſed a deſire to remain at theſe iſlands, it ſeemed pretty certain, that he and his companion had gone off with this intention; and Captain Clerke ſet out in queſt of them with two armed boats, and a party of marines. His expedition proved fruitleſs; for he

returned in the evening, without having got any certain intelligence where they were. From the conduct of the natives, Captain Clerke ſeemed to think, that they intended to conceal the deſerters; and, with that view, had amuſed him with falſe information the whole day, and directed him to ſearch for them in places where they were not to be found. The Captain judged right; for, the next morning, we were told, that our runaways were at Otaha. As theſe two were not the only perſons in the ſhips who wiſhed to end their days at theſe favourite iſlands, in order to put a ſtop to any further deſertion, it was neceſſary to get them back at all events; and that the natives might be convinced that I was in earneſt, I reſolved to go after them myſelf; having obſerved, from repeated inſtances, that they ſeldom offered to deceive me with falſe information. 1777. November.

Accordingly, I ſet out, the next morning, with two armed boats; being accompanied by the Chief himſelf. I proceeded, as he directed, without ſtopping any where, till we came to the middle of the Eaſt ſide of Otaha. There we put aſhore; and Oreo diſpatched a man before us, with orders to ſeize the deſerters, and keep them till we ſhould arrive with the boats. But when we got to the place where we expected to find them, we were told, that they had quitted this iſland, and gone over to Bolabola the day before. I did not think proper to follow them thither; but returned to the ſhips; fully determined, however, to have recourſe to a meaſure, which, I gueſſed, would oblige the natives to bring them back. Tueſday 25.

In

1777: November. In the night, Mr. Bayly, Mr. King, and myſelf, obſerved an immerſion of Jupiter's third ſatellite. It happened, by the obſervation of

Wedneſ. 26.

Mr. Bayly, at	2h	37m	54s	in the morning.
Mr. King, at	2	37	24	
Myſelf, at	2	37	44	

Mr. Bayly and Mr. King obſerved, with Dollond's three and a half feet achromatic teleſcope, and with the greateſt magnifying power. I obſerved, with a two-feet Gregorian reflector, made by Bird.

Soon after day-break, the Chief, his ſon, daughter, and ſon-in-law, came on board the Reſolution. The three laſt I reſolved to detain, till the two deſerters ſhould be brought back. With this view, Captain Clerke invited them to go on board his ſhip; and as ſoon as they arrived there, confined them in his cabin. The Chief was with me when the news reached him. He immediately acquainted me with it, ſuppoſing that this ſtep had been taken without my knowledge, and conſequently without my approbation. I inſtantly undeceived him; and then he began to have apprehenſions as to his own ſituation, and his looks expreſſed the utmoſt perturbation of mind. But I ſoon made him eaſy as to this, by telling him, that he was at liberty to leave the ſhip whenever he pleaſed, and to take ſuch meaſures as he ſhould judge beſt calculated to get our two men back; that, if he ſucceeded, his friends on board the Diſcovery ſhould be delivered up; if not, that I was determined to carry them away with me. I added, that his own conduct, as well as that of many of his people, in not only aſſiſting theſe two

men to eſcape, but in being, even at this very time, aſſiduous in enticing others to follow them, would juſtify any ſtep I could take to put a ſtop to ſuch proceedings. 1777. November.

This explanation of the motives upon which I acted, and which we found means to make Oreo and his people, who were preſent, fully comprehend, ſeemed to recover them, in a great meaſure, from that general conſternation into which they were at firſt thrown. But, if relieved from apprehenſions about their own ſafety, they continued under the deepeſt concern for thoſe who were priſoners. Many of them went under the Diſcovery's ſtern in canoes, to bewail their captivity, which they did with long and loud exclamations. *Poedooa!* for ſo the Chief's daughter was called, reſounded from every quarter; and the women ſeemed to vie with each other in mourning her fate, with more ſignificant expreſſions of their grief than tears and cries; for there were many bloody heads upon the occaſion.

Oreo himſelf did not give way to unavailing lamentations, but, inſtantly, began his exertions to recover our deſerters, by diſpatching a canoe to Bolabola, with a meſſage to Opoony, the ſovereign of that iſland, acquainting him with what had happened, and requeſting him to ſeize the two fugitives, and ſend them back. The meſſenger, who was no leſs a man than the father of Pootoe, Oreo's ſon-in-law, before he ſet out, came to receive my commands. I ſtrictly enjoined him not to return without the deſerters; and to tell Opoony, from me, that, if they had left Bolabola, he muſt ſend canoes to bring them back; for I ſuſpected that they would not long remain in one place.

1777. November. The conſequence, however, of the priſoners was ſo great, that the natives did not think proper to truſt to the return of our people for their releaſe; or, at leaſt, their impatience was ſo great, that it hurried them to meditate an attempt which might have involved them in ſtill greater diſtreſs, had it not been fortunately prevented. Between five and ſix o'clock in the evening, I obſerved that all their canoes, in and about the harbour, began to move off, as if ſome ſudden panic had ſeized them. I was aſhore, abreaſt of the ſhip, at the time, and enquired, in vain, to find out the cauſe; till our people called to us from the Diſcovery, and told us, that a party of the natives had ſeized Captain Clerke and Mr. Gore, who had walked out a little way from the ſhips. Struck with the boldneſs of this plan of retaliation, which ſeemed to counteract me ſo effectually in my own way, there was no time to deliberate. I inſtantly ordered the people to arm; and, in leſs than five minutes, a ſtrong party, under the command of Mr. King, was ſent to reſcue our two gentlemen. At the ſame time, two armed boats, and a party under Mr. Williamſon, went after the flying canoes, to cut off their retreat to the ſhore. Theſe ſeveral detachments were hardly out of ſight, before an account arrived that we had been miſinformed; upon which I ſent, and called them all in.

It was evident, however, from ſeveral corroborating circumſtances, that the deſign of ſeizing Captain Clerke had really been in agitation amongſt the natives. Nay, they made no ſecret in ſpeaking of it the next day. But their firſt and great plan of operations was to have laid hold of me. It was my cuſtom, every evening, to bathe in the freſh water. Very often I went alone; and always without arms. Ex-

pecting me to go, as uſual, this evening, they had determined to ſeize me, and Captain Clerke too, if he had accompanied me. But I had, after confining Oreo's family, thought it prudent to avoid putting myſelf in their power; and had cautioned Captain Clerke, and the officers, not to go far from the ſhips. In the courſe of the afternoon, the Chief aſked me, three ſeveral times, if I would not go to the bathing-place; and when he found, at laſt, that I could not be prevailed upon, he went off, with the reſt of his people, in ſpite of all that I could do or ſay to ſtop him. But as I had no ſuſpicion, at this time, of their deſign, I imagined that ſome ſudden fright had ſeized them, which would, as uſual, ſoon be over. Finding themſelves diſappointed as to me, they fixed on thoſe who were more in their power. It was fortunate, for all parties, that they did not ſucceed; and not leſs fortunate, that no miſchief was done on the occaſion. For not a muſquet was fired, except two or three, to ſtop the canoes. To that firing, perhaps, Meſſrs. Clerke and Gore owed their ſafety *; for, at that very inſtant, a party of the natives, armed with clubs, were advancing toward them; and on hearing the report of the muſquets, they diſperſed. 1777. November.

This conſpiracy, as it may be called, was firſt diſcovered by a girl, whom one of the officers had brought from Huaheine. She, overhearing ſome of the Ulieteans ſay, that they would ſeize Captain Clerke and Mr. Gore, ran to acquaint the firſt of our people that ſhe met with. Thoſe who were charged with the execution of the deſign threat-

* Perhaps they owed their ſafety, principally, to Captain Clerke's walking with a piſtol in his hand, which he once fired. This circumſtance is omitted both in Captain Cook's and in Mr. Anderſon's journal; but it is here mentioned on the authority of Captain King.

1777. November. ened to kill her, as ſoon as we ſhould leave the iſland, for diſappointing them. Being aware of this, we contrived that her friends ſhould come, ſome days after, and take her out of the ſhip, to convey her to a place of ſafety, where ſhe might lie concealed, till they ſhould have an opportunity of ſending her back to Huaheine.

Thurſday 27. On the 27th, our obſervatories were taken down, and every thing we had aſhore carried on board; the moorings of the ſhips were caſt off; and we tranſported them a little way down the harbour, where they came to an anchor again. Toward the afternoon, the natives began to ſhake off their fears, gathering round, and on board, the ſhips, as uſual; and the awkward tranſaction of the day before ſeemed to be forgotten on both ſides.

Friday 28. The following night, the wind blew in hard ſqualls from South to Eaſt, attended with heavy ſhowers of rain. In one of the ſqualls, the cable, by which the Reſolution was riding, parted, juſt without the hawſe. We had another anchor ready to let go; ſo that the ſhip was, preſently, brought up again. In the afternoon, the wind became moderate; and we hooked the end of the beſt ſmall bower cable, and got it again into the hawſe.

Oreo, the Chief, being uneaſy, as well as myſelf, that no account had been received from Bolabola, ſet out, this evening, for that iſland, and deſired me to follow down, the next day, with the ſhips. This was my intention; but the wind would not admit of our getting to ſea. But the ſame wind which kept us in the harbour, brought Oreo back from Bolabola, with the two deſerters. They had reached Otaha, the ſame night they deſerted; but, finding it impoſſible to get to any of the iſlands to the Eaſt-

ward (which was their intention), for want of wind, they had proceeded to Bolabola, and from thence to the ſmall iſland Toobaee, where they were taken by the father of Pootoe, in conſequence of the firſt meſſage ſent to Opoony. As ſoon as they were on board, the three priſoners were releaſed. Thus ended an affair, which had given me much trouble and vexation. Nor would I have exerted myſelf ſo reſolutely on the occaſion, but for the reaſon before mentioned, and to ſave the ſon of a brother officer from being loſt to his country. 1777. November.

The wind continued conſtantly between the North and Weſt, and confined us in the harbour, till eight o'clock in morning of the 7th of December; when we took the advantage of a light breeze which then ſprung up at North Eaſt, and, with the aſſiſtance of all the boats, got out to ſea with the Diſcovery in company. December. Sunday 7.

During the laſt week, we had been viſited by people from all parts of the iſland, who furniſhed us with a large ſtock of hogs and green plantains. So that the time we lay wind-bound in the harbour was not entirely loſt; green plantains being an excellent ſubſtitute for bread, as they will keep good a fortnight, or three weeks. Beſides this ſupply of proviſions, we alſo completed our wood and water.

The inhabitants of Ulietea ſeemed, in general, ſmaller and blacker than thoſe of the other neighbouring iſlands; and appeared alſo leſs orderly, which, perhaps, may be conſidered as the conſequence of their having become ſubject to the natives of Bolabola. Oreo, their Chief, is only a ſort of deputy of the ſovereign of that iſland; and the conqueſt ſeems to have leſſened the number of ſubordinate Chiefs reſident among them; ſo that they are leſs immediately under

1777. December. under the inſpection of thoſe whoſe intereſt it is to enforce due obedience to authority. Ulietea, though now reduced to this humiliating ſtate, was formerly, as we were told, the moſt eminent of this cluſter of iſlands; and, probably, the firſt ſeat of government; for they ſay, that the preſent royal family of Otaheite is deſcended from that which reigned here, before the late revolution. Coroo, the dethroned monarch of Ulietea, was ſtill alive, when we were at Huaheine, where he reſides, a royal wanderer, furniſhing, in his perſon, an inſtance of the inſtability of power; but, what is more remarkable, of the reſpect paid by theſe people to particular families, and to the cuſtoms which have once conferred ſovereignty; for they ſuffer Ooroo to preſerve all the enſigns which they appropriate to majeſty, though he has loſt his dominions.

We ſaw a ſimilar inſtance of this while we were at Ulietea. One of the occaſional viſiters I now had, was my old friend Oree, the late Chief of Huaheine. He ſtill preſerved his conſequence; came always at the head of a numerous body of attendants; and was always provided with ſuch preſents as were very acceptable. This Chief looked much better now than I had ever ſeen him, during either of my former voyages*. I could account for his improving in health as he grew older, only from his drinking leſs copiouſly of the *ava* in his preſent ſtation as a private gentleman, than he had been accuſtomed to do when he was regent.

* Captain Cook had ſeen Oree in 1769, when he commanded the Endeavour; alſo twice, during his ſecond voyage, in 1772.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

Arrival at Bolabola.—Interview with Opoony.—Reaſons for purchaſing Monſieur de Bougainville's Anchor.—Departure from the Society Iſlands.—Particulars about Bolabola.—Hiſtory of the Conqueſt of Otaha and Ulietea.—High Reputation of the Bolabola Men.—Animals left there, and at Ulietea.—Plentiful Supply of Proviſions, and Manner of ſalting Pork on board.—Various Reflections relative to Otaheite, and the Society Iſlands.—Aſtronomical and nautical Obſervations made there.

AS ſoon as we had got clear of the harbour, we took our leave of Ulietea, and ſteered for Bolabola. The chief if not ſole object I had in view, by viſiting that iſland, was, to procure from its monarch, Opoony, one of the anchors which Monſieur de Bougainville had loſt at Otaheite. This having afterward been taken up by the natives there, had, as they informed me, been ſent by them as a preſent to that Chief. My deſire to get poſſeſſion of it did not ariſe from our being in want of anchors. But having expended all the hatchets, and other iron tools, which we had brought from England, in purchaſing refreſhments, we were now reduced to the neceſſity of creating a freſh aſſortment of trading articles, by fabricating them out of the ſpare iron we

1777. December.

1777. December. we had on board; and, in ſuch converſions, and in the occaſional uſes of the ſhips, great part of that had been already expended. I thought that Mr. de Bougainville's anchor would ſupply our want of this uſeful material; and I made no doubt that I ſhould be able to tempt Opoony to part with it.

Oreo, and ſix or eight men more from Ulietea, took a paſſage with us to Bolabola. Indeed, moſt of the natives in general, except the Chief himſelf, would have gladly taken a paſſage with us to England. At ſunſet, being the length of the South point of Bolabola, we ſhortened ſail, and ſpent the night making ſhort boards. At day-break, on Monday 8. the 8th, we made ſail for the harbour, which is on the Weſt ſide of the iſland. The wind was ſcant, ſo that we had to ply up, and it was nine o'clock before we got near enough to ſend away a boat to ſound the entrance. For I had thoughts of running the ſhips in, and anchoring for a day or two.

When the boat returned, the Maſter, who was in her, reported, that though, at the entrance of the harbour the bottom was rocky, there was good ground within, and the depth of water twenty-ſeven and twenty-five fathoms; and that there was room to turn the ſhips in, the channel being one third of a mile broad. In conſequence of this report, we attempted to work the ſhips in. But the tide, as well as the wind, being againſt us, after making two or three trips, I found that it could not be done, till the tide ſhould turn in our favour. Upon this, I gave up the deſign of carrying the ſhips into the harbour; and having ordered the boats to be got ready, I embarked in one of them, accompanied by Oreo and his companions; and was rowed in for the iſland.

We

We landed where the natives directed us; and, ſoon after, I was introduced to Opoony, in the midſt of a great concourſe of people. Having no time to loſe, as ſoon as the neceſſary formality of compliments was over, I aſked the Chief to give me the anchor, and produced the preſent I had prepared for him, conſiſting of a linen night-gown, a ſhirt, ſome gauze handkerchiefs, a looking-glaſs, ſome beads, and other toys; and ſix axes. At the ſight of theſe laſt, there was a general outcry. I could only gueſs the cauſe, by Opoony's abſolutely refuſing to receive my preſent till I ſhould get the anchor. He ordered three men to go and deliver it to me; and, as I underſtood, I was to ſend, by them, what I thought proper in return. With theſe meſſengers, we ſet out in our boats for an iſland, lying at the North ſide of the entrance into the harbour, where the anchor had been depoſited. I found it to be neither ſo large, nor ſo perfect, as I expected. It had originally weighed ſeven hundred pounds, according to the mark that was upon it; but the ring, with part of the ſhank, and the two palms, were now wanting. I was no longer at a loſs to gueſs the reaſon of Opoony's refuſing my preſent. He, doubtleſs, thought that it ſo much exceeded the value of the anchor in its preſent ſtate, that I ſhould be diſpleaſed when I ſaw it. Be this as it may, I took the anchor as I found it, and ſent him every article of the preſent that I at firſt intended. Having thus completed my negociation, I returned on board; and having hoiſted in the boats, made ſail from the iſland to the North. 1777. December.

While the boats were hoiſting in, ſome of the natives came off, in three or four canoes, to ſee the ſhips, as they ſaid. They brought with them a few cocoa-nuts, and one pig, which was the only one we got at the iſland. I make

1777. December. no doubt, however, that, if we had ſtayed till the next day, we ſhould have been plentifully ſupplied with proviſions; and, I think, the natives would feel themſelves diſappointed, when they found that we were gone. But, as we had already a very good ſtock both of hogs and of fruit on board, and very little of any thing left to purchaſe more, I could have no inducement to defer, any longer, the proſecution of our voyage.

The harbour of Bolabola, called Oteavanooa, ſituated on the Weſt ſide of the iſland, is one of the moſt capacious that I ever met with; and though we did not enter it, it was a ſatisfaction to me, that I had an opportunity of employing my people to aſcertain its being a very proper place for the reception of ſhips*.

The high double-peaked mountain, which is in the middle of the iſland, appeared to be barren on the Eaſt ſide; but, on the Weſt ſide, has trees or buſhes on its moſt craggy parts. The lower grounds, all round, toward the ſea, are covered with cocoa-palms and bread-fruit trees, like the other iſlands of this ocean; and the many little iſlots that ſurround it on the inſide of the reef, add both to the amount of its vegetable productions, and to the number of its inhabitants.

But, ſtill, when we conſider its very ſmall extent, being not more than eight leagues in compaſs, it is rather remarkable, that its people ſhould have attempted, or have been able to atchieve the conqueſt of Ulietea and Otaha, the former of which iſlands is, of itſelf, at leaſt double its ſize. In each of my three voyages, we had heard much of the

* See a chart of the iſland of Bolabola, in *Hawkeſworth's Collection*, Vol. ii. p. 249. Though we have no particular drawing of the harbour, its ſituation is there diſtinctly repreſented.

war

war that produced this great revolution. The reſult of our inquiries, as to the circumſtances attending it, may amuſe the reader; and I give it as a ſpecimen of the hiſtory of our friends, in this part of the world, as related to us* by themſelves. 1777. December.

Ulietea and Otaha, which adjoins it, lived long in friendſhip, or, as the natives expreſs it, were conſidered as two brothers, inſeparable by any intereſted views. They alſo admitted the iſland of Huaheine as their friend, though not ſo intimate. Otaha, however, like a traitor, leagued with Bolabola, and they reſolved jointly to attack Ulietea; whoſe people called in their friends of Huaheine, to aſſiſt them againſt theſe two powers. The men of Bolabola were encouraged by a prieſteſs, or rather propheteſs, who foretold, that they ſhould be ſucceſsful; and, as a proof of the certainty of her prediction, ſhe deſired, that a man might be ſent to the ſea, at a particular place, where, from a great depth, a ſtone would aſcend. He went, accordingly, in a canoe to the place mentioned; and was going to dive to ſee where this ſtone lay, when, behold, it ſtarted up to the ſurface ſpontaneouſly into his hand! The people were aſtoniſhed at the ſight; the ſtone was depoſited as ſacred in the houſe of the *Eatooa*; and is ſtill preſerved at Bolabola, as a proof of this woman's influence with the divinity. Their ſpirits being thus elevated with the hopes of victory, the canoes of Bolabola ſet out to engage thoſe of Ulietea and Huaheine, which being ſtrongly faſtened together with ropes, the encounter laſted long, and would probably, notwithſtanding the prediction and the miracle, have ended in the overthrow of the Bolabola fleet, if that of Otaha had not, in the critical mo-

* For this, as for many other particulars about theſe people, we are indebted to Mr. Anderſon.

1777. December. ment, arrived. This turned the fortune of the day, and their enemies were defeated with great ſlaughter. The men of Bolabola, proſecuting their victory, invaded Huaheine two days after, which they knew muſt be weakly defended, as moſt of its warriors were abſent. Accordingly, they made themſelves maſters of that iſland. But many of its fugitives having got to Otaheite, there told their lamentable ſtory; which ſo grieved thoſe of their countrymen, and of Ulietea, whom they met with in that iſland, that they obtained ſome aſſiſtance from them. They were equipped with only ten fighting canoes; but, though their force was ſo inconſiderable, they conducted the expedition with ſo much prudence, that they landed at Huaheine at night, when dark, and falling upon the Bolabola men by ſurprize, killed many of them, forcing the reſt to fly. So that, by this means, they got poſſeſſion of their iſland again, which now remains independent, under the government of its own Chiefs. Immediately after the defeat of the united fleets of Ulietea and Huaheine, a propoſal was made to the Bolabola men by their allies of Otaha, to be admitted to an equal ſhare of the conqueſts. The refuſal of this broke the alliance; and in the courſe of the war, Otaha itſelf, as well as Ulietea, was conquered; and both now remain ſubject to Bolabola; the Chiefs who govern them, being only deputies of Opoony, the ſovereign of that iſland. In the reduction of the two iſlands, five battles were fought, at different places, in which great numbers were ſlain on both ſides.

Such was the account we received. I have more than once remarked, how very imperfectly theſe people recollect the exact dates of paſt events. And with regard to this war, though it happened not many years ago, we could only

gueſs

gueſs at the time of its commencement and its concluſion, from collateral circumſtances, furniſhed by our own obſervation, as the natives could not ſatisfy our inquiries with any preciſion. The final conqueſt of Ulietea, which cloſed the war, we know, had been made before I was there in the Endeavour, in 1769; but we may infer, that peace had not been very long reſtored, as we could then ſee marks of recent hoſtilities* having been committed upon that iſland. Some additional light may be thrown upon this inquiry, by attending to the age of Teereetareea, the preſent Chief of Huaheine. His looks ſhewed, that he was not above ten or twelve years old; and we were informed, that his father had been killed in one of the battles. As to the time when the war began, we had no better rule for judging, than this, that the young people of about twenty years of age, of whom we made inquiries, could ſcarcely remember the firſt battles; and I have already mentioned, that Omai's countrymen, whom we found at Wateeoo, knew nothing of this war; ſo that its commencement was ſubſequent to their voyage. 1777. December.

Ever ſince the conqueſt of Ulietea and Otaha, the Bolabola men have been conſidered, by their neighbours, as invincible; and ſuch is the extent of their fame, that even at Otaheite, which is almoſt out of their reach, if they are not dreaded, they are, at leaſt, reſpected for their valour. It is ſaid, that they never fly in battle, and that they always beat an equal number of the other iſlanders. But, beſides theſe advantages, their neighbours ſeem to aſcribe a great deal to the ſuperiority of their god, who, they believed, detained us at Ulietea by contrary winds, as being unwilling that we ſhould viſit an iſland under his ſpecial protection.

* Theſe are taken notice of in *Hawkeſworth's Collection*, Vol. ii. p. 256, &c.

1777. December. How high the Bolabola men are now in eſtimation at Otaheite, may be inferred from Monſieur de Bougainville's anchor having been conveyed to them. To the ſame cauſe we muſt aſcribe the intention of tranſporting to their iſland the Spaniſh bull. And they had already got poſſeſſion of a third European curioſity, the male of another animal, brought to Otaheite by the Spaniards. We had been much puzzled, by the imperfect deſcription of the natives, to gueſs what this could be. But Captain Clerke's deſerters, when brought back from Bolabola, told me, that the animal had been there ſhewn to them, and that it was a ram. It ſeldom happens, but that ſome good ariſes out of evil; and if our two men had not deſerted, I ſhould not have known this. In conſequence of their information, at the ſame time that I landed to meet Opoony, I carried aſhore a ewe, which we had brought from the Cape of Good Hope; and I hope that, by this preſent, I have laid the foundation for a breed of ſheep at Bolabola. I alſo left at Ulietea, under the care of Oreo, an Engliſh boar and ſow, and two goats. So that, not only Otaheite, but all the neighbouring iſlands, will, in a few years, have their race of hogs conſiderably improved; and, probably, be ſtocked with all the valuable animals which have been tranſported hither by their European viſiters.

When once this comes to paſs, no part of the world will equal theſe iſlands, in variety and abundance of refreſhments for navigators. Indeed, even in their preſent ſtate, I know no place that excels them. After repeated trials, in the courſe of ſeveral voyages, we find, when they are not diſturbed by inteſtine broils, but live in amity with one another, which has been the caſe for ſome years paſt, that their productions are in the greateſt plenty; and,

particularly, the moſt valuable of all the articles, their hogs. 1777. December.

If we had had a larger aſſortment of goods, and a ſufficient quantity of ſalt on board, I make no doubt that we might have ſalted as much pork as would have ſerved both ſhips near twelve months. But our viſiting the Friendly Iſlands, and our long ſtay at Otaheite and the neighbourhood, quite exhauſted our trading commodities; particularly our axes, with which alone hogs, in general, were to be purchaſed. And we had hardly ſalt enough to cure fifteen puncheons of meat. Of theſe, five were added to our ſtock of proviſions, at the Friendly Iſlands, and the other ten at Otaheite. Captain Clerke alſo ſalted a proportionable quantity for his ſhip.

The proceſs was the ſame that had been adopted by me in my laſt voyage; and it may be worth while to deſcribe it again. The hogs were killed in the evening; as ſoon as they were cleaned, they were cut up, the bone taken out, and the meat ſalted when it was hot. It was then laid in ſuch a poſition as to permit the juices to drain from it, till the next morning, when it was again ſalted, packed into a caſk, and covered with pickle. Here it remained for four or five days, or a week; after which it was taken out and examined, piece by piece, and if there was any found to be in the leaſt tainted, as ſometimes happened, it was ſeparated from the reſt, which was repacked into another caſk, headed up, and filled with good pickle. In about eight or ten days time, it underwent a ſecond examination; but this ſeemed unneceſſary, as the whole was generally found to be perfectly cured. A mixture of bay and of white ſalt, anſwers the beſt; but either of them will do alone. Great care ſhould be taken, that none of the large blood-veſſels remain in the meat; nor muſt too great a quantity be packed together.

1777. December. ther at the firſt ſalting, leſt the pieces in the middle ſhould heat, and, by that means, prevent the ſalt from penetrating them. This once happened to us, when we killed a larger quantity than uſual. Rainy, ſultry weather, is unfavourable for ſalting meat in tropical climates.

Perhaps, the frequent viſits Europeans have lately made to theſe iſlanders, may be one great inducement to their keeping up a large ſtock of hogs, as they have had experience enough to know, that, whenever we come, they may be ſure of getting from us what they eſteem a valuable conſideration for them. At Otaheite, they expect the return of the Spaniards every day; and they will look for the Engliſh, two of three years hence, not only there, but at the other iſlands. It is to no purpoſe to tell them, that you will not return. They think you muſt; though not one of them knows, or will give himſelf the trouble to inquire, the reaſon of your coming.

I own, I cannot avoid expreſſing it as my real opinion, that it would have been far better for theſe poor people, never to have known our ſuperiority in the accommodations and arts that make life comfortable, than, after once knowing it, to be again left and abandoned to their original incapacity of improvement. Indeed, they cannot be reſtored to that happy mediocrity in which they lived before we diſcovered them, if the intercourſe between us ſhould be diſcontinued. It ſeems to me, that it has become, in a manner, incumbent on the Europeans to viſit them once in three or four years, in order to ſupply them with thoſe conveniencies which we have introduced among them, and have given them a predilection for. The want of ſuch occaſional ſupplies will, probably, be felt very heavily by them, when it may be too late to go back to their old leſs perfect contrivances,

trivances, which they now deſpiſe, and have diſcontinued, ſince the introduction of ours. For, by the time that the iron tools, of which they are now poſſeſſed, are worn out, they will have almoſt loſt the knowledge of their own. A ſtone hatchet is, at preſent, as rare a thing amongſt them, as an iron one was eight years ago; and a chiſſel of bone, or ſtone, is not to be ſeen. Spike-nails have ſupplied the place of theſe laſt; and they are weak enough to fancy, that they have got an inexhauſtible ſtore of them; for theſe were not now at all ſought after. Sometimes, however, nails, much ſmaller than a ſpike, would ſtill be taken in exchange for fruit. Knives happened, at preſent, to be in great eſteem at Ulietea; and axes and hatchets remained unrivalled by any other of our commodities, at all the iſlands. With reſpect to articles of mere ornament, theſe people are as changeable as any of the poliſhed nations of Europe; ſo that what pleaſes their fancy, while a faſhion is in vogue, may be rejected, when another whim has ſupplanted it. But our iron tools, are ſo ſtrikingly uſeful, that they will, we may confidently pronounce, continue to prize them highly; and be completely miſerable, if, neither poſſeſſing the materials, nor trained up to the art of fabricating them, they ſhould ceaſe to receive ſupplies of what may now be conſidered as having become neceſſary to their comfortable exiſtence. 1777. December.

Otaheite, though not comprehended in the number of what we have called the Society Iſlands, being inhabited by the ſame race of men, agreeing in the ſame leading features of character and manners, it was fortunate, that we happened to diſcover this principal iſland before the others; as the friendly and hoſpitable reception we there met with, of courſe, led us to make it the principal place of reſort, in

1777. December. our ſucceſſive viſits to this part of the Pacific Ocean. By the frequency of this intercourſe, we have had better opportunities of knowing ſomething about it and its inhabitants, than about the other ſimilar, but leſs conſiderable, iſlands in its vicinity. Of theſe, however, we have ſeen enough to ſatisfy us, that all that we obſerved and have related of Otaheite, may, with trifling variations, be applied to them.

Too much ſeems to have been already known, and publiſhed in our former relations, about ſome of the modes of life, that made Otaheite ſo agreeable an abode to many on board our ſhips; and if I could now add any finiſhing ſtrokes to a picture, the outlines of which have been already drawn with ſufficient accuracy, I ſhould ſtill have heſitated to make this journal the place for exhibiting a view of licentious manners, which could only ſerve to diſguſt thoſe for whoſe information I write. There are, however, many parts of the domeſtic, political, and religious inſtitutions of theſe people, which, after all our viſits to them, are but imperfectly underſtood. The foregoing narrative of the incidents that happened during our ſtay, will, probably, be thought to throw ſome additional light; and, for farther ſatisfaction, I refer to Mr. Anderſon's remarks.

Amidſt our various ſubordinate employments, while at theſe iſlands, the great objects of our duty were always attended to. No opportunity was loſt of making aſtronomical and nautical obſervations; from which the following table was drawn up:

Place.	Latitude. South.	Longitude. Eaſt.	Variation of the Compaſs.	Dip of the Needle.
Matavai Point, Otaheite	17° 29½′	210° 22′ 28″	5° 34′ Eaſt	29° 12′
Owharre Harbour, Huaheine	16° 42½′	208° 52′ 24″	5° 13½′ Eaſt	28° 28′
Ohamaneno Harbour, Ulietea	16° 45½′	208° 25′ 22″	6° 19′ Eaſt	29° 5′

The

The longitude of the three ſeveral places is deduced from the mean of 145 ſets of obſervations made on ſhore; ſome at one place, and ſome at another; and carried on to each of the ſtations, by the time-keeper. As the ſituation of theſe places was very accurately ſettled, during my former voyages, the above obſervations were now made chiefly with a view of determining how far a number of lunar obſervations might be depended upon, and how near they would agree with thoſe made upon the ſame ſpot in 1769, which fixed Matavai Point to be in 210° 27′ 30″. The difference, it appears, is only of 5′ 2″; and, perhaps, no other method could have produced a more perfect agreement. Without pretending to ſay which of the two computations is the neareſt the truth, the longitude of 210° 22′ 28″, or, which is the ſame thing, 208° 25′ 22″, will be the longitude we ſhall reckon from with the time-keeper, allowing it to be loſing, on mean time, 1,″69 each day, as found by the mean of all the obſervations made at theſe iſlands, for that purpoſe. 1777. December.

On our arrival at Otaheite, the error of the time-keeper in longitude was,

by { Greenwich rate, 1° 18′ 58″
{ Tongataboo rate 0° 16′ 40″

Some obſervations were alſo made on the tide; particularly at Otaheite and Ulietea; with a view of aſcertaining its greateſt riſe at the firſt place. When we were there, in my ſecond voyage, Mr. Wales thought he had diſcovered, that it roſe higher than I had obſerved it to do, when I firſt viſited Otaheite in 1769. But the obſervations we now made, proved that it did not; that is, that it never roſe higher than twelve or fourteen inches at moſt. And it was obſerved to be high-water nearly at noon, as well at the quadratures, as at the full, and change of the moon.

1777. December. To verify this, the following obſervations were made at Ulictea:

Day of the Month.	Water at a ſtand, from	to	Mean Time of High Water.	Perpendicular riſe. Inches.
November 6.	11h 15m	to 12h 20m	11h 48m	5, 5
7.	11 40	1 00	12 20	5, 2
8.	11 35	12 50	12 12	5, 0
9.	11 40	1 16	12 28	5, 5
10.	11 25	1 10	12 18	6, 5
11.	12 00	1 40	12 20	5, 0
12.	11 00	1 05	12 02	5, 7
13.	9 30	11 40	10 35	8, 0
14.	11 10	12 50	12 00	8, 0
15.	9 20	11 30	10 25	9, 2
16.	10 00	12 00	11 00	9, 0
17.	10 45	12 15	11 30	8, 5
18.	10 25	12 10	11 18	9, 0
19.	11 00	1 00	12 00	8, 0
20.	11 30	2 00	12 45	7, 0
21.	11 00	1 00	12 00	8, 0
22.	11 30	1 07	12 18	8, 0
23.	12 00	1 30	12 45	6, 5
24.	11 30	1 40	12 35	5, 5
25.	11 40	1 50	12 45	4, 7
26.	11 00	1 30	12 15	5, 2

Having now finiſhed all that occurs to me, with regard to theſe iſlands, which make ſo conſpicuous a figure in the liſt of our diſcoveries, the Reader will permit me to ſuſpend the proſecution of my Journal, while he peruſes the following Chapter, for which I am indebted to Mr. Anderſon.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

Accounts of Otaheite ſtill imperfect.—The prevailing Winds.—Beauty of the Country.—Cultivation.—Natural Curioſities.—The Perſons of the Natives.—Diſeaſes.—General Character.—Love of Pleaſure.—Language.—Surgery and Phyſic.—Articles of Food.—Effects of drinking Ava.—Times and Manner of Eating.—Connections with the Females.—Circumciſion.—Syſtem of Religion.—Notions about the Soul and a future Life.—Various Superſtitions.—Traditions about the Creation.—An hiſtorical Legend.—Honours paid to the King.—Diſtinction of Ranks.—Puniſhment of Crimes.—Peculiarities of the neighbouring Iſlands.—Names of their Gods.—Names of Iſlands they viſit.—Extent of their Navigation.

"TO what has been ſaid of Otaheite, in the accounts of the ſucceſſive voyages of Captain Wallis, Monſ. de Bougainville, and Captain Cook, it would, at firſt ſight, ſeem ſuperfluous to add any thing; as it might be ſuppoſed, that little could be now produced, but a repetition of what has been told before. I am, however, far from being of that opinion; and will venture to affirm, though a very accurate deſcription of the country, and of the moſt obvious cuſtoms of its inhabitants, has been already given, eſpecially by Captain Cook, that much ſtill remains untouched; that, in ſome inſtances, miſtakes have been made, which 1777. December.

1777. December. later and repeated obſervation has been able to rectify; and that, even now, we are ſtrangers to many of the moſt important inſtitutions that prevail amongſt theſe people. The truth is, our viſits, though frequent, have been but tranſient; many of us had no inclination to make inquiries; more of us were unable to direct our inquiries properly; and we all laboured, though not to the ſame degree, under the diſadvantages attending an imperfect knowledge of the language of thoſe, from whom alone we could receive any information. The Spaniards had it more in their power to ſurmount this bar to inſtruction; ſome of them having reſided at Otaheite much longer than any other European viſiters. As, with their ſuperior advantages, they could not but have had an opportunity of obtaining the fulleſt information on moſt ſubjects relating to this iſland; their account of it would, probably, convey more authentic and accurate intelligence, than, with our beſt endeavours, any of us could poſſibly obtain. But, as I look upon it to be very uncertain, if not very unlikely, that we ſhall ever have any communication from that quarter, I have here put together what additional intelligence, about Otaheite, and its neighbouring iſlands, I was able to procure, either from Omai, while on board the ſhip, or by converſing with the other natives, while we remained amongſt them.

The wind, for the greateſt part of the year, blows from between Eaſt South Eaſt, and Eaſt North Eaſt. This is the true trade wind, or what the natives call *Maaraee*; and it ſometimes blows with conſiderable force. When this is the caſe, the weather is often cloudy, with ſhowers of rain; but when the wind is more moderate, it is clear, ſettled, and ſerene. If the wind ſhould veer farther to the Southward,

Southward, and become South Eaſt, or South South Eaſt, it then blows more gently, with a ſmooth ſea, and is called *Maoai.* In thoſe months, when the ſun is nearly vertical, that is, in December and January, the winds and weather are both very variable; but it frequently blows from Weſt North Weſt, or North Weſt. This wind is what they call *Toerou;* and is generally attended by dark, cloudy weather, and frequently by rain. It ſometimes blows ſtrong, though generally moderate; but ſeldom laſts longer than five or ſix days without interruption; and is the only wind in which the people of the iſlands to leeward come to this, in their canoes. If it happens to be ſtill more Northerly, it blows with leſs ſtrength, and has the different appellation of *Era-potaia*; which they feign to be the wife of the *Toerou;* who, according to their mythology, is a male. 1777. December.

The wind from South Weſt, and Weſt South Weſt, is ſtill more frequent than the former; and though it is, in general, gentle, and interrupted by calms, or breezes from the Eaſtward, yet it ſometimes blows in briſk ſqualls. The weather attending it is commonly dark, cloudy, and rainy, with a cloſe, hot air; and often accompanied by a great deal of lightning and thunder. It is called *Etoa,* and often ſucceeds the *Toerou*; as does alſo the *Farooa,* which is ſtill more Southerly; and, from its violence, blows down houſes and trees, eſpecially the cocoa-palms, from their loftineſs; but it is only of a ſhort duration.

The natives ſeem not to have a very accurate knowledge of theſe changes, and yet pretend to have drawn ſome general concluſions from their effects: for they ſay, when the ſea has a hollow ſound, and daſhes ſlowly on the ſhore, or rather on the reef without, that it portends good weather; but,

if

1777. December. if it has a ſharp ſound, and the waves ſucceed each other faſt, that the reverſe will happen.

Perhaps, there is ſcarcely a ſpot in the univerſe that affords a more luxuriant proſpect than the South Eaſt part of Otaheite. The hills are high and ſteep; and, in many places, craggy. But they are covered to the very ſummits with trees and ſhrubs, in ſuch a manner, that the ſpectator can ſcarcely help thinking, that the very rocks poſſeſs the property of producing and ſupporting their verdant cloathing. The flat land which bounds thoſe hills toward the ſea, and the interjacent valleys alſo, teem with various productions that grow with the moſt exuberant vigour; and, at once, fill the mind of the beholder with the idea, that no place upon earth can outdo this, in the ſtrength and beauty of vegetation. Nature has been no leſs liberal in diſtributing rivulets, which are found in every valley; and as they approach the ſea, often divide into two or three branches, fertilizing the flat lands through which they run. The habitations of the natives are ſcattered, without order, upon theſe flats; and many of them appearing toward the ſhore, preſented a delightful ſcene, viewed from our ſhips; eſpecially as the ſea, within the reef, which bounds the coaſt, is perfectly ſtill, and affords a ſafe navigation, at all times, for the inhabitants; who are often ſeen paddling in their canoes indolently along, in paſſing from place to place, or in going to fiſh. On viewing theſe charming ſcenes, I have often regretted my inability to tranſmit to thoſe who have had no opportunity of ſeeing them, ſuch a deſcription as might, in ſome meaſure, convey an impreſſion ſimilar to what muſt be felt by every one who has been fortunate enough to be upon the ſpot.

1777. December.

It is, doubtleſs, the natural fertility of the country, combined with the mildneſs and ſerenity of the climate, that renders the natives ſo careleſs in their cultivation, that, in many places, though overflowing with the richeſt productions, the ſmalleſt traces of it cannot be obſerved. The cloth plant, which is raiſed by ſeeds brought from the mountains, and the *ava*, or intoxicating pepper, which they defend from the ſun when very young, by covering them with leaves of the bread-fruit-tree, are almoſt the only things to which they ſeem to pay any attention; and theſe they keep very clean.

I have inquired very carefully into their manner of cultivating the bread-fruit-tree; but was always anſwered, that they never planted it. This, indeed, muſt be evident to every one who will examine the places where the young trees come up. It will be always obſerved, that they ſpring from the roots of the old ones; which run along near the ſurface of the ground. So that the bread-fruit-trees may be reckoned thoſe that would naturally cover the plains, even ſuppoſing that the iſland was not inhabited; in the ſame manner that the white-barked trees, found at Van Diemen's Land, conſtitute the foreſts there. And from this we may obſerve, that the inhabitant of Otaheite, inſtead of being obliged to plant his bread, will rather be under a neceſſity of preventing its progreſs; which, I ſuppoſe, is ſometimes done, to give room for trees of another ſort, to afford him ſome variety in his food.

The chief of theſe are the cocoa-nut and plantain; the firſt of which can give no trouble, after it has raiſed itſelf a foot or two above the ground; but the plantain requires a little more care. For, after it is planted, it ſhoots up, and,

1777. December. in about three months, begins to bear fruit; during which time it gives young ſhoots, which ſupply a ſucceſſion of fruit. For the old ſtocks are cut down, as the fruit is taken off.

The products of the iſland, however, are not ſo remarkable for their variety, as great abundance; and curioſities of any kind are not numerous. Amongſt theſe we may reckon a pond or lake of freſh water, at the top of one of the higheſt mountains, to go to, and to return from which, takes three or four days. It is remarkable for its depth; and has eels of an enormous ſize in it; which are ſometimes caught by the natives, who go upon this water in little floats of two or three wild plantain-trees faſtened together. This is eſteemed one of the greateſt natural curioſities of the country; inſomuch, that travellers, who come from the other iſlands, are commonly aſked, amongſt the firſt things, by their friends, at their return, if they have ſeen it? There is alſo a ſort of water, of which there is only one ſmall pond upon the iſland, as far diſtant as the lake, and to appearance very good, with a yellow ſediment at the bottom: but it has a bad taſte, and proves fatal to thoſe who drink any quantity; or makes them break out in blotches, if they bathe in it.

Nothing could make a ſtronger impreſſion, at firſt ſight, on our arrival here, than the remarkable contraſt between the robuſt make and dark colour of the people of Tongataboo, and a ſort of delicacy and whiteneſs, which diſtinguiſh the inhabitants of Otaheite. It was even ſome time before that difference could preponderate in favour of the Otaheiteans; and then only, perhaps, becauſe we became accuſtomed to them, the marks which had recommended

the others began to be forgotten. Their women, however, ſtruck us as ſuperior in every reſpect; and as poſſeſſing all thoſe delicate characteriſtics, which diſtinguiſh them from the other ſex in many countries. The beard which the men here wear long, and the hair which is not cut ſo ſhort, as is the faſhion at Tongataboo, made alſo a great difference; and we could not help thinking, that, on every occaſion, they ſhewed a greater degree of timidity and fickleneſs. The muſcular appearance, ſo common amongſt the Friendly Iſlanders, and which ſeems a conſequence of their being accuſtomed to much action, is loſt here, where the ſuperior fertility of their country enables the inhabitants to lead a more indolent life; and its place is ſupplied by a plumpneſs and ſmoothneſs of the ſkin; which, though, perhaps, more conſonant with our ideas of beauty, is no real advantage; as it ſeems attended with a kind of languor in all their motions, not obſervable in the others. This obſervation is fully verified, in their boxing and wreſtling, which may be called little better than the feeble efforts of children, if compared to the vigour with which theſe exerciſes are performed at the Friendly Iſlands. 1777. December.

Perſonal endowments being in great eſteem amongſt them, they have recourſe to ſeveral methods of improving them, according to their notions of beauty. In particular, it is a practice, eſpecially amongſt the *Erreoes*, or unmarried men of ſome conſequence, to undergo a kind of phyſical operation to render them fair. This is done by remaining a month or two in the houſe; during which time they wear a great quantity of clothes, eat nothing but bread-fruit to which they aſcribe a remarkable property in whitening them. They alſo ſpeak, as if their corpulence and colour, at other times, depended upon their food; as they are

1777. December. obliged, from the change of ſeaſons, to uſe different ſorts at different times.

Their common diet is made up of, at leaſt, nine-tenths of vegetable food; and, I believe, more particularly, the *mahee*, or fermented bread-fruit, which enters almoſt every meal, has a remarkable effect upon them, preventing a coſtive habit, and producing a very ſenſible coolneſs about them, which could not be perceived in us who fed on animal food. And it is, perhaps, owing to this temperate courſe of life that they have ſo few diſeaſes among them.

They only reckon five or ſix, which might be called chronic, or national diſorders; amongſt which are the dropſy, and the *ſefai*, or indolent ſwellings before mentioned, as frequent at Tongataboo. But this was before the arrival of the Europeans; for we have added to this ſhort catalogue, a diſeaſe which abundantly ſupplies the place of all the others; and is now almoſt univerſal. For this they ſeem to have no effectual remedy. The prieſts, indeed, ſometimes give them a medley of ſimples; but they own that it never cures them. And yet, they allow, that, in a few caſes, nature, without the aſſiſtance of a phyſician, exterminates the poiſon of this fatal diſeaſe, and a perfect recovery is produced. They ſay, that, if a man is infected with it, he will often communicate it to others in the ſame houſe, by feeding out of the ſame utenſils, or handling them; and that, in this caſe, they frequently die, while he recovers; though we ſee no reaſon why this ſhould happen.

Their behaviour, on all occaſions, ſeems to indicate a great openneſs and generoſity of diſpoſition. Omai, indeed, who, as their countryman, ſhould be ſuppoſed rather willing

willing to conceal any of their defects, has often ſaid, that they are ſometimes cruel in puniſhing their enemies. According to his repreſentation, they torment them very deliberately; at one time, tearing out ſmall pieces of fleſh from different parts; at another, taking out the eyes; then cutting off the noſe; and laſtly, killing them by opening the belly. But this only happens on particular occaſions. If cheerfulneſs argues a conſcious innocence, one would ſuppoſe that their life is ſeldom ſullied by crimes. This, however, I rather impute to their feelings, which, though lively, ſeem in no caſe permanent; for I never ſaw them, in any misfortune, labour under the appearance of anxiety, after the critical moment was paſt. Neither does care ever ſeem to wrinkle their brow. On the contrary, even the approach of death does not appear to alter their uſual vivacity. I have ſeen them, when brought to the brink of the grave by diſeaſe, and when preparing to go to battle; but, in neither caſe, ever obſerved their countenances overclouded with melancholy, or ſerious reflection. 1777. December.

Such a diſpoſition, leads them to direct all their aims only to what can give them pleaſure and eaſe. Their amuſements all tend to excite and continue their amorous paſſions; and their ſongs, of which they are immoderately fond, anſwer the ſame purpoſe. But as a conſtant ſucceſſion of ſenſual enjoyments muſt cloy, we found, that they frequently varied them to more refined ſubjects, and had much pleaſure in chanting their triumphs in war, and their occupations in peace; their travels to other iſlands, and adventures there; and the peculiar beauties, and ſuperior advantages of their own iſland over the reſt, or of different parts of it over other leſs favourite diſtricts. This marks, that they receive great delight from muſic; and though they rather ex-

1777. December. preſſed a diſlike to our complicated compoſitions, yet were they always delighted with the more melodious ſounds produced ſingly on our inſtruments, as approaching nearer to the ſimplicity of their own.

Neither are they ſtrangers to the ſoothing effects produced by particular ſorts of motion; which, in ſome caſes, ſeem to allay any perturbation of mind, with as much ſucceſs as muſic. Of this, I met with a remarkable inſtance. For on walking, one day, about Matavai Point, where our tents were erected, I ſaw a man paddling, in a ſmall canoe, ſo quickly, and looking about with ſuch eagerneſs, on each ſide, as to command all my attention. At firſt, I imagined that he had ſtolen ſomething from one of the ſhips, and was purſued; but, on waiting patiently, ſaw him repeat his amuſement. He went out from the ſhore, till he was near the place where the ſwell begins to take its riſe; and, watching its firſt motion very attentively, paddled before it, with great quickneſs, till he found that it overtook him, and had acquired ſufficient force to carry his canoe before it, without paſſing underneath. He then ſat motionleſs, and was carried along, at the ſame ſwift rate as the wave, till it landed him upon the beach. Then he ſtarted out, emptied his canoe, and went in ſearch of another ſwell. I could not help concluding, that this man felt the moſt ſupreme pleaſure, while he was driven on, ſo faſt and ſo ſmoothly, by the ſea; eſpecially as, though the tents and ſhips were ſo near, he did not ſeem, in the leaſt, to envy, or even to take any notice of, the crowds of his countrymen collected to view them as objects which were rare and curious. During my ſtay, two or three of the natives came up, who ſeemed to ſhare his felicity, and always called out, when there was an appearance of a favourable ſwell, as he ſometimes miſſ-

ed

ed it, by his back being turned, and looking about for it. By them I underſtood, that this exerciſe, which is called *Timorooe*, was frequent amongſt them; and they have probably more amuſements of this ſort, which afford them at leaſt as much pleaſure as ſkaiting, which is the only one of ours, with whoſe effects I could compare it. 1777. December.

The language of Otaheite, though doubtleſs radically the ſame with that of New Zealand and the Friendly Iſlands, is deſtitute of that guttural pronunciation, and of ſome conſonants, with which thoſe latter dialects abound. The ſpecimens we have already given, are ſufficient to mark wherein the variation chiefly conſiſts, and to ſhew, that, like the manners of the inhabitants, it has become ſoft and ſoothing. During the former voyage, I had collected a copious vocabulary, which enabled me the better to compare this dialect with that of the other iſlands; and, during this voyage, I took every opportunity of improving my acquaintance with it, by converſing with Omai, before we arrived, and by my daily intercourſe with the natives, while we now remained there*. It abounds with beautiful and figurative expreſſions, which, were it perfectly known, would, I have no doubt, put it upon a level with many of the languages that are moſt in eſteem for their warm and bold images. For inſtance; the Otaheiteans expreſs their notions of death very emphatically, by ſaying, "That the ſoul goes into darkneſs; or rather into night." And, if you ſeem to entertain any doubt, in aſking the queſtion, "if ſuch a perſon is their mother?" they immediately reply, with fur-

* See this vocabulary, at the end of the ſecond volume of Captain Cook's ſecond voyage. Many corrections, and additions to it, were now made by this indefatigable inquirer; but the ſpecimens of the language of Otaheite, already in the hands of the Public, ſeem ſufficient for every uſeful purpoſe.

prize,

1777. December. prize, "Yes, the mother that bore me." They have one expreſſion, that correſponds exactly with the phraſeology of the ſcriptures, where we read of the "yearning of the bowels." They uſe it on all occaſions, when the paſſions give them uneaſineſs; as they conſtantly refer pain from grief, anxious deſire, and other affections, to the bowels, as its ſeat; where they likewiſe ſuppoſe all operations of the mind are performed. Their language admits of that inverted arrangement of words, which ſo much diſtinguiſhes the Latin and Greek from moſt of our modern European tongues, whoſe imperfections require a more orderly conſtruction, to prevent ambiguities. It is ſo copious, that for the bread-fruit alone, in its different ſtates, they have above twenty names; as many for the *taro* root; and about ten for the cocoa-nut. Add to this, that, beſides the common dialect, they often expoſtulate, in a kind of ſtanza or recitative, which is anſwered in the ſame manner.

Their arts are few and ſimple; yet, if we may credit them, they perform cures in ſurgery, which our extenſive knowledge in that branch has not, as yet, enabled us to imitate. In ſimple fractures, they bind them up with ſplints; but if part of the ſubſtance of the bone be loſt, they inſert a piece of wood, between the fractured ends, made hollow like the deficient part. In five or ſix days, the *rapaoo*, or ſurgeon, inſpects the wound, and finds the wood partly covered with the growing fleſh. In as many more days, it is generally entirely covered; after which, when the patient has acquired ſome ſtrength, he bathes in the water, and recovers. We know that wounds will heal over leaden bullets; and ſometimes, though rarely, over other extraneous bodies. But what makes me entertain ſome doubt of the truth of ſo extraordinary ſkill, as in the above inſtance is, that in other

other caſes which fell under my own obſervation, they are far from being ſo dexterous. I have ſeen the ſtump of an arm, which was taken off, after being ſhattered by a fall from a tree, that bore no marks of ſkilful operation, though ſome allowance be made for their defective inſtruments. And I met with a man going about with a diſlocated ſhoulder, ſome months after the accident, from their being ignorant of a method to reduce it; though this be conſidered as one of the ſimpleſt operations of our ſurgery. They know that fractures or luxations of the ſpine are mortal, but not fractures of the ſkull; and they likewiſe know, from experience, in what parts of the body wounds prove fatal. They have ſometimes pointed out thoſe inflicted by ſpears, which, if made in the direction they mentioned, would certainly have been pronounced deadly by us; and yet theſe people have recovered. 1777. December.

Their phyſical knowledge ſeems more confined; and that, probably, becauſe their diſeaſes are fewer than their accidents. The prieſts, however, adminiſter the juices of herbs in ſome caſes; and women who are troubled with after-pains, or other diſorders after child-bearing, uſe a remedy which one would think needleſs in a hot country. They firſt heat ſtones, as when they bake their food; then they lay a thick cloth over them, upon which is put a quantity of a ſmall plant of the muſtard kind; and theſe are covered with another cloth. Upon this they ſeat themſelves, and ſweat plentifully, to obtain a cure. The men have practiſed the ſame method for the venereal *lues*, but find it ineffectual. They have no emetic medicines.

Notwithſtanding the extreme fertility of the iſland, a famine frequently happens, in which, it is ſaid, many periſh. Whether this be owing to the failure of ſome ſeaſons, to over-

1777. December. over-population, which muſt ſometimes almoſt neceſſarily happen, or to wars, I have not been able to determine; though the truth of the fact may fairly be inferred, from the great œconomy that they obſerve with reſpect to their food, even when there is plenty. In times of ſcarcity, after their bread-fruit and yams are conſumed, they have recourſe to various roots, which grow, without cultivation, upon the mountains. The *patarra*, which is found in vaſt quantities, is what they uſe firſt. It is not unlike a very large potatoe or yam, and good when in its growing ſtate; but, when old, is full of hard ſtringy fibres. They then eat two other roots; one not unlike *taro*; and, laſtly, the *ehoee*. This is of two ſorts; one of them poſſeſſing deleterious qualities, which obliges them to ſlice and macerate it in water, a night before they bake and eat it. In this reſpect, it reſembles the *caſſava* root of the Weſt-Indies; but it forms a very inſipid, moiſt paſte, in the manner they dreſs it. However, I have ſeen them eat it at times when no ſuch ſcarcity reigned. Both this and the *patarra* are creeping plants; the laſt, with ternate leaves.

Of animal food, a very ſmall portion falls, at any time, to the ſhare of the lower claſs of people; and then it is either fiſh, ſea-eggs, or other marine productions; for they ſeldom or ever eat pork. The *Eree de hoi** alone, is able to furniſh pork every day; and inferior Chiefs, according to their riches, once a week, fortnight, or month. Sometimes, they are not even allowed that; for, when the iſland is impoveriſhed by war, or other cauſes, the Chief prohibits his ſubjects to kill any hogs; and this prohibition, we were told, is in force, ſometimes, for ſeveral months, or even for a year or two. Dur-

* Mr. Anderſon invariably, in his manuſcript, writes *Exee de hoi*. According to Captain Cook's mode, it is *Eree rahie*. This is one of the numerous inſtances that perpetually occur, of our people's repreſenting the ſame word differently.

ing that reſtraint, the hogs multiply ſo faſt, that there are inſtances of their changing their domeſtic ſtate, and turning wild. When it is thought proper to take off the prohibition, all the Chiefs aſſemble at the king's place of abode; and each brings with him a preſent of hogs. The king then orders ſome of them to be killed, on which they feaſt; and, after that, every one returns home with liberty to kill what he pleaſes for his own uſe. Such a prohibition was actually in force, on our laſt arrival here; at leaſt, in all thoſe diſtricts of the iſland, that are immediately under the direction of Otoo. And, leſt it ſhould have prevented our going to Matavai after leaving Oheitepeha, he ſent a meſſage to aſſure us, that it ſhould be taken off, as ſoon as the ſhips arrived there. With reſpect to us, we found it ſo; but we made ſuch a conſumption of them, that, I have no doubt, it would be laid on again, as ſoon as we ſailed. A ſimilar prohibition is alſo, ſometimes, extended to fowls. 1777. December.

It is alſo amongſt the better ſort, that the *ava* is chiefly uſed. But this beverage is prepared ſomewhat differently, from that which we ſaw ſo much of at the Friendly Iſlands. For they pour a very ſmall quantity of water upon the root here; and ſometimes roaſt or bake, and bruiſe the ſtalks, without chewing it previouſly to its infuſion. They alſo uſe the leaves of the plant here, which are bruiſed, and water poured upon them, as upon the root. Large companies do not aſſemble to drink it, in that ſociable way which is practiſed at Tongataboo. But its pernicious effects are more obvious here; perhaps, owing to the manner of preparing it; as we often ſaw inſtances of its intoxicating, or rather ſtupifying powers. Some of us, who had been at theſe iſlands before, were ſurprized to find many people, who, when we ſaw them laſt, were remarkable for their

1777. December. ſize and corpulency, now almoſt reduced to ſkeletons; and, upon inquiring into the cauſe of this alteration, it was univerſally allowed to be the uſe of the *ava*. The ſkins of theſe people were rough, dry, and covered with ſcales; which, they ſay, every now and then, fall off, and their ſkin is, as it were, renewed. As an excuſe for a practice ſo deſtructive, they allege, that it is adopted to prevent their growing too fat; but it evidently enervates them; and, in all probability, ſhortens their days. As its effects had not been ſo viſible, during our former viſits, it is not unlikely that this article of luxury had never been ſo much abuſed as at this time. If it continues to be ſo faſhionable, it bids fair to deſtroy great numbers.

The times of eating, at Otaheite, are very frequent. Their firſt meal, or (as it may rather be called) their laſt, as they go to ſleep after it, is about two o'clock in the morning; and the next is at eight. At eleven, they dine; and again, as Omai expreſſed it, at two, and at five; and ſup at eight. In this article of domeſtic life, they have adopted ſome cuſtoms which are exceedingly whimſical. The women, for inſtance, have not only the mortification of being obliged to eat by themſelves, and in a different part of the houſe from the men; but, by a ſtrange kind of policy, are excluded from a ſhare of moſt of the better ſorts of food. They dare not taſte turtle, nor fiſh of the tunny kind, which is much eſteemed; nor ſome particular ſorts of the beſt plantains; and it is very ſeldom that even thoſe of the firſt rank are ſuffered to eat pork. The children of each ſex alſo eat apart; and the women, generally, ſerve up their own victuals; for they would certainly ſtarve, before any grown man would do them ſuch an office. In this, as well as in ſome other cuſtoms relative to their eating, there is a myſterious conduct, which we could never thoroughly compre-

hend. When we inquired into the reaſons of it, we could get no other anſwer, but that it is right and neceſſary that ſhould be ſo. 1777. December.

In other cuſtoms reſpecting the females, there ſeems to be no ſuch obſcurity; eſpecially as to their connections with the men. If a young man and woman, from mutual choice, cohabit, the man gives the father of the girl ſuch things as are neceſſary in common life; as hogs, cloth, or canoes, in proportion to the time they are together; and if he thinks that he has not been ſufficiently paid for his daughter, he makes no ſcruple of forcing her to leave her friend, and to cohabit with another perſon who may be more liberal. The man, on his part, is always at liberty to make a new choice; but, ſhould his conſort become pregnant, he may kill the child; and, after that, either continue his connection with the mother, or leave her. But if he ſhould adopt the child, and ſuffer it to live, the parties are then conſidered as in the married ſtate, and they commonly live together ever after. However, it is thought no crime in the man to join a more youthful partner to his firſt wife, and to live with both. The cuſtom of changing their connections is, however, much more general than this laſt; and it is a thing ſo common, that they ſpeak of it with great indifference. The *Erreoes* are only thoſe of the better ſort, who, from their fickleneſs, and their poſſeſſing the means of purchaſing a ſucceſſion of freſh connections, are conſtantly roaming about; and, from having no particular attachment, ſeldom adopt the more ſettled method mentioned above. And ſo agreeable is this licentious plan of life to their diſpoſition, that the moſt beautiful of both ſexes thus commonly ſpend their youthful days, habituated to the practice of enormities which would diſgrace the moſt ſavage tribes; but are peculiarly ſhocking amongſt a people whoſe general

1777. December. general character, in other reſpects, has evident traces of the prevalence of humane and tender feelings *. When an

Erreoi

* That the Caroline Iſlands are inhabited by the ſame tribe or nation, whom Captain Cook found, at ſuch immenſe diſtances, ſpread throughout the South Pacific Ocean, has been ſatisfactorily eſtabliſhed in ſome preceding notes. The ſituation of the Ladrones, or Marianne Iſlands, ſtill farther North than the Carolines, but at no great diſtance from them, is favourable, at firſt ſight, to the conjecture, that the ſame race alſo peopled that cluſter; and, on looking into Father le Gobien's Hiſtory of them, this conjecture appears to be actually confirmed by direct evidence. One of the greateſt ſingularities of the Otaheite manners, is the exiſtence of the ſociety of young men, called *Erreoes*, of whom ſome account is given in the preceding paragraph. Now we learn from Father le Gobien, that ſuch a ſociety exiſts alſo amongſt the inhabitants of the Ladrones. His words are; *Les Urritoes ſont parmi eux les jeuns gens qui vivent avec des maitreſſes, ſans vouloir s'engager dans les liens du mariage.* That there ſhould be young men in the Ladrones, as well as in Otaheite, *who live with miſtreſſes, without being inclined to enter into the married ſtate*, would not, indeed, furniſh the ſhadow of any peculiar reſemblance between them. But that the young men in the Ladrones, and in Otaheite, whoſe manners are thus licentious, ſhould be conſidered as a diſtinct confraternity, called by a particular name; and that this name ſhould be the ſame in both places: this ſingular coincidence of cuſtom, confirmed by that of language, ſeems to furniſh an irrefragable proof of the inhabitants of both places being the ſame nation. We know, that it is the general property of the Otaheite dialect, to ſoften the pronunciation of its words. And, it is obſervable, that, by the omiſſion of one ſingle letter (the conſonant *t*), our *Arreoys* (as ſpelled in Hawkeſworth's Collection), or *Erreoes* (according to Mr. Anderſon's orthography), and the *Urritoes* of the Ladrones, are brought to ſuch a ſimilitude of ſound (the only rule of comparing two unwritten languages), that we may pronounce them to be the ſame word, without expoſing ourſelves to the ſneers of ſupercilious criticiſm.

One or two more ſuch proofs, drawn from ſimilarity of language, in very ſignificant words, may be aſſigned. Le Gobien tells us, that the people of the Ladrones worſhip their dead, whom they call *Anitis*. Here, again, by dropping the conſonant *n*, we have a word that bears a ſtrong reſemblance to that which ſo often occurs in Captain Cook's Voyages, when ſpeaking of the Divinities of his iſlands, whom he calls *Eatooas*. And it may be matter of curioſity to remark, that what is called an *Aniti*, at the Ladrones, is, as we learn from Cantova [*Lettres Edifiantes & Curieuſes*, Tom. xv. p. 309, 310.], at the Caroline Iſlands, where dead Chiefs are alſo worſhipped, called a *Tahutup*; and that, by ſoftening or ſinking the ſtrong ſounding letters, at the beginning and at the end of this latter word, the *Ahutu* of the Carolines, the *Aiti* of the Ladrones, and the *Eatooa* of the South Pacific Iſlands, aſſume ſuch a ſimilarity in pronunciation (for we can have no other guide), as ſtrongly marks one common original. Once more; we learn from Le Gobien, that the Marianne people call their Chiefs *Chamorris*, or *Chamoris*. And, by ſoftening the aſpirate *Ch* into *T*, and the harſhneſs

Erreoe woman is delivered of a child, a piece of cloth, dipped in water, is applied to the mouth and noſe, which ſuffocates it. 1777. December.

As

neſs of *r* into *l* (of which the vocabularies of the different iſlands give us repeated inſtances), we have the *Tamole* of the Caroline Iſlands, and the *Tamolao*, or *Tamaha*, of the Friendly ones.

If theſe ſpecimens of affinity of language ſhould be thought too ſcanty, ſome very remarkable inſtances of ſimilarity of cuſtoms and inſtitutions will go far to remove every doubt. 1. A diviſion into three claſſes, of nobles, a middle rank, and the common people, or ſervants, was found, by Captain Cook, to prevail both at the Friendly and the Society Iſlands. Father le Gobien expreſsly tells us, that the ſame diſtinction prevails at the Ladrones: *Il y a trois états, parmi les inſulaires, la nobleſſe, le moyen, & le menu.* 2. Numberleſs inſtances occur in Captain Cook's voyage to prove the great ſubjection under which the people of his iſlands are to their Chiefs. We learn from Le Gobien, that it is ſo alſo at the Ladrones: *La nobleſſe eſt d'un fierté incroyable, & tien le peuple dans un abaiſement qu'on ne pourroit imaginer en Europe*, &c. 3. The diverſions of the natives at Wateeoo, the Friendly, and the Society Iſlands, have been copiouſly deſcribed by Captain Cook. How ſimilar are thoſe which Le Gobien mentions in the following words, as prevailing at the Ladrones? *Ils ſe divertiſſent à danſer, courir, ſautir, lutter, pour s'exercer, & éprouver leur forces. Ils prennent grand plaiſir à raconter les avantures de leurs ancétres, & à reciter des vers de leurs poëtes.* 4. The principal ſhare ſuſtained by the women, in the entertainments at Captain Cook's iſlands, appears ſufficiently from a variety of inſtances in this work; and we cannot read what Le Gobien ſays, of the practice at the Ladrones, without tracing the ſtrongeſt reſemblance.—*Dans leurs aſſemblées elles ſe mettent doux ou trieze femmes en rond, debout, ſans ſe remuer. Dans cette attitude elles chantent les vers fabuleux de leurs poëtes avec un agrément, & une juſteſſe qui plairoit en Europe. L'accord de leur voix eſt admirable, & ne cede en rien à la muſique concertée. Elles ont dans les mains de petits coquilles, dont elles ſe ſervent avec beaucoup de preciſion. Elles ſoutiennent leur voix, & animent leur chants avec une action ſi vive, & des geſtes ſi expreſſives, qu'elles charment ceux qui les voient, & qui les entendent.* 5. We read, in Hawkeſworth's account of Captain Cook's firſt voyage, Vol. ii. p. 235. that garlands of the fruit of the palm-tree and cocoa-leaves, with other things particularly conſecrated to funeral ſolemnities, are depoſited about the places where they lay their dead; and that proviſions and water are alſo left at a little diſtance. How conformable to this is the practice at the Ladrones, as deſcribed by Le Gobien! *Ils font quelques repas autour du tombeau; car on en eleve toujours un ſur le lieu où le corps eſt enterré, ou dans le voiſinage; on le charge de fleurs, de branches de palmiers, de coquillages, & de tout ce qu'ils ont de plus precieux.* 6. It is the cuſtom at Otaheite [ſee Hawkeſworth, Vol. ii. p. 236.] not to bury the ſculls of the Chiefs, with the reſt of the bones, but to put them into boxes made for that purpoſe. Here again, we find the ſame ſtrange cuſtom prevailing at the Ladrones;

1777. December.

As in ſuch a life, their women muſt contribute a very large ſhare of its happineſs, it is rather ſurprizing, beſides the humiliating reſtraints they are laid under with regard to food, to find them often treated with a degree of harſhneſs, or rather brutality, which one would ſcarcely ſuppoſe a man would beſtow, on an object for whom he had the leaſt af-

drones; for Le Gobien expreſsly tells us, *qu'ils gardent les cranes en leur maiſons*, that they put theſe ſculls into little baſkets *(petites corbeilles)*; and that theſe dead Chiefs are the *Anitis*, to whom their prieſts addreſs their invocations. 7. The people of Otaheite, as we learn from Captain Cook, in his account of Tee's embalmed corpſe, make uſe of cocoa-nut oil, and other ingredients, in rubbing the dead bodies. The people of the Ladrones, Father Le Gobien tells us, ſometimes do the ſame—*D'autres frottent les morts d'huile odoriferante.* 8. The inhabitants of Otaheite [ſee Hawkeſworth, Vol. ii. p. 239, 240.] believe the immortality of the ſoul; and that there are two ſituations after death, ſomewhat analagous to our heaven and hell; but they do not ſuppoſe, that their actions here in the leaſt influence their future ſtate. And in the account given in this voyage [Vol. i. p. 403.], of the religious opinions entertained at the Friendly Iſlands, we find there, exactly the ſame doctrine. It is very obſervable, how conformable to this is the belief of the inhabitants of the Ladrones—*Ils ſont perſuadés* (ſays Le Gobien) *de l'immortalité de l'âme. Ils reconnoiſſent même un Paradis & un Enfer, dont ils ſe forment des idées aſſez bizarres. Ce n'eſt point, ſelon eux, la vertu ni le crime, qui conduit dans ces lieux là; les bonnes ou les mauvaiſes actions n'y ſervent de rien.* 9. One more very ſingular inſtance of agreement, ſhall cloſe this long liſt. In Captain Cook's account of the New Zealanders [Vol. i. p. 138.], we find, that, according to them, the ſoul of the man who is killed, and whoſe fleſh is devoured, is doomed to a perpetual fire; while the ſouls of all who die a natural death, aſcend to the habitations of the Gods. And, from Le Gobien, we learn, that this very notion is adopted by his iſlanders—*Si on a le malheur de mourir de mort violente, on a l'enfer pour leur partage.*

Surely, ſuch a concurrence of very characteriſtic conformities cannot be the reſult of mere accident; and, when combined with the ſpecimens of affinity of language mentioned at the beginning of this note, it ſhould ſeem, that we are fully warranted, from premiſes thus unexceptionable, to draw a certain concluſion, that the inhabitants of the various iſlands diſcovered or viſited by Captain Cook, in the South Pacific Ocean, and thoſe whom the Spaniards found ſettled upon the Ladrones or Mariannes, in the Northern hemiſphere, carried the ſame language, cuſtoms, and opinions, from one common center, from which they had emigrated; and that, therefore, they may be conſidered as ſcattered members of the ſame nation.

See Pere le Gobien's *Hiſtoire des Iſles Mariannes*, Book ii. or the ſummary of it in *Hiſtoire des Navigations aux Terres Auſtrales*, T. ii. p. 492—512, from which the materials for this note have been extracted.

fection.

1777. December.

fection. Nothing, however, is more common, than to ſee the men beat them without mercy; and unleſs this treatment is the effect of jealouſy, which both ſexes, at leaſt, pretend to be ſometimes infected with, it will be difficult to account for it. It will be leſs difficult to admit this as the motive, as I have ſeen ſeveral inſtances where the women have preferred perſonal beauty to intereſt; though, I muſt own, that, even in theſe caſes, they ſeem ſcarcely ſuſceptible of thoſe delicate ſentiments that are the reſult of mutual affection; and, I believe, that there is leſs Platonic love in Otaheite than in any other country.

Cutting or inciding the fore-ſkin ſhould be mentioned here as a practice adopted amongſt them, from a notion of cleanlineſs; and they have a reproachful epithet in their language, for thoſe who do not obſerve that cuſtom. When there are five or ſix lads pretty well grown up in a neighbourhood, the father of one of them goes to a *Tahoua*, or man of knowledge, and lets him know. He goes with the lads to the top of the hills, attended by a ſervant; and, ſeating one of them properly, introduces a piece of wood underneath the foreſkin, and deſires him to look aſide at ſomething he pretends is coming. Having thus engaged the young man's attention to another object, he cuts through the ſkin upon the wood, with a ſhark's tooth, generally at one ſtroke. He then ſeparates, or rather turns back the divided parts; and, having put on a bandage, proceeds to perform the ſame operation on the other lads. At the end of five days they bathe, and the bandages being taken off, the matter is cleaned away. At the end of five days more, they bathe again, and are well; but a thickneſs of the prepuce, where it was cut, remaining, they go again to the mountains with the *Tahoua* and ſervant; and a fire being

1777. December. prepared, and ſome ſtones heated, the *Taboua* puts the prepuce between two of them, and ſqueezes it gently, which removes the thickneſs. They then return home, having their heads, and other parts of their bodies, adorned with odoriferous flowers; and the *Taboua* is rewarded for his ſervices by their fathers, in proportion to their ſeveral abilities, with preſents of hogs and cloth; and if they be poor, their relations are liberal on the occaſion.

Their religious ſyſtem is extenſive, and, in many inſtances, ſingular; but few of the common people have a perfect knowledge of it; that being confined chiefly to their prieſts, who are pretty numerous. They do not ſeem to pay reſpect to one God as poſſeſſing pre-eminence; but believe in a plurality of divinities, who are all very powerful; and, in this caſe, as different parts of the iſland, and the other iſlands in the neighbourhood, have different ones, the inhabitants of each, no doubt, think that they have choſen the moſt eminent, or, at leaſt, one who is inveſted with power ſufficient to protect them, and to ſupply all their wants. If he ſhould not anſwer their expectations, they think it no impiety to change; as has very lately happened in Tiaraboo, where, in the room of the two divinities formerly honoured there, Oraa*, God of Bolabola, has been adopted, I ſhould ſuppoſe, becauſe he is the protector of a people who have been victorious in war; and as, ſince they have made this change, they have been very ſucceſsful themſelves againſt the inhabitants of *Otaheite-nooe*, they impute it entirely to *Oraa*, who, as they literally ſay, fights their battles.

Their aſſiduity in ſerving their Gods is remarkably conſpicuous. Not only the *whattas*, or offering-places of the

* We have here another inſtance of the ſame word being differently pronounced by our people. Captain Cook, as appears above, ſpeaks of *Olla*, as the Bolabola God.

morais,

morais, are commonly loaded with fruits and animals; but there are few houſes where you do not meet with a ſmall place of the ſame ſort near them. Many of them are ſo rigidly ſcrupulous, that they will not begin a meal, without firſt laying aſide a morſel for the *Eatooa*; and we had an opportunity, during this voyage, of ſeeing their ſuperſtitious zeal carried to a moſt pernicious height, in the inſtance of human ſacrifices; the occaſions of offering which, I doubt, are too frequent. Perhaps, they have recourſe to them when misfortunes occur; for they aſked, if one of our men, who happened to be confined, when we were detained by a contrary wind, was *taboo?* Their prayers are alſo very frequent, which they chant, much after the manner of the ſongs in their feſtive entertainments. And the women, as in other caſes, are alſo obliged to ſhew their inferiority in religious obſervances; for it is required of them, that they ſhould partly uncover themſelves, as they paſs the *morais*; or take a conſiderable circuit to avoid them. Though they have no notion, that their God muſt always be conferring benefits, without ſometimes forgetting them, or ſuffering evil to befall them, they ſeem to regard this leſs than the attempts of ſome more inauſpicious being to hurt them. They tell us, that *Etee* is an evil ſpirit, who ſometimes does them miſchief; and to whom, as well as to their god, they make offerings. But the miſchiefs they apprehend from any ſuperior inviſible beings, are confined to things merely temporal. 1777. December.

They believe the ſoul to be both immaterial and immortal. They ſay, that it keeps fluttering about the lips during the pangs of death; and that then it aſcends, and mixes with, or, as they expreſs it, is eaten by the deity. In this ſtate it remains

1777. December. for ſome time; after which, it departs to a certain place deſtined for the reception of the ſouls of men, where it exiſts in eternal night; or, as they ſometimes ſay, in twilight, or dawn. They have no idea of any permanent puniſhment after death, for crimes that they have commited on earth; for the ſouls of good and of bad men are eat indiſcriminately by God. But they certainly conſider this coalition with the Deity as a kind of purification neceſſary to be undergone, before they enter a ſtate of bliſs. For, according to their doctrine, if a man refrain from all connection with women ſome months before death, he paſſes immediately into his eternal manſion, without ſuch a previous union, as if already, by this abſtinence, he were pure enough to be exempted from the general lot.

They are, however, far from entertaining thoſe ſublime conceptions of happineſs, which our religion, and, indeed, reaſon, gives us room to expect hereafter. The only great privilege they ſeem to think they ſhall acquire by death, is immortality; for they ſpeak of ſpirits being, in ſome meaſure, not totally diveſted of thoſe paſſions which actuated them when combined with material vehicles. Thus, if ſouls, who were formerly enemies, ſhould meet, they have many conflicts; though, it ſhould ſeem, to no purpoſe, as they are accounted invulnerable in this inviſible ſtate. There is a ſimilar reaſoning with regard to the meeting of man and wife. If the huſband dies firſt, the ſoul of his wife is known to him on its arrival in the land of ſpirits. They reſume their former acquaintance, in a ſpacious houſe, called *Tourooa*, where the ſouls of the deceaſed aſſemble to recreate themſelves with the Gods. She then retires with him to his ſeparate habitation, where they remain for ever, and have an offſpring; which, however, is entirely ſpiritual;

tual; as they are neither married, nor are their embraces ſuppoſed to be the ſame as with corporeal beings. 1777. December.

Some of their notions about the deity, are extravagantly abſurd. They believe, that he is ſubject to the power of thoſe very ſpirits to whom he has given exiſtence; and that, in their turn, they frequently eat or devour him, though he poſſeſs the power of re-creating himſelf. They, doubtleſs, uſe this mode of expreſſion, as they ſeem incapable of converſing about immaterial things, without conſtantly referring to material objects to convey their meaning. And in this manner they continue the account, by ſaying, that, in the *tourooa*, the deity inquires, if they intend, or not, to deſtroy him? And that he is not able to alter their determination. This is known to the inhabitants on earth, as well as to the ſpirits; for when the moon is in its wane, it is ſaid, that they are then devouring their *Eatooa*; and that, as it increaſes, he is renewing himſelf. And to this accident, not only the inferior, but the moſt eminent gods are liable. They alſo believe, that there are other places for the reception of ſouls at death. Thus, thoſe who are drowned in the ſea, remain there; where they think that there is a fine country, houſes, and every thing that can make them happy. But what is more ſingular, they maintain, that not only all other animals, but trees, fruit, and even ſtones, have ſouls, which at death, or upon being conſumed or broken, aſcend to the divinity, with whom they firſt mix, and afterward paſs into the manſion allotted to each.

They imagine, that their punctual performance of religious offices procures for them every temporal bleſſing. And as they believe, that the animating and powerful influence of the divine ſpirit is every where diffuſed, it is no wonder

1777. December. wonder that they join to this many ſuperſtitious opinions about its operations. Accordingly, they believe that ſudden deaths, and all other accidents, are effected by the immediate action of ſome divinity. If a man only ſtumble againſt a ſtone, and hurt his toe, they impute it to an *Eatooa*; ſo that they may be literally ſaid, agreeably to their ſyſtem, to tread enchanted ground. They are ſtartled, in the night, on approaching a *toopapaoo*, where the dead are expoſed, in the ſame manner that many of our ignorant and ſuperſtitious people are with the apprehenſions of ghoſts, and at the ſight of a church-yard; and they have an equal confidence in dreams, which they ſuppoſe to be communications either from their God, or from the ſpirits of their departed friends, enabling thoſe favoured with them to foretell future events; but this kind of knowledge is confined to particular people. Omai pretended to have this gift. He told us, that the ſoul of his father had intimated to him in a dream, on the 26th of July 1776, that he ſhould go on ſhore, at ſome place, within three days; but he was unfortunate in this firſt attempt to perſuade us, that he was a prophet; for it was the 1ſt of Auguſt before we got into Teneriffe. Amongſt them, however, the dreamers poſſeſs a reputation little inferior to that of their inſpired prieſts and prieſteſſes, whoſe predictions they implicitly believe, and are determined by them in all undertakings of conſequence. The prieſteſs who perſuaded Opoony to invade Ulietea, is much reſpected by him; and he never goes to war, without conſulting her. They alſo, in ſome degree, maintain our old doctrine of planetary influence; at leaſt, they are ſometimes regulated, in their public counſels, by certain appearances of the moon; particularly, when lying horizontally, or much inclined on the convex part, on its

firſt

first appearance after the change, they are encouraged to engage in war, with confidence of ſucceſs. 1777. December.

They have traditions concerning the creation, which, as might be expected, are complex, and clouded with obſcurity. They ſay, that a goddeſs, having a lump or maſs of earth ſuſpended in a cord, gave it a ſwing, and ſcattered about pieces of land, thus conſtituting Otaheite and the neighbouring iſlands, which were all peopled by a man and woman originally fixed at Otaheite. This, however, only reſpects their own immediate creation; for they have notions of an univerſal one before this; and of lands, of which they have now no other knowledge than what is mentioned in the tradition. Their moſt remote account reaches to Tatooma and Tapuppa, male and female ſtones or rocks, who ſupport the congeries of land and water, or our globe underneath. Theſe produced Totorro, who was killed, and divided into land; and, after him, Otaia and Oroo were begotten, who were afterward married, and produced, firſt land, and then a race of gods. Otaia is killed, and Oroo marries a god, her ſon, called Teorraha, whom ſhe orders to create more land, the animals, and all ſorts of food found upon the earth; as alſo the ſky, which is ſupported by men called Teeferei. The ſpots obſerved in the moon, are ſuppoſed to be groves of a ſort of trees which once grew in Otaheite, and, being deſtroyed by ſome accident, their ſeeds were carried up thither by doves, where they now flouriſh.

They have alſo many legends, both religious and hiſtorical; one of which latter, relative to the practice of eating human fleſh, I ſhall give the ſubſtance of, as a ſpecimen of their method. A long time ſince, there lived in Otaheite

two

1777. December. two men called *Taheeai*; the only name they yet have for cannibals. None knew from whence they came, or in what manner they arrived at the iſland. Their habitation was in the mountains, from whence they uſed to iſſue, and kill many of the natives, whom they afterward devoured, and, by that means, prevented the progreſs of population. Two brothers, determined to rid their country of ſuch a formidable enemy, uſed a ſtratagem for their deſtruction, with ſucceſs. Theſe ſtill lived farther upward than the *Taheeai*, and in ſuch a ſituation, that they could ſpeak with them, without greatly hazarding their own ſafety. They invited them to accept of an entertainment, that ſhould be provided for them, to which theſe readily conſented. The brothers then taking ſome ſtones, heated them in a fire, and thruſting them into pieces of *mahee*, deſired one of the *Taheeai* to open his mouth. On which, one of theſe pieces was dropped in, and ſome water poured down, which made a boiling or hiſſing noiſe, in quenching the ſtone, and killed him. They intreated the other to do the ſame; but he declined it, repreſenting the conſequences of his companion's eating. However, they aſſured him, that the food was excellent, and its effects only temporary; for that the other would ſoon recover. His credulity was ſuch, that he ſwallowed the bait, and ſhared the fate of the firſt. The natives then cut them in pieces, which they buried; and conferred the government of the iſland on the brothers, as a reward for delivering them from ſuch monſters. Their reſidence was in the diſtrict called Whapaeenoo; and, to this day, there remains a bread-fruit tree, once the property of the *Taheeais*. They had alſo a woman, who lived with them, and had two teeth of a prodigious ſize. After they were killed, ſhe lived at the iſland Otaha, and, when dead, was ranked amongſt

their deities. She did not eat human fleſh, as the men; but, from the ſize of her teeth, the natives ſtill call any animal that has a fierce appearance, or is repreſented with large tuſks, *Taheeai*. 1777. December.

Every one muſt allow, that this ſtory is juſt as natural as that of Hercules deſtroying the Hydra, or the more modern one of Jack the giant-killer. But I do not find, that there is any moral couched under it, any more than under moſt old fables of the ſame kind, which have been received as truths only during the prevalence of the ſame ignorance that marked the character of the ages in which they were invented. It, however, has not been improperly introduced, as ſerving to expreſs the horror and deteſtation entertained here, againſt thoſe who feed upon human fleſh. And yet, from ſome circumſtances, I have been led to think, that the natives of theſe iſles were formerly cannibals. Upon aſking Omai, he denied it ſtoutly; yet mentioned a fact, within his own knowledge, which almoſt confirms ſuch an opinion. When the people of Bolabola, one time, defeated thoſe of Huaheine, a great number of his kinſmen were ſlain. But one of his relations had, afterward, an opportunity of revenging himſelf, when the Bolabola men were worſted in their turn, and cutting a piece out of the thigh of one of his enemies, he broiled and eat it. I have, alſo, frequently conſidered the offering of the perſon's eye, who is ſacrificed, to the Chief, as a veſtige of a cuſtom which once really exiſted to a greater extent, and is ſtill commemorated by this emblematical ceremony.

The being inveſted with the *maro*, and the preſiding at human ſacrifices, ſeem to be the peculiar characteriſtics of the ſovereign. To theſe, perhaps, may be added the blow-

1777. December. ing a conch-ſhell, which produces a very loud ſound. On hearing it, all his ſubjects are obliged to bring food of every ſort to his royal reſidence, in proportion to their abilities. On ſome other occaſions, they carry their veneration for his very name, to an extravagant and very deſtructive pitch. For if, on his acceſſion to the *maro*, any words in their language be found to have a reſemblance to it in ſound, they are changed for others; and if any man be bold enough not to comply, and continue to uſe thoſe words, not only he, but all his relations, are immediately put to death. The ſame ſeverity is exerciſed toward thoſe who ſhall preſume to apply this ſacred name to any animal. And, agreeably to this cuſtom of his countrymen, Omai uſed to expreſs his indignation, that the Engliſh ſhould give the names of prince or princeſs to their favourite horſes or dogs. But while death is the puniſhment for making free with the name of their ſovereign, if abuſe be only levelled at his government, the offender eſcapes with the forfeiture of land and houſes.

The king never enters the houſe of any of his ſubjects; but has, in every diſtrict, where he viſits, houſes belonging to himſelf. And if, at any time, he ſhould be obliged by accident to deviate from this rule, the houſe thus honoured with his preſence, and every part of its furniture, is burnt. His ſubjects not only uncover to him, when preſent, down to the waiſt; but if he be at any particular place, a pole, having a piece of cloth tied to it, is ſet up ſomewhere near, to which they pay the ſame honours. His brothers are alſo intitled to the firſt part of the ceremony; but the women only uncover to the females of the royal family. In ſhort, they ſeem even ſuperſtitious in their reſpect to him, and eſteem his perſon little leſs than ſacred. And it is, perhaps, to theſe circumſtances, that he owes the quiet poſ-

ſeſſion

ſeſſion of his dominions. For even the people of Tiaraboo allow him the ſame honours as his right; though, at the ſame time, they look upon their own Chief as more powerful; and ſay, that he would ſucceed to the government of the whole iſland, ſhould the preſent reigning family become extinct. This is the more likely, as Waheiadooa not only poſſeſſes Tiaraboo, but many diſtricts of Opooreanoo. His territories, therefore, are almoſt equal, in extent, to thoſe of Otoo; and he has, beſides, the advantage of a more populous and fertile part of the iſland. His ſubjects, alſo, have given proofs of their ſuperiority, by frequent victories over thoſe of Otaheite-nooe, whom they affect to ſpeak of as contemptible warriors, eaſily to be worſted, if, at any time, their Chief ſhould wiſh to put it to the teſt. 1777, December.

The ranks of people, beſides the *Eree de hoi*, and his family, are the *Erees*, or powerful Chiefs; the *Manahoone*, or vaſſals; and the *Teou*, or *Toutou*, ſervants, or rather ſlaves. The men of each of theſe, according to the regular inſtitution, form their connections with women of their reſpective ranks; but if with any inferior one, which frequently happens, and a child be born, it is preſerved, and has the rank of the father, unleſs he happens to be an *Eree*, in which caſe it is killed. If a woman of condition ſhould chooſe an inferior perſon to officiate as a huſband, the children he has by her are killed. And if a *Teou* be caught in an intrigue with a woman of the blood-royal, he is put to death. The ſon of the *Eree de hoi* ſucceeds his father in title and honours, as ſoon as he is born; but if he ſhould have no children, the brother aſſumes the government at his death. In other families, poſſeſſions always deſcend to the eldeſt ſon; but he is obliged to maintain his brothers and ſiſters, who are allowed houſes on his eſtates.

1777. December. The boundaries of the ſeveral diſtricts, into which Otaheite is divided, are, generally, either rivulets, or low hills, which, in many places, jut out into the ſea. But the ſubdiviſions into particular property, are marked by large ſtones, which have remained from one generation to another. The removal of any of theſe gives riſe to quarrels, which are decided by arms; each party bringing his friends into the field. But if any one complain to the *Eree de hoi*, he terminates the difference amicably. This is an offence, however, not common; and long cuſtom ſeems to ſecure property here as effectually, as the moſt ſevere laws do in other countries. In conformity alſo to ancient practice eſtabliſhed amongſt them, crimes of a leſs general nature are left to be puniſhed by the ſufferer, without referring them to a ſuperior. In this caſe, they ſeem to think, that the injured perſon will judge as equitably as thoſe who are totally unconcerned; and as long cuſtom has allotted certain puniſhments for crimes of different ſorts, he is allowed to inflict them, without being amenable to any other perſon. Thus, if any one be caught ſtealing, which is commonly done in the night, the proprietor of the goods may put the thief inſtantly to death; and if any one ſhould inquire of him after the deceaſed, it is ſufficient to acquit him, if he only inform them of the provocation he had to kill him. But ſo ſevere a puniſhment is ſeldom inflicted, unleſs the articles that are ſtolen be reckoned very valuable; ſuch as breaſt-plates, and plaited hair. If only cloth, or even hogs be ſtolen, and the thief eſcape, upon his being afterward diſcovered, if he promiſe to return the ſame number of pieces of cloth, or of hogs, no farther puniſhment is inflicted. Sometimes, after keeping out of the way for a few days, he is forgiven, or, at moſt, gets a ſlight beating. If a perſon

kill another in a quarrel, the friends of the deceaſed aſ- 1777. December.
ſemble, and engage the ſurvivor and his adherents. If they conquer, they take poſſeſſion of the houſe, lands, and goods of the other party; but if conquered, the reverſe takes place. If a *Manahoone* kill the *Toutou*, or ſlave of a Chief, the latter ſends people to take poſſeſſion of the lands and houſe of the former, who flies either to ſome other part of the iſland, or to ſome of the neighbouring iſlands. After ſome months he returns, and finding his ſtock of hogs much increaſed, he offers a large preſent of theſe, with ſome red feathers, and other valuable articles, to the *Toutou*'s maſter, who generally accepts the compenſation, and permits him to repoſſeſs his houſe and lands. This practice is the height of venality and injuſtice; and the ſlayer of the ſlave ſeems to be under no farther neceſſity of abſconding, than to impoſe upon the lower claſs of people who are the ſufferers. For it does not appear, that the Chief has the leaſt power to puniſh this *Manahoone;* but the whole management marks a colluſion between him and his ſuperior, to gratify the revenge of the former, and the avarice of the latter. Indeed, we need not wonder that the killing of a man ſhould be conſidered as ſo venial an offence, amongſt a people who do not conſider it as any crime at all, to murder their own children. When, talking to them about ſuch inſtances of unnatural cruelty, and aſking, whether the Chiefs or principal people were not angry, and did not puniſh them? I was told, that the Chief neither could nor would interfere in ſuch caſes; and that every one had a right to do with his own child what he pleaſed.

Though the productions, the people, and the cuſtoms and manners of all the iſlands in the neighbourhood, may, in general, be reckoned the ſame as at Otaheite, there are a few

1777. December. a few differences which ſhould be mentioned; as this may lead to an inquiry about more material ones hereafter, if ſuch there be, of which we are now ignorant.

With regard to the little iſland Mataia, or Oſnaburgh Iſland, which lies twenty leagues Eaſt of Otaheite, and belongs to a Chief of that place, who gets from thence a kind of tribute; a different dialect from that of Otaheite is there ſpoken. The men of Mataia alſo wear their hair very long; and, when they fight, cover their arms with a ſubſtance which is beſet with ſharks teeth, and their bodies with a ſort of ſhagreen, being ſkin of fiſhes. At the ſame time, they are ornamented with poliſhed pearl ſhells, which make a prodigious glittering in the ſun; and they have a very large one, that covers them before, like a ſhield or breaſt-plate.

The language of Otaheite has many words, and even phraſes, quite unlike thoſe of the iſlands to the Weſtward of it, which all agree; and it is remarkable for producing great quantities of that delicious fruit we called apples, which are found in none of the others, except Eimeo. It has alſo the advantage of producing an odoriferous wood, called *eaboi*, which is highly valued at the other iſles where there is none; nor even in the South Eaſt peninſula, or Tiaraboo, though joining it. Huaheine and Eimeo, again, are remarkable for producing greater quantities of yams than the other iſlands. And at Mouroa, there is a particular bird, found upon the hills, much eſteemed for its white feathers; at which place there is alſo ſaid to be ſome of the apples, though it be the moſt remote of the Society Iſlands from Otaheite and Eimeo, where they are produced.

Though the religion of all the iſlands be the ſame, each of them has its particular, or tutelar God; whoſe names,

according to the beſt information I could receive, are ſet down in the following liſt: 1777. December.

Gods of the Iſles.

Huaheine,	*Tanne.*
Ulietea,	*Ooro.*
Otaha,	*Tanne.*
Bolabola,	*Oraa.*
Mouroóa,	*Otoo, ee weiahoo.*
Toobaee,	*Tamouee.*
Tabooymanoo, or Saunders's Iſland, which is ſubject to Huaheine,	*Taroa.*
Eimeo,	*Oroo hadoo.*
Otaheite, Otaheite nooe,	*Ooroo.*
Otaheite, Tiaraboo, *Opoonooa*, and *Whatootceree*,	whom they have lately changed for Oraa, God of Bolabola.
Mataia, or Ofnaburgh Iſland,	*Tooboo, toobooai, Ry maraiva.*
The low iſles, Eaſtward,	*Tammaree.*

Beſides the cluſter of high iſlands from Mataia to Mouroóa inclusive, the people of Otaheite are acquainted with a low uninhabited iſland, which they name Mopeeha, and ſeems to be Howe's Iſland, laid down to the Weſtward of Mouroóa in our late charts of this ocean. To this the inhabitants of the moſt leeward iſlands ſometimes go. There are

1777. December. are alſo ſeveral low iſlands, to the North Eaſtward of Otaheite, which they have ſometimes viſited, but not conſtantly; and are ſaid to be only at the diſtance of two days ſail with a fair wind. They were thus named to me:

Mataeeva,
Oanaa, { called Oannah in Dalrymple's Letter to Hawkeſworth.
Taboohoe,
Awehee,
Kaoora,
Orootooa,
Otavaoo, where are large pearls.

The inhabitants of theſe iſles come more frequently to Otaheite, and the other neighbouring high iſlands, from whoſe natives they differ in being of a darker colour, with a fiercer aſpect, and differently punctured. I was informed, that at Mataeeva, and others of them, it is a cuſtom for the men to give their daughters to ſtrangers who arrive amongſt them; but the pairs muſt be five nights lying near each other, without preſuming to proceed farther. On the ſixth evening, the father of the young woman treats his gueſt with food, and informs his daughter, that ſhe muſt, that night, receive him as her huſband. The ſtranger, however, muſt not offer to expreſs the leaſt diſlike, though the bed-fellow allotted to him ſhould be ever ſo diſagreeable; for this is conſidered as an unpardonable affront, and is puniſhed with death. Forty men of Bolabola, who, incited by curioſity, had roamed as far as Mataeeva in a canoe, were treated in this manner; one of them having incautiouſly mentioned his diſlike of the woman who fell to his lot, in the hearing of a boy who informed her father.

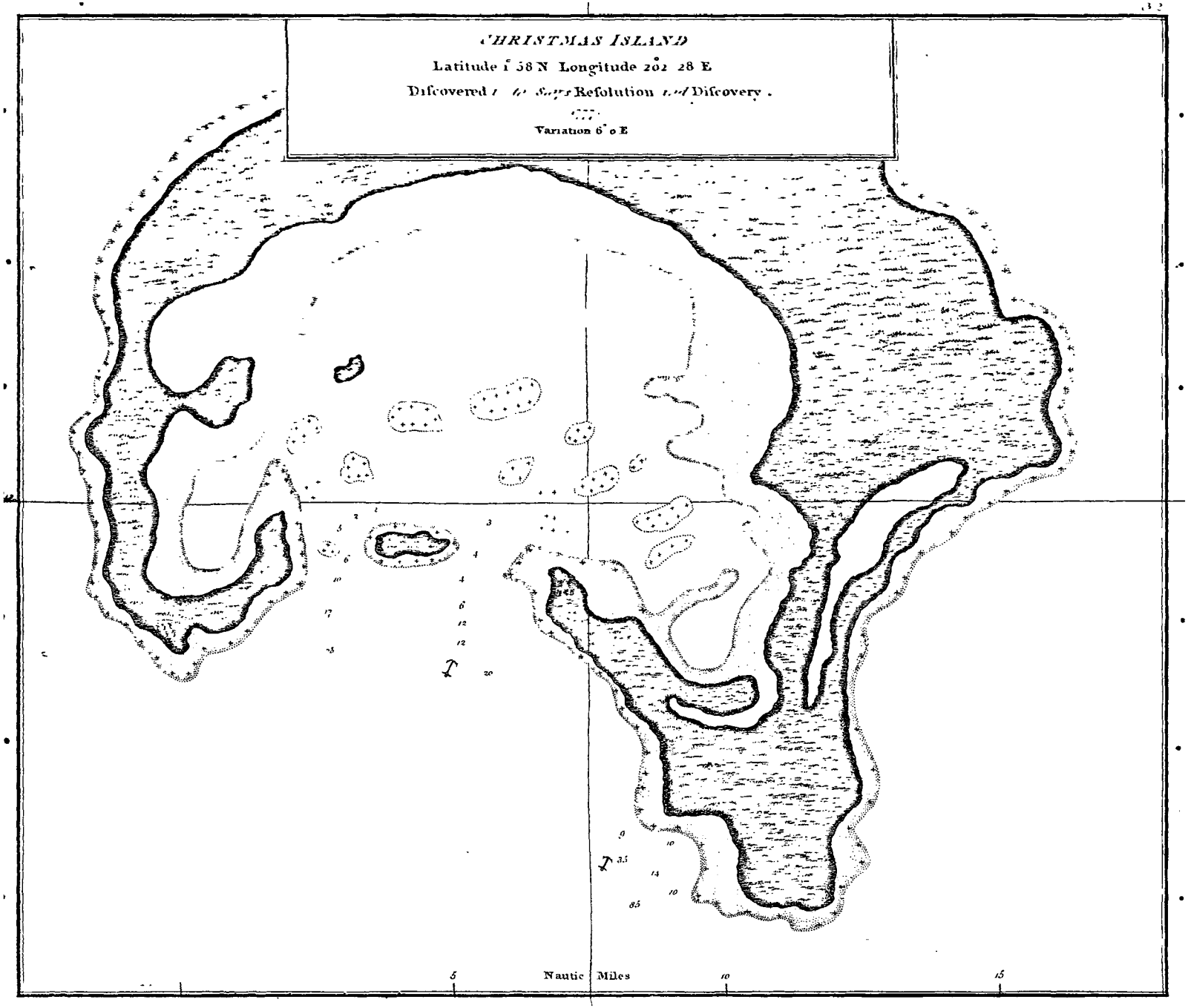
ther. In conſequence of this, the Mateevans fell upon them; but theſe warlike people killed three times their own number; though with the loſs of all their party, except five. Theſe hid themſelves in the woods, and took an opportunity, when the others were burying their dead, to enter ſome houſes, where, having provided themſelves with victuals and water, they carried them on board a canoe, in which they made their eſcape; and, after paſſing Mataia, at which they would not touch, at laſt arrived ſafe at Eimeo. The Bolabolans, however, were ſenſible enough that their travellers had been to blame; for a canoe from Mateeva, arriving ſome time after at Bolabola, ſo far were they from retaliating upon them for the death of their countrymen, that they acknowledged they had deſerved their fate, and treated their viſiters kindly. 1777. December.

Theſe low iſles are, doubtleſs, the fartheſt navigation, which thoſe of Otaheite, and the Society Iſlands, perform at preſent. It ſeems to be a groundleſs ſuppoſition, made by Monſ. de Bougainville, that they made voyages of the prodigious extent* he mentions; for I found, that it is reckoned a ſort of a prodigy, that a canoe, once driven by a ſtorm from Otaheite, ſhould have fallen in with Mopeeha, or Howe's Iſland, though ſo near, and directly to leeward. The knowledge they have of other diſtant iſlands is, no doubt, traditional; and has been communicated to them by the natives of thoſe iſlands, driven accidentally upon their coaſts, who, beſides giving them the names, could eaſily inform them of the direction in which the places lie from whence they came, and of the number of days they had been upon

* See *Bougainville's Voyage autour du Monde*, p. 228. where we are told, that theſe people ſometimes navigate at the diſtance of more than three hundred leagues.

1777. December. the ſea. In this manner, it may be ſuppoſed, that the natives of Wateeoo have increaſed their catalogue by the addition of Otaheite and its neighbouring iſles, from the people we met with there, and alſo of the other iſlands theſe had heard of. We may thus account for that extenſive knowledge attributed, by the gentlemen of the Endeavour *, to Tupia, in ſuch matters. And, with all due deference to his veracity, I preſume that it was, by the ſame means of information, that he was able to direct the ſhip to Oheteroa, without having ever been there himſelf, as he pretended; which, on many accounts, is very improbable."

* Hawkeſworth's Collection, Vol. ii. p. 278.


CHRISTMAS ISLAND
Latitude 1° 58 N Longitude 202 28 E
Discovered by Capt. Cook's Resolution and Discovery.
Variation 6° 0 E
5
Nautic Miles
10
15

CHAP. X.

Progreſs of the Voyage, after leaving the Society Iſlands.—Chriſtmas Iſland diſcovered, and Station of the Ships there.—Boats ſent aſhore.—Great Succeſs in catching Turtle.—An Eclipſe of the Sun obſerved.—Diſtreſs of two Seamen who had loſt their Way.—Inſcription left in a Bottle.—Account of the Iſland.—Its Soil.—Trees and Plants.—Birds.—Its Size.—Form.—Situation.—Anchoring Ground.

AFTER leaving Bolabola, I ſteered to the Northward, cloſe-hawled, with the wind between North Eaſt and Eaſt; hardly ever having it to the Southward of Eaſt, till after we had croſſed the line, and had got into North latitudes. So that our courſe, made good, was always to the Weſt of North, and, ſometimes, no better than North Weſt. 1777. December. Monday 8.

Though ſeventeen months had now elapſed ſince our departure from England, during which, we had not, upon the whole, been unprofitably employed, I was ſenſible that, with regard to the principal object of my inſtructions, our voyage was, at this time, only beginning; and, therefore, my attention to every circumſtance that might contribute toward our ſafety, and our ultimate ſucceſs, was now to be called forth anew. With this view I had examined into the ſtate of our proviſions at the laſt iſlands; and, as ſoon as I had left them, and got beyond the extent of my former diſ-

1777. December. coveries, I ordered a ſurvey to be taken of all the boatſwain's and carpenter's ſtores that were in the ſhips, that I might be fully informed of the quantity, ſtate, and condition of every article; and, by that means, know how to uſe them to the greateſt advantage.

Before I ſailed from the Society Iſlands, I loſt no opportunity of inquiring of the inhabitants, if there were any iſlands in a North or a North Weſt direction from them; but I did not find that they knew of any. Nor did we meet with any thing that indicated the vicinity of land, till we came to about the latitude of 8° South, where we began to ſee birds; ſuch as boobies, tropic and men-of-war-birds, tern, and ſome other ſorts. At this time, our longitude was 205° Eaſt. Mendana, in his firſt voyage in 1568*, diſcovered an iſland which he named Iſla de Jeſus, in latitude 6° 45′ South, and 1450 leagues from Callao, which is 200° Eaſt longitude from Greenwich. We croſſed this latitude near a hundred leagues to the Eaſtward of this longitude, and ſaw there many of the above-mentioned birds; which are ſeldom known to go very far from land.

Monday 22. Tueſday 23. In the night, between the 22d and 23d, we croſſed the line in the longitude of 203° 15′ Eaſt. Here the variation of the compaſs was 6° 30′ Eaſt nearly.

Wedneſ. 24. On the 24th, about half an hour after day-break, land was diſcovered bearing North Eaſt by Eaſt, half Eaſt. Upon a nearer approach, it was found to be one of thoſe low iſlands ſo common in this ocean; that is, a narrow bank of land incloſing the ſea within. A few cocoa-nut trees were ſeen in two or three places; but, in general, the land had a very barren appearance. At noon, it extended from North Eaſt by Eaſt, to South by Eaſt, half Eaſt, about four miles

* See Dalrymple's Collection, Vol. i. p. 45.

diſtant. The wind was at Eaſt South Eaſt; ſo that we were under a neceſſity of making a few boards, to get up to the lee, or Weſt ſide; where we found from forty to twenty and fourteen fathoms water, over a bottom of fine ſand; the leaſt depth about half a mile from the breakers, and the greateſt about one mile. The meeting with ſoundings determined me to anchor, with a view to try to get ſome turtle; for the iſland ſeemed be a likely place to meet with them, and to be without inhabitants. Accordingly, we dropped anchor in thirty fathoms; and then a boat was diſpatched to examine whether it was practicable to land; of which I had ſome doubt, as the ſea broke in a dreadful ſurf all along the ſhore. When the boat returned, the officer, whom I had intruſted with this examination, reported to me, that he could ſee no place where a boat could land; but that there was great abundance of fiſh in the ſhoal water, without the breakers. 1777. December.

At day-break, the next morning, I ſent two boats, one from each ſhip, to ſearch more accurately for a landing-place; and, at the ſame time, two others, to fiſh at a grappling near the ſhore. Theſe laſt returned about eight o'clock, with upward of two hundred weight of fiſh. Encouraged by this ſucceſs, they were diſpatched again after breakfaſt; and I then went in another boat, to take a view of the coaſt, and attempt landing; but this I found to be wholly impracticable. Toward noon, the two boats, ſent on the ſame ſearch, returned. The maſter, who was in that belonging to the Reſolution, reported to me, that, about a league and a half to the North, was a break in the land, and a channel into the *lagoon*, conſequently, that there was a fit place for landing; and that he had found the ſame ſoundings off this entrance, as we had where we now lay. In conſe- Thurſday 25.

quence

1777. December. quence of this report the ſhips weighed anchor, and, after two or three trips, came to again in twenty fathoms water, over a bottom of fine dark ſand, before a ſmall iſland that lies at the entrance of the *lagoon*; and on each ſide of which there is a channel leading into it; but only fit for boats. The water in the *lagoon* itſelf is all very ſhallow.

Friday 26. On the 26th, in the morning, I ordered Captain Clerke to ſend a boat, with an officer, to the South Eaſt part of the *lagoon*, to look for turtle; and Mr. King and I went each in a boat to the North Eaſt part. I intended to have gone to the moſt Eaſterly extremity; but the wind blew too freſh to allow it, and obliged us to land more to leeward, on a ſandy flat, where we caught one turtle; the only one that we ſaw in the *lagoon*. We walked, or rather waded, through the water, to an iſland; where finding nothing but a few birds, I left it, and proceeded to the land that bounds the ſea to the North Weſt, leaving Mr. King to obſerve the ſun's meridian altitude. I found this land to be even more barren than the iſland I had been upon; but walking over to the ſea-coaſt, I ſaw five turtles cloſe to the ſhore. One of theſe we caught; and the reſt made their eſcape. Not ſeeing any more, I returned on board, as did Mr. King ſoon after, without having ſeen one turtle. We, however, did not deſpair of getting a ſupply; for ſome of Captain Clerke's officers, who had been aſhore on the land to the Southward of the channel leading into the *lagoon*, had been more fortunate, and caught ſeveral there.

Saturday 27. In the morning of the 27th, the pinnace and cutter, under the command of Mr. King, were ſent to the South Eaſt part of the iſland, within the *lagoon*; and the ſmall cutter to the Northward, where I had been the day before;

both parties being ordered upon the ſame ſervice, to catch turtle. Captain Clerke having had ſome of his people on ſhore all night, they had been ſo fortunate as to turn between forty and fifty on the ſand, which were brought on board, with all expedition, this day. And in the afternoon, the party I had ſent Northward returned with ſix. They were ſent back again, and remained there till we left the iſland; having in general pretty good ſucceſs. 1777. December.

On the 28th, I landed, in company with Mr. Bayly, on the iſland which lies between the two channels into the *lagoon*, to prepare the teleſcopes for obſerving the approaching eclipſe of the ſun; which was one great inducement to my anchoring here. About noon, Mr. King returned with one boat, and eight turtles; leaving ſeven behind to be brought by the other boat, whoſe people were employed in catching more; and, in the evening, the ſame boat was ſent with water and proviſions for them. Mr. Williamſon now went to ſuperintend this duty in the room of Mr. King, who remained on board, to attend the obſervation of the eclipſe. Sunday 28.

The next day, Mr. Williamſon diſpatched the two boats back to the ſhip, laden with turtle. At the ſame time, he ſent me a meſſage, deſiring, that the boats might be ordered round by ſea, as he had found a landing-place on the South Eaſt ſide of the iſland, where moſt of the turtle were caught; ſo that, by ſending the boats thither, the trouble would be ſaved of carrying them over the land to the inſide of the *lagoon*, as had been hitherto done. The boats were, accordingly, diſpatched to the place which he pointed out. Monday 29.

On the morning of the 30th, the day when the eclipſe was to happen, Mr. King, Mr. Bayly, and myſelf, went aſhore, on the ſmall iſland above-mentioned, to attend the obſervation. Tueſday 30.

1777. December. obſervation. The ſky was over-caſt, till paſt nine o'clock, when the clouds about the ſun diſperſed long enough to take its altitude, to rectify the time by the watch we made uſe of. After this, it was again obſcured, till about thirty minutes paſt nine; and then we found, that the eclipſe was begun. We now fixed the micrometers to the teleſcopes, and obſerved, or meaſured, the uneclipſed part of the ſun's diſk. At theſe obſervations, I continued about three-quarters of an hour before the end, when I left off; being, in fact, unable to continue them longer, on account of the great heat of the ſun, increaſed by the reflection from the ſand.

The ſun was clouded at times; but it was clear, when the eclipſe ended, the time of which was obſerved as follows:

			H.	M.	S.	
By	Mr. Bayly	at	0	26	3	Apparent Time P. M.
	Mr. King		0	26	1	
	Myſelf		0	25	37	

Mr. Bayly and I obſerved with the large achromatic teleſcopes; and Mr. King with a reflector. As Mr. Bayly's teleſcope and mine were of the ſame magnifying power, I ought not to have differed ſo much from him as I did. Perhaps, it was, in part, if not wholly, owing to a protuberance in the moon, which eſcaped my notice, but was ſeen by both the other gentlemen.

In the afternoon, the boats and turtling party, at the South Eaſt part of the iſland, all returned on board, except a ſeaman belonging to the Diſcovery, who had been miſſing two days. There were two of them at firſt, who had loſt their way; but diſagreeing about the moſt probable track to bring them back to their companions, they had ſeparated;

and

and one of them joined the party, after having been abſent twenty-four hours, and been in great diſtreſs. Not a drop of freſh water could be had, for there is none upon the whole iſland; nor was there a ſingle cocoa-nut tree on that part of it. In order to allay his thirſt, he had recourſe to the ſingular expedient of killing turtle, and drinking their blood. His mode of refreſhing himſelf, when weary, of which he ſaid he felt the good effects, was equally whimſical. He undreſſed himſelf, and lay down for ſome time in the ſhallow water upon the beach. 1777. December.

It was a matter of ſurprize to every one, how theſe two men could contrive to loſe themſelves. The land over which they had to travel, from the ſea-coaſt to the *lagoon*, where the boats lay, was not more than three miles acroſs; nor was there any thing to obſtruct their view; for the country was a flat, with a few ſhrubs ſcattered upon it; and, from many parts of it, the maſts of the ſhips could eaſily be ſeen. But this was a rule of direction they never once thought of; nor did they recollect in what quarter of the iſland the ſhips had anchored; and they were as much at a loſs how to get back to them, or to the party they had ſtraggled from, as if they had but juſt dropped from the clouds. Conſidering how ſtrange a ſet of beings the generality of ſeamen are, when on ſhore, inſtead of being ſurprized that theſe two men ſhould thus loſe their way, it is rather to be wondered at, that no more of the party were miſſing. Indeed, one of thoſe who landed with me, was in a ſimilar ſituation; but he had ſagacity enough to know that the ſhips were to leeward, and got on board almoſt as ſoon as it was diſcovered that he had been left behind.

1777. December. As ſoon as Captain Clerke knew, that one of the ſtragglers was ſtill in this awkward ſituation, he ſent a party in ſearch of him; but neither the man nor the party having come
Wedneſ. 31. back, the next morning, I ordered two boats into the *lagoon*, to go different ways, in proſecution of the ſearch. Not long after, Captain Clerke's party returned with their loſt companion; and my boats having now no object left, I called them back by ſignal. This poor fellow muſt have ſuffered far greater diſtreſs than the other ſtraggler; not only as having been loſt a longer time, but as we found that he was too ſqueamiſh to drink turtle's blood.

Having ſome cocoa-nuts and yams on board, in a ſtate of vegetation, I ordered them to be planted on the little iſland where we had obſerved the eclipſe; and ſome melon-ſeeds were ſown in another place. I alſo left, on the little iſland, a bottle containing this inſcription:

Georgius Tertius, Rex, 31 Decembris, 1777.
Naves { *Reſolution, Jac. Cook, Pr.*
{ *Diſcovery, Car. Clerke, Pr.*

1778. January. Thurſday 1. On the 1ſt of January 1778, I ſent boats to bring on board all our parties from the land, and the turtle they had caught. Before this was completed, it was late in the afternoon; ſo that I did not think proper to ſail till next morning. We got at this iſland, to both ſhips, about three hundred turtle, weighing, one with another, about ninety or a hundred pounds. They were all of the green kind; and perhaps as good as any in the world. We alſo caught, with hook and line, as much fiſh as we could conſume, during our ſtay. They conſiſted principally of cavallies, of different ſizes; large and ſmall ſnappers; and a few of two

ſorts

ſorts of rock-fiſh; one with numerous ſpots of blue, and the other with whitiſh ſtreaks ſcattered about. 1778. January.

The ſoil of this iſland, in ſome places, is light and black, evidently compoſed of decayed vegetables, the dung of birds, and ſand. There are other places again, where nothing but marine productions, ſuch as broken coral ſtones, and ſhells, are to be ſeen. Theſe are depoſited in long, narrow ridges, lying in a parallel direction with the ſea-coaſt, not unlike a ploughed field; and muſt have been thrown up by the waves, though, at this time, they do not reach within a mile of ſome of theſe places. This ſeems to furniſh an inconteſtable proof, that the iſland has been produced by acceſſions from the ſea, and is in a ſtate of increaſe; for not only the broken pieces of coral, but many of the ſhells, are too heavy and large to have been brought by any birds, from the beach, to the places where they now lie. Not a drop of freſh water was any where found, though frequently dug for. We met with ſeveral ponds of ſalt water, which had no viſible communication with the ſea, and muſt, therefore, in all probability, be filled by the water filtrating through the ſand, in high tides. One of the loſt men found ſome ſalt on the South Eaſt part of the iſland. But, though this was an article of which we were in want, a man who could loſe himſelf, as he did, and not know whether he was travelling Eaſt, Weſt, North, or South, was not to be depended upon as a fit guide to conduct us to the place.

There were not the ſmalleſt traces of any human being having ever been here before us; and, indeed, ſhould any one be ſo unfortunate as to be accidentally driven upon the iſland, or left there, it is hard to ſay, that he could be able

1778. January. to prolong exiſtence. There is, indeed, abundance of birds and fiſh; but no viſible means of allaying thirſt, nor any vegetable that could ſupply the place of bread, or correct the bad effects of an animal diet; which, in all probability, would ſoon prove fatal alone. On the few cocoa-trees upon the iſland, the number of which did not exceed thirty, very little fruit was found; and, in general, what was found, was either not fully grown, or had the juice ſalt, or brackiſh. So that a ſhip touching here, muſt expect nothing but fiſh and turtle; and of theſe an abundant ſupply may be depended upon.

On ſome parts of the land were a few low trees. Mr. Anderſon gave me an account, alſo, of two ſmall ſhrubs, and of two or three ſmall plants; all which we had ſeen on Palmerſton's Iſland, and Otakootaia. There was alſo a ſpecies of *ſida*, or Indian mallow; a ſort of purſlain; and another ſmall plant, that ſeemed, from its leaves, a *meſembryanthemum*; with two ſpecies of graſs. But each of theſe vegetable productions was in ſo ſmall a quantity, and grew with ſo much languor, that one is almoſt ſurprized that the ſpecies do not become extinct.

Under the low trees above-mentioned, ſat infinite numbers of a new ſpecies of tern, or egg-bird. Theſe are black above, and white below, with a white arch on the forehead; and are rather larger than the common noddy. Moſt of them had lately hatched their young; which lay under old ones, upon the bare ground. The reſt had eggs; of which they only lay one, larger than that of a pigeon, bluiſh and ſpeckled with black. There were alſo a good many common boobies; a ſort that are almoſt like a gannet; and a ſooty, or chocolate-coloured one, with a white

belly. To this liſt we muſt add men-of-war-birds; tropic-birds; curlews; ſand-pipers; a ſmall land-bird like a hedge-ſparrow; land-crabs; ſmall lizards; and rats. 1778. January.

As we kept our Chriſtmas here, I called this diſcovery Chriſtmas Iſland. I judge it to be about fifteen or twenty leagues in circumference. It ſeemed to be of a ſemicircular form; or like the moon in the laſt quarter, the two horns being the North and South points; which bear from each other nearly North by Eaſt, and South by Weſt, four or five leagues diſtant. This Weſt ſide, or the little iſle at the entrance into the *lagoon*, upon which we obſerved the eclipſe, lies in the latitude of 1° 59′ North, and in the longitude of 202° 30′ Eaſt, determined by a conſiderable number of lunar obſervations, which differed only 7′ from the time-keeper; it being ſo much leſs. The variation of the compaſs was 6° 22½′ Eaſt; and the dip of the North end of the needle 11° 54′.

Chriſtmas Iſland, like moſt others in this ocean, is bounded by a reef of coral rocks, which extends but a little way from the ſhore. Farther out than this reef, on the Weſt ſide, is a bank of fine ſand, extending a mile into the ſea. On this bank is good anchorage, in any depth between eighteen and thirty fathoms. In leſs than the firſt mentioned depth, the reef would be too near; and in more than the laſt, the edge of the bank would not be at a ſufficient diſtance. During the time we lay here, the wind blew, conſtantly, a freſh gale at Eaſt, or Eaſt by South, except one or two days. We had, always, a great ſwell from the Northward, which broke upon the reef, in a prodigious ſurf. We had found this ſwell before we came to the iſland; and it continued for ſome days after we left it.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

Some Iſlands diſcovered.—Account of the Natives of Atooi, who come off to the Ships, and their Behaviour on going on board.—One of them killed.—Precautions uſed to prevent Intercourſe with the Females.—A watering-place found.—Reception upon landing.—Excurſion into the Country.—A Morai viſited and deſcribed.—Graves of the Chiefs, and of the human Sacrifices, there buried.—Another Iſland, called Oneeheow viſited.—Ceremonies performed by the Natives, who go off to the Ships.—Reaſons for believing that they are Cannibals.—A Party ſent aſhore, who remain two Nights.—Account of what paſſed on landing.—The Ships leave the Iſlands, and proceed to the North.

1778. January. Friday 2. ON the 2d of January, at day-break, we weighed anchor, and reſumed our courſe to the North; having fine weather, and a gentle breeze at Eaſt, and Eaſt South Eaſt, till we got into the latitude of 7° 45′ North, and the longitude of 205° Eaſt, where we had one calm day. This was ſucceeded by a North Eaſt by Eaſt, and Eaſt North Eaſt wind. At firſt it blew faint, but freſhened as we advanced to the North. We continued to ſee birds every day, of the ſorts laſt mentioned; ſometimes in greater numbers than others; and between the latitude of 10° and 11°, we ſaw ſeveral turtle. All theſe are looked upon as ſigns of the vicinity of

land. However, we diſcovered none till day-break, in the morning of the 18th, when an iſland made its appearance, bearing North Eaſt by Eaſt; and, ſoon after, we ſaw more land bearing North, and entirely detached from the former. Both had the appearance of being high land. At noon, the firſt bore North Eaſt by Eaſt, half Eaſt, by eſtimation about eight or nine leagues diſtant; and an elevated hill, near the Eaſt end of the other, bore North, half Weſt. Our latitude, at this time, was 21° 12′, North; and longitude 200° 41′, Eaſt. We had now light airs and calms, by turns; ſo that, at ſunſet, we were not leſs than nine or ten leagues from the neareſt land. 1778. January. Sunday 18.

On the 19th, at ſun-riſe, the iſland firſt ſeen, bore Eaſt, ſeveral leagues diſtant. This being directly to windward, which prevented our getting near it, I ſtood for the other, which we could reach; and, not long after, diſcovered a third iſland in the direction of Weſt North Weſt, as far diſtant as land could be ſeen. We had now a fine breeze at Eaſt by North; and I ſteered for the Eaſt end of the ſecond iſland; which, at noon, extended from North, half Eaſt, to Weſt North Weſt, a quarter Weſt, the neareſt part being about two leagues diſtant. At this time, we were in ſome doubt whether or no the land before us was inhabited; but this doubt was ſoon cleared up, by ſeeing ſome canoes coming off from the ſhore, toward the ſhips. I immediately brought to, to give them time to join us. They had from three to ſix men each; and, on their approach, we were agreeably ſurprized to find, that they ſpoke the language of Otaheite, and of the other iſlands we had lately viſited. It required but very little addreſs, to get them to come along-ſide; but no intreaties could prevail upon any of them to come on board. I tied ſome braſs medals to a rope, Monday 19.

1778. January. rope, and gave them to thoſe in one of the canoes, who, in return, tied ſome ſmall mackerel to the rope, as an equivalent. This was repeated; and ſome ſmall nails, or bits of iron, which they valued more than any other article, were given them. For theſe they exchanged more fiſh, and a ſweet potatoe; a ſure ſign that they had ſome notion of bartering; or, at leaſt, of returning one preſent for another. They had nothing elſe in their canoes, except ſome large gourd ſhells, and a kind of fiſhing-net; but one of them offered for ſale the piece of ſtuff that he wore round his waiſt, after the manner of the other iſlands. Theſe people were of a brown colour; and, though of the common ſize, were ſtoutly made. There was little difference in the caſts of their colour, but a conſiderable variation in their features; ſome of their viſages not being very unlike thoſe of Europeans. The hair of moſt of them was cropt pretty ſhort; others had it flowing looſe; and, with a few, it was tied in a bunch on the crown of the head. In all, it ſeemed to be naturally black; but moſt of them had ſtained it, as is the practice of the Friendly Iſlanders, with ſome ſtuff which gave it a brown or burnt colour. In general, they wore their beards. They had no ornaments about their perſons, nor did we obſerve that their ears were perforated; but ſome were punctured on the hands, or near the groin, though in a ſmall degree; and the bits of cloth, which they wore, were curiouſly ſtained with red, black, and white colours. They ſeemed very mild; and had no arms of any kind, if we except ſome ſmall ſtones, which they had evidently brought for their own defence; and theſe they threw overboard when they found that they were not wanted.

Seeing no ſigns of an anchoring-place at this Eaſtern extremé of the iſland, I bore away to leeward, and ranged along

along the South Eaſt ſide, at the diſtance of half a league from the ſhore. As ſoon as we made ſail, the canoes left us; but others came off, as we proceeded along the coaſt, bringing with them roaſting-pigs, and ſome very fine potatoes, which they exchanged, as the others had done, for whatever was offered to them. Several ſmall pigs were purchaſed for a ſixpenny nail; ſo that we again found ourſelves in a land of plenty; and juſt at the time when the turtle, which we had ſo fortunately procured at Chriſtmas Iſland, were nearly expended. We paſſed ſeveral villages; ſome ſeated near the ſea, and others farther up the country. The inhabitants of all of them crowded to the ſhore, and collected themſelves on the elevated places to view the ſhips. The land upon this ſide of the iſland riſes, in a gentle ſlope, from the ſea to the foot of the mountains, which occupy the centre of the country, except at one place near the Eaſt end, where they riſe directly from the ſea, and ſeemed to be formed of nothing but ſtone, or rocks lying in horizontal *ſtrata*. We ſaw no wood, but what was up in the interior part of the iſland, except a few trees about the villages; near which, alſo, we could obſerve ſeveral plantations of plantains and ſugar-canes, and ſpots that ſeemed cultivated for roots. 1778. January.

We continued to ſound, without ſtriking ground with a line of fifty fathoms, till we came abreaſt of a low point, which is about the middle of this ſide of the iſland, or rather nearer the North Weſt end. Here we met with twelve and fourteen fathoms, over a rocky bottom. Being paſt this point, from which the coaſt trended more Northerly, we had twenty, then ſixteen, twelve, and, at laſt, five fathoms over a ſandy bottom. The laſt ſoundings were about a mile from the ſhore. Night now put a ſtop to any farther reſearches;

1778. January. Tueſday 20. and we ſpent it ſtanding off and on. The next morning, we ſtood in for the land, and were met with ſeveral canoes filled with people; ſome of whom took courage, and ventured on board.

In the courſe of my ſeveral voyages, I never before met with the natives of any place ſo much aſtoniſhed, as theſe people were, upon entering a ſhip. Their eyes were continually flying from object to object; the wildneſs of their looks and geſtures fully expreſſing their entire ignorance about every thing they ſaw, and ſtrongly marking to us, that, till now, they had never been viſited by Europeans, nor been acquainted with any of our commodities, except iron; which, however, it was plain, they had only heard of, or had known it in ſome ſmall quantity, brought to them at ſome diſtant period. They ſeemed only to underſtand, that it was a ſubſtance, much better adapted to the purpoſes of cutting, or of boring of holes, than any thing their own country produced. They aſked for it by the name of *hamaite*, probably referring to ſome inſtrument, in the making of which iron could be uſefully employed; for they applied that name to the blade of a knife, though we could be certain that they had no idea of that particular inſtrument; nor could they, at all, handle it properly. For the ſame reaſon, they frequently called iron by the name of *toe*, which, in their language, ſignifies a hatchet, or rather a kind of adze. On aſking them what iron was, they immediately anſwered, "We do not know; you know what it is, and we only underſtand it as *toe*, or *hamaite*." When we ſhewed them ſome beads, they aſked firſt, "What they were; and then, whether they ſhould eat them." But on their being told, that they were to be hung in their ears, they returned them as uſeleſs. They were equally indifferent

ferent as to a looking-glaſs, which was offered them, and returned it, for the ſame reaſon; but ſufficiently expreſſed their deſire for *hamaite* and *toe*, which they wiſhed might be very large. Plates of earthen-ware, china-cups, and other ſuch things, were ſo new to them, that they aſked if they were made of wood; but wiſhed to have ſome, that they might carry them to be looked at on ſhore. They were, in ſome reſpects, naturally well bred; or, at leaſt, fearful of giving offence, aſking, where they ſhould ſit down, whether they might ſpit upon the deck, and the like. Some of them repeated a long prayer before they came on board; and others, afterward, ſung and made motions with their hands, ſuch as we had been accuſtomed to ſee in the dances of the iſlands we had lately viſited. There was another circumſtance, in which they alſo perfectly reſembled thoſe other iſlanders. At firſt, on their entering the ſhip, they endeavoured to ſteal every thing they came near; or rather to take it openly, as what we either ſhould not reſent, or not hinder. We ſoon convinced them of their miſtake; and if they, after ſome time, became leſs active in appropriating to themſelves whatever they took a fancy to, it was becauſe they found that we kept a watchful eye over them. 1778. January.

At nine o'clock, being pretty near the ſhore, I ſent three armed boats, under the command of Lieutenant Williamſon, to look for a landing-place, and for freſh water. I ordered him, that if he ſhould find it neceſſary to land in ſearch of the latter, not to ſuffer more than one man to go with him out of the boats. Juſt as they were putting off from the ſhip, one of the natives having ſtolen the butcher's cleaver, leaped overboard, got into his canoe, and haſtened to the ſhore, the boats purſuing him in vain.

1778. January. The order not to permit the crews of the boats to go on ſhore was iſſued, that I might do every thing in my power to prevent the importation of a fatal diſeaſe into this iſland, which I knew ſome of our men now laboured under, and which, unfortunately, had been already communicated by us to other iſlands in theſe ſeas. With the ſame view, I ordered all female viſiters to be excluded from the ſhips. Many of them had come off in the canoes. Their ſize, colour, and features did not differ much from thoſe of the men; and though their countenances were remarkably open and agreeable, there were few traces of delicacy to be ſeen, either in their faces, or other proportions. The only difference in their dreſs, was their having a piece of cloth about the body, reaching from near the middle, to half-way down the thighs, inſtead of the *maro* worn by the other ſex. They would as readily have favoured us with their company on board as the men; but I wiſhed to prevent all connection, which might, too probably, convey an irreparable injury to themſelves, and, through their means, to the whole nation. Another neceſſary precaution was taken, by ſtrictly enjoining, that no perſon, known to be capable of propagating the infection, ſhould be ſent upon duty out of the ſhips.

Whether theſe regulations, dictated by humanity, had the deſired effect, or no, time only can diſcover. I had been equally attentive to the ſame object, when I firſt viſited the Friendly Iſlands; yet I afterward found, with real concern, that I had not ſucceeded. And I am much afraid, that this will always be the caſe, in ſuch voyages as ours, whenever it is neceſſary to have a number of people on ſhore. The opportunities and inducements to an intercourſe between the ſexes are then too numerous to be guarded

againſt; and however confident we may be of the health of our men, we are often undeceived too late. It is even a matter of doubt with me, if it be always in the power of the moſt ſkilful of the faculty to pronounce, with any certainty, whether a perſon who has been under their care, in certain ſtages of this malady, is ſo effectually cured, as to leave no poſſibility of his being ſtill capable of communicating the taint. I think I could mention ſome inſtances which juſtify my preſuming to hazard this opinion. It is, likewiſe, well known, that, amongſt a number of men, there are, generally, to be found ſome ſo baſhful as to endeavour to conceal their labouring under any ſymptoms of this diſorder. And there are others, again, ſo profligate, as not to care to whom they communicate it. Of this laſt, we had an inſtance at Tongataboo, in the gunner of the Diſcovery, who had been ſtationed on ſhore to manage the trade for that ſhip. After he knew that he had contracted this diſeaſe, he continued to have connections with different women, who were ſuppoſed not to have already contracted it. His companions expoſtulated with him without effect, till Captain Clerke, hearing of this dangerous irregularity of conduct, ordered him on board. 1778. January.

While the boats were occupied in examining the coaſt, we ſtood on and off with the ſhips, waiting for their return. About noon, Mr. Williamſon came back, and reported, that he had ſeen a large pond behind a beach near one of the villages, which the natives told him contained freſh water; and that there was anchoring-ground before it. He alſo reported, that he had attempted to land in another place, but was prevented by the natives, who, coming down to the boats in great numbers, attempted to take away the oars, muſkets, and, in ſhort, every thing that they could lay

1778. January. lay hold of; and preſſed ſo thick upon him, that he was obliged to fire, by which one man was killed. But this unhappy circumſtance I did not know till after we had left the iſland; ſo that all my meaſures were directed as if nothing of the kind had happened. Mr. Williamſon told me, that, after the man fell, his countrymen took him up, carried him off, and then retired from the boat; but ſtill they made ſignals for our people to land, which he declined. It did not appear to Mr. Williamſon, that the natives had any deſign to kill, or even to hurt, any of his party; but they ſeemed excited by mere curioſity, to get from them what they had, being, at the ſame time, ready to give, in return, any thing of their own.

After the boats were on board, I diſpatched one of them to lie in the beſt anchoring-ground; and as ſoon as ſhe had got to this ſtation, I bore down with the ſhips, and anchored in twenty-five fathoms water; the bottom a fine grey ſand. The Eaſt point of the road, which was the low point before mentioned, bore South 51° Eaſt; the Weſt point, North 65° Weſt; and the village, behind which the water was ſaid to be, North Eaſt by Eaſt, diſtant one mile. But, little more than a quarter of a mile from us, there were breakers, which I did not ſee till after the Reſolution was placed. The Diſcovery anchored to the Eaſtward of us, and farther from the land. The ſhips being thus ſtationed, between three and four o'clock, I went aſhore with three armed boats, and twelve marines, to examine the water, and to try the diſpoſition of the inhabitants, ſeveral hundred of whom were aſſembled on a ſandy beach before the village; behind it was a narrow valley, the bottom of which was occupied by the piece of water.

The very inſtant I leaped on ſhore, the collected body of the natives all fell flat upon their faces, and remained in that very humble poſture, till, by expreſſive ſigns, I prevailed upon them to riſe. They then brought a great many ſmall pigs, which they preſented to me, with plantain-trees, uſing much the ſame ceremonies that we had ſeen practiſed, on ſuch occaſions, at the Society and other iſlands; and a long prayer being ſpoken by a ſingle perſon, in which others of the aſſembly ſometims joined. I expreſſed my acceptance of their proffered friendſhip, by giving them, in return, ſuch preſents as I had brought with me from the ſhip for that purpoſe. When this introductory buſineſs was finiſhed, I ſtationed a guard upon the beach, and got ſome of the natives to conduct me to the water, which proved to be very good, and in a proper ſituation for our purpoſe. It was ſo conſiderable, that it may be called a lake; and it extended farther up the country than we could ſee. Having ſatisfied myſelf about this very eſſential point, and about the peaceable diſpoſition of the natives, I returned on board; and then gave orders that every thing ſhould be in readineſs for landing and filling our water-caſks in the morning; when I went aſhore with the people employed in that ſervice, having a party of marines with us for a guard, who were ſtationed on the beach. 1778. January. Wedneſ. 21.

As ſoon as we landed, a trade was ſet on foot for hogs and potatoes, which the people of the iſland gave us in exchange for nails and pieces of iron, formed into ſomething like chiſſels. We met with no obſtruction in watering; on the contrary, the natives aſſiſted our men in rolling the caſks to and from the pool; and readily performed whatever we required. Every thing thus going on to my ſatisfaction, and conſidering my preſence on the ſpot as unneceſſary,

1778. January. ceſſary, I left the command to Mr. Williamſon, who had landed with me, and made an excurſion into the country, up the valley, accompanied by Mr. Anderſon and Mr. Webber; the former of whom was as well qualified to deſcribe with the pen, as the latter was to repreſent with his pencil, every thing we might meet with worthy of obſervation. A numerous train of natives followed us; and one of them, whom I had diſtinguiſhed for his activity in keeping the reſt in order, I made choice of as our guide. This man, from time to time, proclaimed our approach; and every one, whom we met, fell proſtrate upon the ground, and remained in that poſition till we had paſſed. This, as I afterward underſtood, is the mode of paying their reſpect to their own great Chiefs. As we ranged down the coaſt from the Eaſt, in the ſhips, we had obſerved at every village one or more elevated white objects, like pyramids or rather obeliſks; and one of theſe, which I gueſſed to be at leaſt fifty feet high, was very conſpicuous from the ſhip's anchoring ſtation, and ſeemed to be at no great diſtance up this valley. To have a nearer inſpection of it, was the principal object of my walk. Our guide perfectly underſtood that we wiſhed to be conducted to it. But it happened to be ſo placed, that we could not get at it, being ſeparated from us by the pool of water. However, there being another of the ſame kind within our reach, about half a mile off, upon our ſide of the valley, we ſet out to viſit that. The moment we got to it, we ſaw that it ſtood in a burying-ground, or *morai*; the reſemblance of which, in many reſpects, to thoſe we were ſo well acquainted with at other iſlands in this ocean, and particularly Otaheite, could not but ſtrike us; and we alſo ſoon found, that the ſeveral parts that compoſe it, were called by the ſame names. It was an oblong ſpace, of conſiderable

1778. January.

conſiderable extent, ſurrounded by a wall of ſtone, about four feet high. The ſpace incloſed was looſely paved with ſmaller ſtones; and at one end of it, ſtood what I call the pyramid, but, in the language of the iſland, is named *henananoo*; which appeared evidently to be an exact model of the larger one, obſerved by us from the ſhips. It was about four feet ſquare at the baſe, and about twenty feet high. The four ſides were compoſed of ſmall poles interwoven with twigs and branches, thus forming an indifferent wicker-work, hollow or open within, from bottom to top. It ſeemed to be rather in a ruinous ſtate; but there were ſufficient remaining marks, to ſhew, that it had originally been covered with a thin, light, grey cloth; which theſe people, it ſhould ſeem, conſecrate to religious purpoſes; as we could ſee a good deal of it hanging in different parts of the *morai*; and ſome of it had been forced upon me when I firſt landed. On each ſide of the pyramid were long pieces of wicker-work, called *hereanee*, in the ſame ruinous condition; with two ſlender poles, inclining to each other, at one corner, where ſome plantains were laid upon a board, fixed at the height of five or ſix feet. This they called *herairemy*; and informed us, that the fruit was an offering to their God, which makes it agree exactly with the *whatta* of Otaheite. Before the *henananoo* were a few pieces of wood, carved into ſomething like human figures, which, with a ſtone near two feet high, covered with pieces of cloth, called *hoho*, and conſecrated to *Tongarooa*, who is the God of theſe people, ſtill more and more reminded us of what we uſed to meet with in the *morais* of the iſlands we had lately left *. Adjoining to theſe, on the outſide of the *morai*, was a ſmall ſhed, no bigger than a dog-

* See the deſcription of the *morai*, in Otaheite, where the human ſacrifice was offered, at which Captain Cook was preſent.

1778. January. kennel, which they called *hareepahoo*; and before it was a grave, where, as we were told, the remains of a woman lay.

On the farther ſide of the area of the *morai*, ſtood a houſe or ſhed, about forty feet long, ten broad in the middle, each end being narrower, and about ten feet high. This, which, though much longer, was lower than their common dwelling-places, we were informed, was called *hemanaa*. The entrance into it was at the middle of the ſide, which was in the *morai*. On the farther ſide of this houſe, oppoſite the entrance, ſtood two wooden images, cut out of one piece, with pedeſtals, in all about three feet high; neither very indifferently deſigned nor executed. Theſe were ſaid to be *Eatooa no Vcheina*, or repreſentations of goddeſſes. On the head of one of them was a carved helmet, not unlike thoſe worn by the ancient warriors; and on that of the other, a cylindrical cap, reſembling the head-dreſs at Otaheite, called *tomou*; and both of them had pieces of cloth, tied about the loins, and hanging a conſiderable way down. At the ſide of each, was alſo a piece of carved wood, with bits of the cloth hung on them, in the ſame manner; and between, or before, the pedeſtals, lay a quantity of fern, in a heap. It was obvious, that this had been depoſited there, piece by piece, and at different times; for there was of it, in all ſtates, from what was quite decayed, to what was ſtill freſh and green.

In the middle of the houſe, and before the two images, was an oblong ſpace, incloſed by a low edging of ſtone, and covered with ſhreds of the cloth ſo often mentioned. This, on inquiry, we found, was the grave of ſeven Chiefs, whoſe names were enumerated, and the place was called *Heneene*. We had met already with ſo many ſtriking inſtances of reſemblance,

ſemblance, between the burying-place we were now viſiting, and thoſe of iſlands we had lately come from in the South Pacific, that we had little doubt in our minds, that the reſemblance exiſted alſo, in the ceremonies practiſed here, and particularly in the horrid one of offering human ſacrifices. Our ſuſpicions were too ſoon confirmed, by direct evidence. For, on coming out of the houſe, juſt on one ſide of the entrance, we ſaw a ſmall ſquare place, and another ſtill leſs, near it; and on aſking, what theſe were? Our guide immediately informed us, that in the one was buried a man who had been ſacrificed; a *Taata* (*Tanata* or *Tangata*, in this country) *taboo* (*tafoo*, as here pronounced); and in the other, a hog, which had alſo been made an offering to the divinity. At a little diſtance from theſe, near the middle of the *morai*, were three more of theſe ſquare, incloſed places, with two pieces of carved wood at each, and upon them a heap of fern. Theſe, we were told, were the graves of three Chiefs; and before them, was an oblong, incloſed ſpace, to which our conductor alſo gave the name of *Tangata-taboo*; telling us, ſo explicitly, that we could not miſtake his meaning, that three human ſacrifices had been buried there; that is, one at the funeral of each Chief. It was with moſt ſincere concern, that I could trace, on ſuch undoubted evidence, the prevalence of theſe bloody rites, throughout this immenſe ocean, amongſt people disjoined by ſuch a diſtance, and even ignorant of each other's exiſtence, though ſo ſtrongly marked as originally of the ſame nation. It was no ſmall addition to this concern, to reflect, that every appearance led us to believe, that the barbarous practice was very general here. The iſland ſeemed to abound with ſuch places of ſacrifice as this which we were now viſiting, and which appeared to be one of the moſt inconſiderable of

1778. January.

1778. January. them; being far leſs conſpicuous than ſeveral others which we had ſeen, as we ſailed along the coaſt, and particularly than that on the oppoſite ſide of the water, in this valley; the white *henanaoo*, or pyramid, of which, we were now almoſt ſure, derived its colour only from pieces of the conſecrated cloth laid over it. In ſeveral parts, within the incloſure of this burying-ground, were planted trees of the *cordia ſebeſtina*; ſome of the *morinda citrifolia*; and ſeveral plants of the *etee*, or *jejee*, of Tongataboo, with the leaves of which the *hemanaa* was thatched; and, as I obſerved, that this plant was not made uſe of in thatching their dwelling-houſes, probably it is reſerved entirely for religious purpoſes.

Our road to and from the *morai*, which I have deſcribed, lay through the plantations. The greateſt part of the ground was quite flat, with ditches full of water interſecting different parts, and roads that ſeemed artificially raiſed to ſome height. The interſpaces were, in general, planted with *taro*, which grows here with great ſtrength, as the fields are ſunk below the common level, ſo as to contain the water neceſſary to nouriſh the roots. This water probably comes from the ſame ſource, which ſupplies the large pool from which we filled our caſks. On the drier ſpaces were ſeveral ſpots, where the cloth-mulberry was planted, in regular rows; alſo growing vigorouſly, and kept very clean. The cocoa-trees were not in ſo thriving a ſtate, and were all low; but the plantain-trees made a better appearance; though they were not large. In general, the trees round this village, and which were ſeen at many of thoſe which we paſſed before we anchored, are the *cordia ſebeſtina*; but of a more diminutive ſize than the product of the Southern iſles. The greateſt part of the village ſtands near the beach, and conſiſts

ſiſts of above ſixty houſes there; but, perhaps, about forty more ſtand ſcattered about, farther up the country, toward the burying-place. 1778. January.

After we had examined, very carefully, every thing that was to be ſeen about the *morai*, and Mr. Webber had taken drawings of it, and of the adjoining country, we returned by a different route. I found a great crowd aſſembled at the beach; and a briſk trade for pigs, fowls, and roots, going on there, with the greateſt good order; though I did not obſerve any particular perſon, who took the lead amongſt the reſt of his countrymen. At noon, I went on board to dinner, and then ſent Mr. King, to command the party aſhore. He was to have gone upon that ſervice in the morning, but was then detained in the ſhip, to make lunar obſervations. In the afternoon, I landed again, accompanied by Captain Clerke, with a view to make another excurſion up the country. But, before this could be put in execution, the day was too far ſpent; ſo that I laid aſide my intention for the preſent; and it ſo happened, that I had not another opportunity. At ſun-ſet, I brought every body on board; having procured, in the courſe of the day, nine tons of water; and, by exchanges, chiefly for nails and pieces of iron, about ſeventy or eighty pigs, a few fowls, a quantity of potatoes, and a few plantains, and *taro* roots. Theſe people merited our beſt commendations, in this commercial intercourſe, never once attempting to cheat us, either aſhore, or along-ſide the ſhips. Some of them, indeed, as already mentioned, at firſt, betrayed a thieviſh diſpoſition; or rather, they thought, that they had a right to every thing they could lay their hands upon; but they ſoon laid aſide a conduct, which, we convinced them, they could not perſevere in with impunity.

Amongſt

1778. January. Amongſt the articles which they brought to barter, this day, we could not help taking notice of a particular ſort of cloak and cap, which, even in countries where dreſs is more particularly attended to, might be reckoned elegant. The firſt, are nearly of the ſize and ſhape of the ſhort cloaks worn by the women in England, and by the men in Spain, reaching to the middle of the back, and tied looſely before. The ground of them is a net-work, upon which the moſt beautiful red and yellow feathers are ſo cloſely fixed, that the ſurface might be compared to the thickeſt and richeſt velvet, which they reſemble, both as to the feel, and the gloſſy appearance. The manner of varying the mixture is very different; ſome having triangular ſpaces of red and yellow, alternately; others, a kind of creſcent; and ſome that were entirely red, had a broad yellow border, which made them appear, at ſome diſtance, exactly like a ſcarlet cloak edged with gold lace. The brilliant colours of the feathers, in thoſe that happened to be new, added not a little to their fine appearance; and we found, that they were in high eſtimation with their owners; for they would not, at firſt, part with one of them, for any thing that we offered, aſking no leſs a price than a muſquet. However, ſome were afterward purchaſed for very large nails. Such of them as were of the beſt ſort, were ſcarce; and it ſhould ſeem, that they are only uſed on the occaſion of ſome particular ceremony, or diverſion; for the people who had them, always made ſome geſticulations, which we had ſeen uſed before by thoſe who ſung.

The cap is made almoſt exactly like a helmet, with the middle part, or creſt, ſometimes of a hand's breadth; and it fits very cloſe upon the head, having notches to admit the ears. It is a frame of twigs and oſiers, covered with a net-

work,

work, into which are wrought feathers, in the ſame manner as upon the cloaks, though rather cloſer, and leſs diverſified; the greater part being red, with ſome black, yellow, or green ſtripes, on the ſides, following the curve direction of the creſt. Theſe, probably, complete the dreſs, with the cloaks; for the natives, ſometimes, appeared in both together. 1778 January.

We were at a loſs to gueſs from whence they could get ſuch a quantity of theſe beautiful feathers; but were ſoon informed, as to one ſort; for they afterward brought great numbers of ſkins of ſmall red birds for ſale, which were often tied up in bunches of twenty or more, or had a ſmall wooden ſkewer run through their noſtrils. At the firſt, thoſe that were bought, conſiſted only of the ſkin from behind the wings forward; but we, afterward, got many with the hind part, including the tail and feet. The firſt, however, ſtruck us, at once, with the origin of the fable formerly adopted, of the birds of paradiſe wanting legs; and ſufficiently explained that circumſtance. Probably the people of the iſlands Eaſt of the Moluccas, from whence the ſkins of the birds of paradiſe are brought, cut off their feet, for the very reaſon aſſigned by the people of Atooi, for the like practice; which was, that they hereby can preſerve them with greater eaſe, without loſing any part which they reckon valuable. The red-bird of our iſland, was judged by Mr. Anderſon to be a ſpecies of *merops*, about the ſize of a ſparrow; of a beautiful ſcarlet colour, with a black tail and wings; and an arched bill, twice the length of the head, which, with the feet, was alſo of a reddiſh colour. The contents of the heads were taken out, as in the birds of paradiſe; but it did not appear, that they uſed any other method to preſerve them, than by ſimple drying; for the

ſkins,

1778. January. ſkins, though moiſt, had neither a taſte nor ſmell that could give room to ſuſpect the uſe of antiputreſcent ſubſtances*.

Thurſday 22. In the night, and all the morning, on the 22d, it rained almoſt continually. The wind was at South Eaſt, South South Eaſt, and South; which brought in a ſhort, chopping ſea; and as there were breakers little more than two cables length from the ſtern of our ſhip, her ſituation was none of the ſafeſt. The ſurf broke ſo high againſt the ſhore, that we could not land in our boats; but the day was not wholly loſt; for the natives ventured in their canoes, to bring off to the ſhips hogs and roots, which they bartered as before. One of our viſiters, on this occaſion, who offered ſome fiſh-hooks to ſale, was obſerved to have a very ſmall parcel, tied

* It is matter of real curioſity to obſerve, how very extenſively the predilection for red feathers is ſpread throughout all the iſlands of the Pacific Ocean: and the additional circumſtance, mentioned in this paragraph, will, probably, be looked upon, by thoſe who amuſe themſelves in tracing the wonderful migrations of the ſame family, or tribe, as a confirmation of that hypotheſis (built indeed on other inſtances of reſemblance), which conſiders New Guinea, and its neighbouring Eaſt India iſlands, from whence the Dutch bring their birds of paradiſe, as originally peopled by the ſame race, which Captain Cook found at every iſland from New Zealand to this new group, to which Atooi belongs.

What Mr. Sonnerat tells us, about the bird of paradiſe, agrees perfectly with the account here given of the preſerved red-birds. Speaking of the *Papous*, he proceeds thus: "Ils nous préſenterent pluſieurs eſpeces d'oiſeaux, auſſi élégants par "leur forme, que brillants par l'éclat de leur couleurs. La dépouille des oiſeaux ſert "à la parure des Chefs, qui la portent attachée à leurs bonnets en forme d'aigrettes. "*Mais en préparant les peaux, ils coupent les pieds.* Les Hollandois, qui trafiquent ſur "ces cotes, y achetent de ces peaux ainſi préparées, les tranſportent en Perſe, à Su-"rate, dans les Indes, où ils les vendent fort chère aux habitans riches, qui en font "des aigrettes pour leurs turbans, & pour le caſque des guerriers, & qui en parent "leur chevaux. C'eſt de là qu'eſt venue l'opinion, qu'une de ces eſpeces d'oiſeaux "(l'oiſeau de paradis) *n'a point de pattes.* Les Hollandois ont accrédité ces fables, "qui, en jetant du merveilleux ſur l'objet dont ils traffiquoient, étoient propres à le "rendre plus précieux, & à en rechauffer la valeur."

Voyage à la Nouvelle Guinée, p. 154.

to

to the ſtring of one of them, which he ſeparated with great care, and reſerved for himſelf, when he parted with the hook. Being aſked, what it was? He pointed to his belly, and ſpoke ſomething of its being dead; at the ſame time ſaying, it was bad; as if he did not wiſh to anſwer any more queſtions about it. On ſeeing him ſo anxious to conceal the contents of this parcel, he was requeſted to open it, which he did with great reluctance, and ſome difficulty, as it was wrapped up in many folds of cloth. We found, that it contained a thin bit of fleſh, about two inches long, which, to appearance, had been dried, but was now wet with ſalt water. It ſtruck us, that it might be human fleſh, and that theſe people might, perhaps, eat their enemies; as we knew, that this was the practice of ſome of the natives of the South Sea iſlands. The queſtion being put to the perſon who produced it, he anſwered, that the fleſh was part of a man. Another of his countrymen, who ſtood by him, was then aſked, whether it was their cuſtom to eat thoſe killed in battle? and he immediately anſwered in the affirmative. 1778. January.

There were ſome intervals of fair weather in the afternoon; and the wind then inclined to the Eaſt and North Eaſt; but, in the evening, it veered back again to South South Eaſt, and the rain alſo returned, and continued all night. Very luckily, it was not attended with much wind. We had, however, prepared for the worſt, by dropping the ſmall bower anchor; and ſtriking our top-gallant-yards.

At ſeven o'clock, the next morning, a breeze of wind ſpringing up at North Eaſt, I took up the anchors, with a view of removing the ſhip farther out. The moment that the laſt anchor was up, the wind veered to the Eaſt, which Friday 23.

1778. January. made it neceſſary to ſet all the ſail we could, in order to clear the ſhore; ſo that, before we had tolerable ſea-room, we were driven ſome diſtance to leeward. We made a ſtretch off, with a view to regain the road; but having very little wind, and a ſtrong current againſt us, I found, that this was not to be effected. I therefore diſpatched Meſſrs. King and Williamſon aſhore, with three boats, for water, and to trade for refreſhments. At the ſame time, I ſent an order to Captain Clerke, to put to ſea after me, if he ſhould ſee that I could not recover the road. Being in hopes of finding one, or perhaps a harbour, at the Weſt end of the iſland, I was the leſs anxious about getting back to my former ſtation. But as I had ſent the boats thither, we kept to windward as much as poſſible; notwithſtanding which, at noon, we were three leagues to leeward. As we drew near the Weſt end of the iſland, we found the coaſt to round gradually to the North Eaſt, without forming a creek, or cove, to ſhelter a veſſel from the force of the ſwell, which rolled in from the North, and broke upon the ſhore in a prodigious ſurf; ſo that all hopes of finding a harbour here vaniſhed.

Several canoes came off in the morning, and followed us as we ſtood out to ſea, bartering their roots and other articles. Being very averſe to believe theſe people to be cannibals, notwithſtanding the ſuſpicious circumſtance which had happened the day before, we took occaſion now to make ſome more inquiries about this. A ſmall wooden inſtrument, beſet with ſharks teeth, had been purchaſed; and from its reſemblance to the ſaw or knife uſed by the New Zealanders, to diſſect the bodies of their enemies, it was ſuſpected to have the ſame uſe here. One of the natives being aſked about this, immediately gave the name of the inſtrument, and told us, that it was uſed to cut out the

fleſhy part of the belly, when any perſon was killed. This explained and confirmed the circumſtance above-mentioned, of the perſon pointing to his belly. The man, however, from whom we now had this information, being aſked, if his countrymen eat the part thus cut out? denied it ſtrongly; but, upon the queſtion being repeated, ſhewed ſome degree of fear, and ſwam to his canoe. Juſt before he reached it, he made ſigns, as he had done before, expreſſive of the uſe of the inſtrument. And an old man, who ſat foremoſt in the canoe, being then aſked, whether they eat the fleſh? anſwered in the affirmative, and laughed, ſeemingly at the ſimplicity of ſuch a queſtion. He affirmed the fact, on being aſked again; and alſo ſaid, it was excellent food, or, as he expreſſed it, "ſavoury eating." 1778. January.

At ſeven o'clock in the evening, the boats returned, with two tons of water, a few hogs, a quantity of plantains, and ſome roots. Mr. King informed me, that a great number of the inhabitants were at the watering or landing place. He ſuppoſed, that they had come from all parts of the iſland. They had brought with them a great many fine fat hogs, to barter; but my people had not commodities with them equal to the purchaſe. This, however, was no great loſs; for we had already got as many on board, as we could well manage for immediate uſe; and, wanting the materials, we could not have ſalted them. Mr. King alſo told me, that a great deal of rain had fallen aſhore, whereas, out at ſea, we had only a few ſhowers; and that the ſurf had run ſo high, that it was with great difficulty our men landed, and got back into the boats.

We had light airs and calms, by turns, with ſhowers of rain, all night; and at day-break, in the morning of the 24th, we found, that the currents had carried the ſhip to Saturday 24.

1778. January. the North Weſt and North; ſo that the Weſt end of the iſland, upon which we had been, called Atooi by the natives, bore Eaſt, one league diſtant; another iſland, called Oreehoua, Weſt by South; and the high land of a third iſland, called Oneeheow, from South Weſt by Weſt, to Weſt South Weſt. Soon after, a breeze ſprung up at North; and, as I expected that this would bring the Diſcovery to ſea, I ſteered for Oneeheow, in order to take a nearer view of it, and to anchor there, if I ſhould find a convenient place. I continued to ſteer for it, till paſt eleven o'clock, at which time we were about two leagues from it. But not ſeeing the Diſcovery, and being doubtful whether they could ſee us, I was fearful leſt ſome ill conſequence might attend our ſeparating ſo far. I, therefore, gave up the deſign of viſiting Oneeheow for the preſent, and ſtood back to Atooi, with an intent to anchor again in the road, to complete our water. At two o'clock in the afternoon, the Northerly wind died away, and was ſucceeded by variable light airs and calms, that continued till eleven at night, with which we ſtretched to
Sunday 25. the South Eaſt, till day-break in the morning of the 25th, when we tacked and ſtood in for Atooi road, which bore about North from us; and, ſoon after, we were joined by the Diſcovery.

We fetched in with the land about two leagues to leeward of the road, which, though ſo near, we never could recover; for what we gained at one time, we loſt at another; ſo that,
Thurſday 29. by the morning of the 29th, the currents had carried us Weſtward, within three leagues of Oneeheow. Being tired with plying ſo unſucceſsfully, I gave up all thoughts of getting back to Atooi, and came to the reſolution of trying, whether we could not procure what we wanted at the other iſland, which was within our reach. With this view, I ſent

the Maſter in a boat, to ſound the coaſt; to look out for a landing-place; and, if he ſhould find one, to examine if freſh water could be conveniently got in its neighbourhood. To give him time to execute his commiſſion, we followed, under an eaſy ſail, with the ſhips. As ſoon as we were abreaſt, or to the Weſtward of the South Point of Oneeheow, we found thirty, twenty-five, and twenty fathoms water, over a bottom of coral ſand, a mile from the ſhore. 1778. January.

At ten o'clock, the Maſter returned, and reported, that he had landed in one place, but could find no freſh water; and that there was anchorage all along the coaſt. Seeing a village a little farther to leeward; and ſome of the iſlanders, who had come off to the ſhips, informing us, that freſh water might be got there, I ran down, and came to an anchor before it, in twenty-ſix fathoms water, about three quarters of a mile from the ſhore. The South Eaſt point of the iſland bore South, 65° Eaſt, three miles diſtant; the other extreme of the iſland bore North by Eaſt, about two or three miles diſtant; a peaked hill, inland, North Eaſt, a quarter Eaſt; and another iſland, called Tahoora, which was diſcovered the preceding evening, bore South, 61° Weſt, diſtant ſeven leagues.

Six or ſeven canoes had come off to us, before we anchored, bringing ſome ſmall pigs and potatoes, and a good many yams and mats. The people in them reſembled thoſe of Atooi; and ſeemed to be equally well acquainted with the uſe of iron, which they aſked for alſo by the names of *hamaite* and *toe*; parting readily with all their commodities for pieces of this precious metal. Several more canoes ſoon reached the ſhips, after they had anchored; but the natives in theſe ſeemed to have no other object, than to pay

us;

1778. January.

us a formal viſit. Many of them came readily on board, crouching down upon the deck, and not quitting that humble poſture, till they were deſired to get up. They had brought ſeveral females with them, who remained along ſide in the canoes, behaving with far leſs modeſty than their countrywomen of Atooi; and, at times, all joining in a ſong, not remarkable for its melody, though performed in very exact concert, by beating time upon their breaſts with their hands. The men who had come on board did not ſtay long; and before they departed, ſome of them requeſted our permiſſion to lay down, on the deck, locks of their hair.

Theſe viſiters furniſhed us with an opportunity of agitating again, this day, the curious inquiry, whether they were cannibals; and the ſubject did not take its riſe from any queſtions of ours, but from a circumſtance that ſeemed to remove all ambiguity. One of the iſlanders, who wanted to get in at the gun-room port, was refuſed; and, at the ſame time, aſked, whether, if he ſhould come in, we would kill and eat him? accompanying this queſtion with ſigns ſo expreſſive, that there could be no doubt about his meaning. This gave a proper opening to retort the queſtion as to this practice; and a perſon behind the other, in the canoe, who paid great attention to what was paſſing, immediately anſwered, that if we were killed on ſhore, they would certainly eat us. He ſpoke with ſo little emotion, that it appeared plainly to be his meaning, that they would not deſtroy us for that purpoſe; but that their eating us would be the conſequence of our being at enmity with them. I have availed myſelf of Mr. Anderſon's collections for the deciſion of this matter; and am ſorry to ſay, that I cannot ſee the leaſt reaſon to heſitate in pronouncing it to be certain,

tain, that the horrid banquet of human fleſh, is as much reliſhed here, amidſt plenty, as it is in New Zealand. 1778. January.

In the afternoon, I ſent Lieutenant Gore, with three armed boats, to look for the moſt convenient landing-place; and, when on ſhore, to ſearch for freſh water. In the evening he returned, having landed at the village above mentioned, and acquainted me, that he had been conducted to a well half a mile up the country; but, by his account, the quantity of water it contained was too inconſiderable for our purpoſe, and the road leading to it exceedingly bad.

On the 30th, I ſent Mr. Gore aſhore again, with a guard of mariners, and a party to trade with the natives for refreſhments. I intended to have followed ſoon after, and went from the ſhip with that deſign. But the ſurf had increaſed ſo much, by this time, that I was fearful, if I got aſhore, I ſhould not be able to get off again. This really happened to our people who had landed with Mr. Gore, the communication between them and the ſhips, by our own boats, being ſoon ſtopped. In the evening, they made a ſignal for the boats, which were ſent accordingly; and, not long after, they returned with a few yams and ſome ſalt. A tolerable quantity of both had been procured in the courſe of the day; but the ſurf was ſo great, that the greateſt part of both theſe articles had been loſt in conveying them to the boats. The officer and twenty men, deterred by the danger of coming off, were left aſhore all night; and, by this unfortunate circumſtance, the very thing happened, which, as I have already mentioned, I wiſhed ſo heartily to prevent, and vainly imagined I had effectually guarded againſt. The violence of the ſurf, which our own boats could not act againſt, did not hinder the natives from coming off to Friday 30.

the

1778. January. the ſhips in their canoes. They brought refreſhments with them, which were purchaſed, in exchange for nails, and pieces of iron hoops; and I diſtributed a good many pieces of ribbon, and ſome buttons, as bracelets, amongſt the women in the canoes. One of the men had the figure of a lizard punctured upon his breaſt, and upon thoſe of others were the figures of men badly imitated. Theſe viſiters informed us, that there was no Chief, or *Hairee*, of this iſland; but that it was ſubject to Teneooneoo, a Chief of Atooi; which iſland, they ſaid, was not governed by a ſingle Chief, but that there were many to whom they paid the honour of *moe*, or proſtration; and, amongſt others, they named Otaeaio and Terarotoa. Among other things, which theſe people now brought off, was a ſmall drum, almoſt like thoſe of Otaheite.

About ten or eleven o'clock at night, the wind veered to the South, and the ſky ſeemed to forebode a ſtorm. With ſuch appearances, thinking that we were rather too near the ſhore, I ordered the anchors to be taken up, and, having carried the ſhips into forty-two fathoms, came to again in that ſafer ſtation. The precaution, however, proved to be unneceſſary; for the wind, ſoon after, veered to North North Eaſt, from which quarter it blew a freſh gale, with ſqualls, attended with very heavy ſhowers of rain.

Saturday 31. This weather continued all the next day; and the ſea ran ſo high, that we had no manner of communication with our party on ſhore; and even the natives themſelves durſt not venture out to the ſhips in their canoes. In the evening, I ſent the maſter in a boat up to the South Eaſt head, or point of the iſland, to try if he could land under it. He returned with a favourable report; but it was too late, now, to ſend

ſend for our party till the next morning; and thus they had another night to improve their intercourſe with the natives. 1778. January.

Encouraged by the maſter's report, I ſent a boat to the South Eaſt point, as ſoon as day-light returned, with an order to Mr. Gore, that, if he could not embark his people from the ſpot where they now were, to march them up to the point. As the boat could not get to the beach, one of the crew ſwam aſhore, and carried the order. On the return of the boat, I went myſelf with the pinnace and launch up to the point, to bring the party on board; taking with me a ram-goat and two ewes, a boar and ſow pig of the Engliſh breed; and the ſeeds of melons, pumpkins, and onions; being very deſirous of benefiting theſe poor people, by furniſhing them with ſome additional articles of food. I landed with the greateſt eaſe, under the Weſt ſide of the point, and found my party already there, with ſome of the natives in company. To one of them, whom Mr. Gore had obſerved aſſuming ſome command over the reſt, I gave the goats, pigs, and ſeeds. I ſhould have left theſe well-intended preſents at Atooi, had we not been ſo unexpectedly driven from it. February. Sunday 1.

While the people were engaged in filling four water-caſks, from a ſmall ſtream occaſioned by the late rain, I walked a little way up the country, attended by the man above-mentioned, and followed by two others carrying the two pigs. As ſoon as we got upon a riſing ground, I ſtopped to look round me; and obſerved a woman, on the oppoſite ſide of the valley where I landed, calling to her countrymen who attended me. Upon this, the Chief began to mutter ſomething which I ſuppoſed was a prayer; and the two men, who carried the pigs, continued to walk round me all the time, making, at leaſt,

1778. February.

a dozen circuits before the other had finiſhed his oraiſon. This ceremony being performed, we proceeded; and, preſently, met people coming from all parts, who, on being called to by my attendants, threw themſelves proſtrate on their faces, till I was out of ſight. The ground, through which I paſſed, was in a ſtate of nature, very ſtony, and the ſoil ſeemed poor. It was, however, covered with ſhrubs and plants, ſome of which perfumed the air, with a more delicious fragrancy than I had met with at any other of the iſlands viſited by us in this ocean. Our people, who had been obliged to remain ſo long on ſhore, gave me the ſame account of thoſe parts of the iſland which they had traverſed. They met with ſeveral ſalt ponds, ſome of which had a little water remaining, but others had none; and the ſalt that was left in them was ſo thin, that no great quantity could have been procured. There was no appearance of any running ſtream; and though they found ſome ſmall wells, in which the freſh water was tolerably good, it ſeemed ſcarce. The habitations of the natives were thinly ſcattered about; and it was ſuppoſed, that there could not be more than five hundred people upon the iſland, as the greateſt part were ſeen at the marketing-place of our party, and few found about the houſes by thoſe who walked up the country. They had an opportunity of obſerving the method of living amongſt the natives, and it appeared to be decent and cleanly. They did not, however, ſee any inſtance of the men and women eating together; and the latter ſeemed generally aſſociated in companies by themſelves. It was found, that they burnt here the oily nuts of the *dooe dooe* for lights in the night, as at Otaheite; and that they baked their hogs in ovens; but, contrary to the practice of the Society and Friendly Iſlands, ſplit the carcaſes through their whole

whole length. They met with a poſitive proof of the exiſtence of the *taboo* (or as they pronounce it the *tafoo)*, for one woman fed another who was under that interdiction. They alſo obſerved ſome other myſterious ceremonies; one of which was performed by a woman, who took a ſmall pig, and threw it into the ſurf, till it was drowned, and then tied up a bundle of wood, which ſhe alſo diſpoſed of in the ſame manner. The ſame woman, at another time, beat with a ſtick upon a man's ſhoulders, who ſat down for that purpoſe. A particular veneration ſeemed to be paid here to owls, which they have very tame; and it was obſerved to be a pretty general practice, amongſt them, to pull out one of their teeth *; for which odd cuſtom, when aſked the reaſon, the only anſwer that could be got was, that it was *teeha*, which was alſo the reaſon aſſigned for another of their practices, the giving a lock of their hair. 1778. February.

After the water-caſks had been filled and conveyed into the boat, and we had purchaſed from the natives a few roots, a little ſalt, and ſome ſalted fiſh, I returned on board with all the people, intending to viſit the iſland the next day. But, about ſeven o'clock in the evening, the anchor of the Reſolution ſtarted, and ſhe drove off the bank. As we had a whole cable out, it was ſome time before the anchor was at the bows; and then we had the launch to hoiſt up along-ſide, before we could make ſail. By this unlucky accident, we found ourſelves, at day-break next morning, three leagues to the leeward of our laſt ſtation; and foreſeeing that it would require more time to recover Monday 2.

* It is very remarkable, that, in this cuſtom, which one would think is ſo unnatural, as not to be adopted by two different tribes, originally unconnected, the people of this iſland, and Dampier's natives on the Weſt ſide of New Holland, at ſuch an immenſe diſtance, ſhould be found to agree.

1778. February. it than I choſe to ſpend, I made the ſignal for the Diſcovery to weigh and join us. This was done about noon; and we immediately ſtood away to the Northward, in proſecution of our voyage. Thus, after ſpending more time about theſe iſlands, than was neceſſary to have anſwered all our purpoſes, we were obliged to leave them before we had completed our water, and got from them ſuch a quantity of refreſhments as their inhabitants were both able and willing to have ſupplied us with. But, as it was, our ſhip procured from them proviſions, ſufficient for three weeks at leaſt; and Captain Clerke, more fortunate than us, got, of their vegetable productions, a ſupply that laſted his people upward of two months. The obſervations I was enabled to make, combined with thoſe of Mr. Anderſon, who was a very uſeful aſſiſtant on all ſuch occaſions, will furniſh materials for the next chapter.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

The Situation of the Iſlands now diſcovered.—Their Names.—Called the Sandwich Iſlands.—Atooi deſcribed.—The Soil.—Climate.—Vegetable Productions.—Birds.—Fiſh.—Domeſtic Animals.—Perſons of the Inhabitants.—Their Diſpoſition.—Dreſs.—Ornaments.—Habitations.—Food.—Cookery.—Amuſements.—Manufactures.—Working-tools.—Knowledge of Iron accounted for.—Canoes.—Agriculture.—Account of one of their Chiefs.—Weapons.—Cuſtoms agreeing with thoſe of Tongataboo and Otaheite.—Their Language the ſame.—Extent of this Nation throughout the Pacific Ocean.—Reflections on the uſeful Situation of the Sandwich Iſlands.

IT is worthy of obſervation, that the iſlands in the Pacific Ocean, which our late voyages have added to the geography of the globe, have been generally found lying in groups or cluſters; the ſingle intermediate iſlands, as yet diſcovered, being few in proportion to the others; though, probably, there are many more of them ſtill unknown, which ſerve as ſteps between the ſeveral cluſters. Of what number this newly-diſcovered Archipelago conſiſts, muſt be left for future inveſtigation. We ſaw five of them, whoſe names, as given to us by the natives, are Woahoo, Atooi, Oneeheow, Oreehoua, and Tahoora. The laſt is a ſmall elevated iſland, lying four or five leagues from the South Eaſt point of Oneeheow. 1778. February.

1778. February. heow, in the direction of South, 69° Weſt. We were told, that it abounds with birds, which are its only inhabitants. We alſo got ſome information of the exiſtence of a low uninhabited iſland in the neighbourhood, whoſe name is Tammata pappa. Beſides theſe ſix, which we can diſtinguiſh by their names, it appeared, that the inhabitants of thoſe with whom we had intercourſe, were acquainted with ſome other iſlands both to the Eaſtward and Weſtward. I named the whole group the Sandwich Iſlands, in honour of the Earl of Sandwich. Thoſe that I ſaw, are ſituated between the latitude of 21° 30′, and 22° 15′ North, and between the longitude of 199° 20′, and 201° 30′ Eaſt.

Of Woahoo, the moſt Eaſterly of theſe iſlands, ſeen by us, which lies in the latitude of 21° 36′, we could get no other intelligence, but that it is high land, and is inhabited.

We had opportunities of knowing ſome particulars about Oneeheow, which have been mentioned already. It lies ſeven leagues to the Weſtward of our anchoring-place at Atooi; and is not above fifteen leagues in circuit. Its chief vegetable produce is yams; if we may judge from what was brought to us by the natives. They have ſalt, which they call *patai*; and is produced in ſalt ponds. With it they cure both fiſh and pork; and ſome ſalt fiſh, which we got from them, kept very well, and were found to be very good. This iſland is moſtly low land, except the part facing Atooi, which riſes directly from the ſea to a good height; as does alſo the South Eaſt point of it, which terminates in a round hill. It was on the Weſt ſide of this point where our ſhips anchored.

Of Oreehoua we know nothing more than that it is a ſmall elevated iſland, lying cloſe to the North ſide of Oneeheow.

Atooi,

Atooi, which is the largeſt, being the principal ſcene of our operations, I ſhall now proceed to lay before my readers what information I was able to collect about it, either from actual obſervation, while on ſhore, or from converſation with its inhabitants, who were perpetually on board the ſhips while we lay at anchor; and who, in general, could be tolerably well underſtood, by thoſe of us who had acquired an acquaintance with the dialects of the South Pacific Iſlands. It is, however, to be regretted, that we ſhould have been obliged, ſo ſoon, to leave a place, which, as far as our opportunities of knowing reached, ſeemed to be highly worthy of a more accurate examination. 1778. February.

Atooi, from what we ſaw of it, is, at leaſt, ten leagues in length from Eaſt to Weſt; from whence its circuit may nearly be gueſſed, though it appears to be much broader at the Eaſt than at the Weſt point, if we may judge from the double range of hills which appeared there. The road, or anchoring-place, which we occupied, is on the South Weſt ſide of the iſland, about ſix miles from the Weſt end, before a village which has the name of Wymoa. As far as we ſounded, we found, that the bank has a fine grey ſand at the bottom, and is free from rocks; except a little to the Eaſtward of the village, where there ſpits out a ſhoal, on which are ſome rocks and breakers; but they are not far from the ſhore. This road would be entirely ſheltered from the trade wind, if the height of the land, over which it blows, did not alter its direction, and make it follow that of the coaſt; ſo that it blows at North Eaſt, on one ſide of the iſland, and at Eaſt South Eaſt, or South Eaſt, on the other, falling obliquely upon the ſhore. Thus the road, though ſituated on the lee ſide of the iſland, is a little expoſed to the trade wind; but, notwithſtanding this defect, is far from

1778. February. being a bad ſtation, and much ſuperior to thoſe which neceſſity obliges ſhips daily to uſe, in regions where the winds are both more variable and more boiſterous; as at Teneriffe, Madeira, the Azores, and elſewhere. The landing too is more eaſy than at moſt of thoſe places; and, unleſs in very bad weather, always practicable. The water to be got in the neighbourhood is excellent, and eaſy to be conveyed to the boats. But no wood can be cut at any diſtance, convenient enough to bring it from, unleſs the natives could be prevailed upon to part with the few *etooa* trees (for ſo they call the *cordia ſebaſtina)*, that grow about their villages, or a ſort called *dooe dooe*, that grow farther up the country.

The land, as to its general appearance, does not, in the leaſt, reſemble any of the iſlands we have hitherto viſited within the tropic, on the ſouth ſide of the *equator*; if we except its hills near the centre, which are high, but ſlope gently to the ſea, or lower lands. Though it be deſtitute of the delightful borders of Otaheite, and of the luxuriant plains of Tongataboo, covered with trees, which at once afford a friendly ſhelter from the ſcorching ſun, and an enchanting proſpect to the eye, and food for the natives, which may be truly ſaid to drop from the trees into their mouths, without the laborious taſk of rearing; though, I ſay, Atooi be deſtitute of theſe advantages, its poſſeſſing a greater quantity of gently-riſing land, renders it, in ſome meaſure, ſuperior to the above favourite iſlands, as being more capable of improvement.

The height of the land within, the quantity of clouds which we ſaw, during the whole time we ſtaid, hanging over it, and frequently on the other parts, ſeems to put it beyond all doubt, that there is a ſufficient ſupply of water; and

that there are ſome running ſtreams which we did not ſee, eſpecially in the deep valleys, at the entrance of which the villages commonly ſtand. From the wooded part to the ſea, the ground is covered with an excellent ſort of graſs, about two feet high, which grows ſometimes in tufts, and, though not very thick at the place where we were, ſeemed capable of being converted into plentiful crops of fine hay. But not even a ſhrub grows naturally on this extenſive ſpace. 1778. February.

In the break, or narrow valley, through which we had our road to the *morai*, the ſoil is of a browniſh black colour, ſomewhat looſe; but as we advanced upon the high ground, it changed to a reddiſh brown, more ſtiff and clayey, though, at this time, brittle from its dryneſs. It is moſt probably the ſame all over the cultivated parts; for what adhered to moſt of the potatoes, bought by us, which, no doubt, came from very different ſpots, was of this ſort. Its quality, however, may be better underſtood from its products, than from its appearance. For the vale, or moiſt ground, produces *taro*, of a much larger ſize than any we had ever ſeen; and the higher ground furniſhes ſweet potatoes, that often weigh ten, and ſometimes twelve or fourteen pounds; very few being under two or three.

The temperature of the climate may be eaſily gueſſed from the ſituation of the iſland. Were we to judge of it from our experience, it might be ſaid to be very variable; for, according to the generally received opinion, it was now the ſeaſon of the year, when the weather is ſuppoſed to be moſt ſettled, the ſun being at his greateſt annual diſtance. The heat was, at this time, very moderate; and few of thoſe inconveniences, which many tropical countries are ſubject to, either from heat or moiſture, ſeem to be

1778. February. experienced here, as the habitations of the natives are quite cloſe; and they ſalt both fiſh and pork, which keep well, contrary to what has uſually been obſerved to be the caſe, when this operation is attempted in hot countries. Neither did we find any dews of conſequence, which may, in ſome meaſure, be accounted for, by the lower part of the country being deſtitute of trees.

The rock that forms the ſides of the valley, and which ſeems to be the ſame with that ſeen by us at different parts of the coaſt, is a greyiſh black, ponderous ſtone; but honey-combed, with ſome very minute ſhining particles, and ſome ſpots of a ruſty colour interſperſed. The laſt gives it often a reddiſh caſt, when at a diſtance. It is of an immenſe depth, but ſeems divided into *ſtrata*, though nothing is interpoſed. For the large pieces always broke off to a determinate thickneſs, without appearing to have adhered to thoſe below them. Other ſtones are probably much more various, than in the Southern iſlands. For, during our ſhort ſtay, beſides the *lapis lydius*, which ſeems common all over the South Sea, we found a ſpecies of cream-coloured whetſtone, ſometimes variegated with blacker or whiter veins, as marble; or in pieces, as *breccia*; and common writing ſlate, as well as a coarſer ſort; but we ſaw none of them in their natural ſtate; and the natives brought ſome pieces of a coarſe whitiſh pumice-ſtone. We got alſo a brown ſort of *hæmatites*, which, from being ſtrongly attracted by the magnet, diſcovered the quantity of metal that it contained, and ſeems to belong to the ſecond ſpecies of Cronſtedt, though Linnæus has placed it amongſt his *intractabilia*. But its variety could not be diſcovered; for what we ſaw of it, as well as the ſlates and whetſtones, was cut artificially.

1778. February.

Beſides the vegetable articles, bought by us as refreſhments, amongſt which were, at leaſt, five or ſix varieties of plantains, the iſland produces bread-fruit; though it ſeems to be ſcarce, as we ſaw only one tree, which was large, and had ſome fruit upon it. There are alſo a few cocoa-palms; yams, as we were told, for we ſaw none; the *kappe* of the Friendly Iſlands, or Virginian *arum*; the *etooa* tree, and ſweet ſmelling *gardenia*, or *cape jaſmine*. We ſaw ſeveral trees of the *dooe dooe*, ſo uſeful at Otaheite, as bearing the oily nuts, which are ſtuck upon a kind of ſkewer, and burnt as candles. Our people ſaw them uſed, in the ſame manner, at Oneeheow. We were not on ſhore at Atooi but in the day time, and then we ſaw the natives wearing theſe nuts, hung on ſtrings, round the neck. There is a ſpecies of *ſida*, or Indian mallow, ſomewhat altered, by the climate, from what we ſaw at Chriſtmas Iſland; the *morinda citrifolia*, which is called *none*; a ſpecies of *convolvulus*; the *ava*, or intoxicating pepper; and great numbers of gourds. Theſe laſt grow to a very large ſize, and are of a vaſt variety of ſhapes, which probably is effected by art. Upon the dry ſand, about the village, grew a plant, that we had never ſeen in theſe ſeas, of the ſize of a common thiſtle, and prickly, like that; but bearing a fine flower, almoſt reſembling a white poppy. This, with another ſmall one, were the only uncommon plants, which our ſhort excurſion gave us an opportunity of obſerving.

The ſcarlet birds, already deſcribed, which were brought for ſale, were never met with alive; but we ſaw a ſingle ſmall one, about the ſize of a canary-bird, of a deep crimſon colour; a large owl; two large brown hawks, or kites; and a wild duck. The natives mentioned the names of ſeveral other birds; amongſt which we knew the *otoo*, or blueiſh heron;

1778. February. and the *torata*, a ſort of whimbrel, which are known by the ſame names at Otaheite; and it is probable, that there are a great many ſorts, judging by the quantity of fine yellow, green, and very ſmall, velvet-like, black feathers uſed upon the cloaks, and other ornaments, worn by the inhabitants.

Fiſh, and other marine productions were, to appearance, not various; as, beſides the ſmall mackerel, we only ſaw common mullets; a ſort of a dead white, or chalky colour; a ſmall, browniſh rock-fiſh, ſpotted with blue; a turtle, which was penned up in a pond; and three or four ſorts of fiſh ſalted. The few ſhell-fiſh, that we ſaw, were chiefly converted into ornaments, though they neither had beauty nor novelty to recommend them.

The hogs, dogs, and fowls, which were the only tame or domeſtic animals that we found here, were all of the ſame kind that we met with at the South Pacific iſlands. There were alſo ſmall lizards; and ſome rats, reſembling thoſe ſeen at every iſland at which we had, as yet, touched.

The inhabitants are of a middling ſtature, firmly made, with ſome exceptions, neither remarkable for a beautiful ſhape, nor for ſtriking features, which rather expreſs an openneſs and good-nature, than a keen, intelligent diſpoſition. Their viſage, eſpecially amongſt the women, is ſometimes round; but others have it long; nor can we ſay, that they are diſtinguiſhed, as a nation, by any general caſt of countenance. Their colour is nearly of a nut brown; and it may be difficult to make a nearer compariſon, if we take in all the different hues of that colour; but ſome individuals are darker. The women have been already mentioned, as being little more delicate than the men, in their formation; and

and I may ſay, that, with a very few exceptions, they have little claim to thoſe peculiarities that diſtinguiſh the ſex, in other countries. There is, indeed, a more remarkable equality in the ſize, colour, and figure of both ſexes, than in moſt places I have viſited. However, upon the whole, they are far from being ugly, and appear to have few natural deformities of any kind. Their ſkin is not very ſoft, nor ſhining; perhaps for want of oiling, which is practiſed at the Southern iſlands; but their eyes and teeth are, in general, very tolerable. The hair, for the greateſt part, is ſtraight, though, in ſome, frizzling; and though its natural colour be, commonly, black, it is ſtained, as at the Friendly and other iſlands. We ſaw but few inſtances of corpulence; and theſe oftener amongſt the women than the men; but it was chiefly amongſt the latter that perſonal defects were obſerved, though, if any of them can claim a ſhare of beauty, it was moſt conſpicuous amongſt the young men. 1778. February.

They are vigorous, active, and moſt expert ſwimmers; leaving their canoes upon the moſt trifling occaſion; diving under them; and ſwimming to others though at a great diſtance. It was very common to ſee women, with infants at the breaſt, when the ſurf was ſo high, that they could not land in the canoes, leap overboard, and without endangering their little ones, ſwim to the ſhore, through a ſea that looked dreadful.

They ſeem to be bleſt with a frank, cheerful diſpoſition; and were I to draw any compariſons, ſhould ſay, that they are equally free from the fickle levity which diſtinguiſhes the natives of Otaheite, and the ſedate caſt obſervable amongſt many of thoſe of Tongataboo. They ſeem to live very ſociably in their intercourſe with one another; and,

except

1778. February. except the propenſity to thieving, which ſeems innate in moſt of the people we have viſited in this ocean, they were exceedingly friendly to us. And it does their ſenſibility no little credit, without flattering ourſelves, that when they ſaw the various articles of our European manufacture, they could not help expreſſing their ſurprize, by a mixture of joy and concern, that ſeemed to apply the caſe, as a leſſon of humility to themſelves; and, on all occaſions, they appeared deeply impreſſed with a conſciouſneſs of their own inferiority; a behaviour which equally exempts their national character from the prepoſterous pride of the more poliſhed Japaneſe, and of the ruder Greenlander. It was a pleaſure to obſerve with how much affection the women managed their infants, and how readily the men lent their aſſiſtance to ſuch a tender office; thus ſufficiently diſtinguiſhing themſelves from thoſe ſavages, who eſteem a wife and child as things rather neceſſary, than deſirable, or worthy of their notice.

From the numbers which we ſaw collected at every village, as we ſailed paſt, it may be ſuppoſed, that the inhabitants of this iſland are pretty numerous. Any computation, that we make, can be only conjectural. But, that ſome notion may be formed, which ſhall not greatly err on either ſide, I would ſuppoſe, that, including the ſtraggling houſes, there might be, upon the whole iſland, ſixty ſuch villages, as that before which we anchored; and that, allowing five perſons to each houſe, there would be, in every village, five hundred; or thirty thouſand upon the iſland. This number is, certainly, not exaggerated; for we had ſometimes three thouſand perſons, at leaſt, upon the beach; when it could not be ſuppoſed, that above a tenth part of the inhabitants were preſent.

The

The common dreſs, both of the women and of the men, has been already deſcribed. The firſt have often much larger pieces of cloth wrapped round them, reaching from juſt below the breaſts to the hams, or lower; and ſeveral were ſeen with pieces thrown looſely about the ſhoulders, which covered the greateſt part of the body; but the children, when very young, are quite naked. They wear nothing upon the head; but the hair, in both ſexes, is cut in different forms; and the general faſhion, eſpecially among the women, is, to have it long before, and ſhort behind. The men often had it cut, or ſhaved, on each ſide, in ſuch a manner, that the remaining part, in ſome meaſure, reſembles the creſt of their caps or helmets, formerly deſcribed. Both ſexes, however, ſeem very careleſs about their hair, and have nothing like combs to dreſs it with. Inſtances of wearing it, in a ſingular manner, were ſometimes met with among the men, who twiſt it into a number of ſeparate parcels, like the tails of a wig, each about the thickneſs of a finger; though the greateſt part of theſe, which are ſo long that they reach far down the back, we obſerved, were artificially fixed upon the head, over their own hair*. 1778. February.

It is remarkable, that, contrary to the general practice of the iſlands we had hitherto diſcovered in the Pacific Ocean, the people of the Sandwich Iſlands have not their ears perforated; nor have they the leaſt idea of wearing ornaments in them. Both ſexes, nevertheleſs, adorn themſelves with necklaces made of bunches of ſmall black cord, like our

* The print of Horn Iſland, which we meet with in Mr. Dalrymple's account of Le Maire and Schouten's voyage, repreſents ſome of the natives of that iſland with ſuch long tails, hanging from their heads, as are here deſcribed. See *Dalrymple's Voyages to the South Pacific*, Vol. ii. p. 58.

hat-

1778. February. hat-ſtring, often above a hundred-fold; exactly like thoſe of Wateeoo; only, that, inſtead of the two little balls, on the middle before, they fix a ſmall bit of wood, ſtone, or ſhell, about two inches long, with a broad hook, turning forward at its lower part, well poliſhed. They have, likewiſe, necklaces of many ſtrings of very ſmall ſhells, or of the dried flowers of the Indian mallow. And, ſometimes, a ſmall human image of bone, about three inches long, neatly poliſhed, is hung round the neck. The women alſo wear bracelets of a ſingle ſhell, pieces of black wood, with bits of ivory interſperſed, and well poliſhed, fixed by a ſtring drawn very cloſely through them; or others of hogs teeth, laid parallel to each other, with the concave part outward, and the points cut off, faſtened together as the former; ſome of which, made only of large boars' tuſks, are very elegant*. The men, ſometimes, wear plumes of the tropic birds feathers, ſtuck in their heads; or thoſe of cocks, faſtened round neat poliſhed ſticks, two feet long, commonly decorated, at the lower part, with *oora*; and, for the ſame purpoſe, the ſkin of a white dog's tail is ſewed over a ſtick, with its tuft at the end. They alſo, frequently, wear on the head a kind of ornament, of a finger's thickneſs, or more, covered with red and yellow feathers, curiouſly varied, and tied behind; and on the arm, above the elbow, a a kind of broad ſhell-work, grounded upon net-work.

The men are frequently punctured, though not in any particular part, as the Otaheiteans, and thoſe of Tongataboo. Sometimes there are a few marks upon their hands, or arms, and near the groin; but frequently we could obſerve none at all; though a few individuals had more of this ſort

* See Plate, N° LXVII.

of

of ornament, than we had uſually ſeen at other places, and ingeniouſly executed in a great variety of lines and figures, on the arms and fore-part of the body; on which latter, ſome of them had the figure of the *taame*, or breaſt-plate, of Otaheite, though we did not meet with the thing itſelf amongſt them. Contrary to the cuſtom of the Society and Friendly Iſlands, they do not ſlit, or cut off, part of the *prepuce*; but have it, univerſally, drawn over the *glans*, and tied with a ſtring, as practiſed by ſome of the natives of New Zealand. 1778. February.

Though they ſeem to have adopted the mode of living in villages, there is no appearance of defence, or fortification, near any of them; and the houſes are ſcattered about, without any order, either with reſpect to their diſtances from each other, or their poſition in any particular direction. Neither is there any proportion as to their ſize; ſome being large and commodious, from forty to fifty feet long, and twenty or thirty broad, while others of them are mere hovels. Their figure is not unlike oblong corn, or hay-ſtacks; or, perhaps, a better idea may be conceived of them, if we ſuppoſe the roof of a barn placed on the ground, in ſuch a manner, as to form a high, acute ridge, with two very low ſides, hardly diſcernible at a diſtance. The gable, at each end, correſponding to the ſides, makes theſe habitations perfectly cloſe all round; and they are well thatched with long graſs, which is laid on ſlender poles, diſpoſed with ſome regularity. The entrance is made indifferently in the end or ſide, and is an oblong hole, ſo low, that one muſt rather creep than walk in; and is often ſhut up by a board of planks, faſtened together, which ſerves as a door, but having no hinges, muſt be removed occaſionally. No light enters the houſe, but by this opening; and though ſuch

1778. February. cloſe habitations may afford a comfortable retreat in bad weather, they ſeem but ill-adapted to the warmth of the climate. They are, however, kept remarkably clean; and their floors are covered with a large quantity of dried graſs, over which they ſpread mats to ſit and ſleep upon. At one end ſtands a kind of bench, about three feet high, on which their houſehold utenſils are placed. The catalogue is not long. It conſiſts of gourd-ſhells, which they convert into veſſels that ſerve as bottles to hold water, and as baſkets to contain their victuals, and other things, with covers of the ſame; and of a few wooden bowls and trenchers, of different ſizes. Judging from what we ſaw growing, and from what was brought to market, there can be no doubt, that the greateſt part of their vegetable food conſiſts of ſweet potatoes, *taro*, and plantains; and that bread-fruit and yams are rather to be eſteemed rarities. Of animal food, they can be in no want; as they have abundance of hogs, which run, without reſtraint, about the houſes; and if they eat dogs, which is not improbable, their ſtock of theſe ſeemed to be very conſiderable. The great number of fiſhing-hooks found amongſt them, ſhewed, that they derive no inconſiderable ſupply of animal food from the ſea. But it ſhould ſeem, from their practice of ſalting fiſh, that the openneſs of their coaſt often interrupts the buſineſs of catching them; as it may be naturally ſuppoſed, that no ſet of people would ever think of preſerving quantities of food artificially, if they could depend upon a daily, regular ſupply of it, in its freſh ſtate. This ſort of reaſoning, however, will not account for their cuſtom of ſalting their pork, as well as their fiſh, which are preſerved in gourd-ſhells. The ſalt, of which they uſe a great quantity for this purpoſe, is of a red colour, not very coarſe, and ſeems to be much the ſame with what our ſtragglers found

at Chriſtmas Iſland. It has its colour, doubtleſs, from a mixture of the mud, at the bottom of the part where it is formed; for ſome of it, that had adhered in lumps, was of a ſufficient whiteneſs and purity. 1778. February.

They bake their vegetable food with heated ſtones, as at the Southern Iſlands; and, from the vaſt quantity which we ſaw dreſſed at one time, we ſuſpected, that the whole village, or, at leaſt, a conſiderable number of people, joined in the uſe of a common oven. We did not ſee them dreſs any animal food at this iſland; but Mr. Gore's party, as already mentioned, had an opportunity of ſatisfying themſelves, that it was dreſſed in Oneeheow in the ſame ſort of ovens; which leaves no doubt of this being alſo the practice in Atooi; eſpecially as we met with no utenſil there, that could be applied to the purpoſe of ſtewing or boiling. The only artificial diſh we met with, was a *taro* pudding; which, though a diſagreeable meſs from its ſourneſs, was greedily devoured by the natives. They eat off a kind of wooden plates, or trenchers; and the women, as far as we could judge from one inſtance, if reſtrained from feeding at the ſame diſh with the men, as at Otaheite, are, at leaſt, permitted to eat in the ſame place near them.

Their amuſements ſeem pretty various; for, during our ſhort ſtay, ſeveral were diſcovered. The dances, at which they uſe the feathered cloaks and caps, were not ſeen; but from the motions which they made with their hands, on other occaſions, when they ſung, we could form ſome judgment that they are, in ſome degree at leaſt, ſimilar to thoſe we had met with at the Southern Iſlands, though not executed ſo ſkilfully. Neither had they, amongſt them, either flutes or reeds; and the only two muſical inſtruments

1778. February. which we obſerved, were of an exceedingly rude kind. One of them does not produce a melody exceeding that of a child's rattle. It conſiſts of what may be called a conic cap inverted, but ſcarcely hollowed at the baſe above a foot high, made of a coarſe, ſedge-like plant; the upper part of which, and the edges, are ornamented with beautiful red feathers; and to the point, or lower part, is fixed a gourd-ſhell, larger than the fiſt. Into this is put ſomething to rattle; which is done by holding the inſtrument by the ſmall part, and ſhaking, or rather moving it, from place to place briſkly, either to different ſides, or backward and forward, juſt before the face, ſtriking the breaſt with the other hand at the ſame time*. The other muſical inſtrument (if either of them deſerve that name) was a hollow veſſel of wood, like a platter, combined with the uſe of two ſticks, on which one of our gentlemen ſaw a man performing. He held one of the ſticks, about two feet long, as we do a fiddle, with one hand, and ſtruck it with the other, which was ſmaller, and reſembled a drum-ſtick, in a quicker or ſlower meaſure; at the ſame time beating with his foot upon the hollow veſſel, that lay inverted upon the ground, and thus producing a tune, that was by no means diſagreeable. This muſic was accompanied by the vocal performance of ſome women, whoſe ſong had a pleaſing and tender effect.

We obſerved great numbers of ſmall poliſhed rods, about four or five feet long, ſomewhat thicker than the rammer of a muſquet, with a tuft of long, white dog's hair fixed on the ſmall end. Theſe are, probably, uſed in their diverſions. We ſaw a perſon take one of them in his hand, and,

* See Plate, N° LXVII.

holding

holding it up, give a ſmart ſtroke, till he brought it into an horizontal poſition, ſtriking with the foot, on the ſame ſide, upon the ground, and, with his other hand, beating his breaſt at the ſame time. They play at bowls, with pieces of the whetſtone mentioned before, of about a pound weight, ſhaped ſomewhat like a ſmall cheeſe, but rounded at the ſides and edges, which are very nicely poliſhed; and they have other bowls of the ſame ſort, made of a heavy, reddiſh brown clay, neatly glazed over with a compoſition of the ſame colour, or of a coarſe, dark grey ſlate. They alſo uſe, in the manner that we throw quoits, ſmall, flat, rounded pieces of the writing ſlate, of the diameter of the bowls, but ſcarcely a quarter of an inch thick, alſo well poliſhed. From theſe circumſtances, one would be induced to think, that their games are rather trials of ſkill than of ſtrength. 1778. February.

In every thing manufactured by theſe people, there appears to be an uncommon degree of neatneſs and ingenuity. Their cloth, which is the principal manufacture, is made from the *morus papyrifera*; and, doubtleſs, in the ſame manner as at Otaheite and Tongataboo; for we bought ſome of the grooved ſticks, with which it is beaten. Its texture, however, though thicker, is rather inferior to that of the cloth of either of the other places; but, in colouring or ſtaining it, the people of Atooi diſplay a ſuperiority of taſte, by the endleſs variation of figures which they execute. One would ſuppoſe, on ſeeing a number of their pieces, that they had borrowed their patterns from ſome mercer's ſhop, in which the moſt elegant productions of China and Europe are collected; beſides ſome original patterns of their own. Their colours, indeed, except the red, are not very bright; but the regularity of the figures and ſtripes is truly ſuprizing; for, as far as we knew, they have nothing like ſtamps or prints, to

make

1773. February. make the impreſſions. In what manner they produce their colours, we had not opportunities of learning; but beſides the party-coloured ſorts, they have ſome pieces of plain white cloth, and others of a ſingle colour, particularly dark brown and light blue. In general, the pieces which they brought to us, were about two feet broad, and four or five yards long, being the form and quantity that they uſe for their common dreſs, or *maro*; and even theſe we ſometimes found were compoſed of pieces ſewed together; an art which we did not find to the Southward, but is ſtrongly, though not very neatly, performed here. There is alſo a particular ſort that is thin, much reſembling oil-cloth; and which is actually either oiled or ſoaked in ſome kind of varniſh, and ſeems to reſiſt the action of water pretty well.

They fabricate a great many white mats, which are ſtrong, with many red ſtripes, rhombuſes, and other figures interwoven on one ſide; and often pretty large. Theſe, probably, make a part of their dreſs occaſionally; for they put them on their backs when they offered them to ſale. But they make others coarſer, plain and ſtrong, which they ſpread over their floors to ſleep upon.

They ſtain their gourd-ſhells prettily with undulated lines, triangles, and other figures of a black colour; inſtances of which we ſaw practiſed at New Zealand. And they ſeem to poſſeſs the art of varniſhing; for ſome of theſe ſtained gourd-ſhells are covered with a kind of lacker; and on other occaſions, they uſe a ſtrong ſize, or gluey ſubſtance, to faſten their things together. Their wooden diſhes and bowls, out of which they drink their *ava*, are of the *etooa*-tree, or *cordia*, as neat, as if made in our turning-lathe, and perhaps

perhaps better poliſhed. And amongſt their articles of handicraft, may be reckoned ſmall ſquare fans of mat or wicker-work, with handles tapering from them of the ſame, or of wood; which are neatly wrought with ſmall cords of hair, and fibres of the cocoa-nut coir, intermixed. The great variety of fiſhing-hooks are ingeniouſly made; ſome of bone, others of wood pointed with bone, and many of pearl ſhell. Of the laſt, ſome are like a ſort that we ſaw at Tongataboo; and others ſimply curved, as the common ſort at Otaheite, as well as the wooden ones. The bones are moſtly ſmall, and compoſed of two pieces; and all the different ſorts have a barb, either on the inſide, like ours, or on the outſide, oppoſite the ſame part; but others have both, the outer one being fartheſt from the point. Of this laſt ſort, one was procured, nine inches long, of a ſingle piece of bone, which, doubtleſs, belonged to ſome large fiſh. The elegant form and poliſh of this could not, certainly, be outdone by any European artiſt, even if he ſhould add all his knowledge in deſign, to the number and convenience of his tools. They poliſh their ſtones, by conſtant friction, with pumice-ſtone in water; and ſuch of their working inſtruments, or tools, as I ſaw, reſembled thoſe of the Southern Iſlands. Their hatchets, or rather adzes, were exactly of the ſame pattern, and either made of the ſame ſort of blackiſh ſtone, or of a clay-coloured one. They have alſo little inſtruments made of a ſingle ſhark's tooth, ſome of which are fixed to the forepart of a dog's jaw-bone, and others to a thin wooden handle of the ſame ſhape; and at the other end there is a bit of ſtring faſtened through a ſmall perforation. Theſe ſerve as knives occaſionally, and are, perhaps, uſed in carving. 1778. February.

The

1778. February. The only iron tools, or rather bits of iron, ſeen amongſt them, and which they had before our arrival, were a piece of iron hoop, about two inches long, fitted into a wooden handle *; and another edge-tool, which our people gueſſed to be made of the point of a broad-ſword. Their having the actual poſſeſſion of theſe, and their ſo generally knowing the uſe of this metal, inclined ſome on board to think, that we had not been the firſt European viſiters of theſe iſlands. But, it ſeems to me, that the very great ſurprize expreſſed by them, on ſeeing our ſhips, and their total ignorance of the uſe of fire-arms, cannot be reconciled with ſuch a notion. There are many ways, by which ſuch people may get pieces of iron, or acquire the knowledge of the exiſtence of ſuch a metal, without having ever had an immediate connection with nations that uſe it. It can hardly be doubted, that it was unknown to all the inhabitants of this ſea, before Magellan led the way into it; for no diſcoverer, immediately after his voyage, ever found any of this metal in their poſſeſſion; though, in the courſe of our late voyages, it has been obſerved, that the uſe of it was known at ſeveral iſlands, to which no former European ſhips had ever, as far as we know, found their way. At all the places where Mendana touched, in his two voyages, it muſt have been ſeen and left; and this would extend the knowledge of it, no doubt, to all the various iſlands with which thoſe, whom he had viſited, had any immediate intercourſe. It might even be carried farther; and where ſpecimens of this favourite article could not be procured, deſcriptions might, in ſome meaſure, ſerve to make it known, when afterward ſeen. The next voyage to the Southward of the line, in

* Captain King purchaſed this, and has it now in his poſſeſſion.

which

which any intercourſe was had with the natives of this ocean, was that of Quiros, who landed at Sagittaria, the Iſland of Handſome People, and at Tierra del Eſpiritu Santo; at all which places, and at thoſe with whom they had any communication, it muſt, of conſequence, have been made known. To him ſucceeded, in this navigation, Le Maire and Schouten, whoſe connections with the natives commenced much farther to the Eaſtward, and ended at Cocos and Horn Iſlands. It was not ſurpriſing, that, when I viſited Tongataboo in 1773, I ſhould find a bit of iron there, as we knew that Taſman had viſited it before me; but, let us ſuppoſe, that he had never diſcovered the Friendly Iſlands, our finding iron amongſt them would have occaſioned much ſpeculation; though we have mentioned before *, the method by which they had gained a renewal of their knowledge of this metal, which confirms my hypotheſis. For Neeootaboo taboo, or Boſcawen's Iſland, where Captain Wallis's ſhips left it, and from whence Poulaho received it, lies ſome degrees to the North Weſt of Tongataboo. It is well known, that Roggewein loſt one of his ſhips on the Pernicious Iſlands; which, from their ſituation, are, probably, not unknown to, though not frequently viſited by, the inhabitants of Otaheite and the Society Iſlands. It is equally certain, that theſe laſt people had a knowledge of iron, and purchaſed it with the greateſt avidity, when Captain Wallis diſcovered Otaheite; and this knowledge could only have been acquired, through the mediation of thoſe neighbouring iſlands where it had been originally left. Indeed they acknowledge, that this was actually the caſe; and they have told us ſince, that they held it in ſuch

1778. February.

* See Vol. i. p. 370.

1778. February. eſtimation, before Captain Wallis's arrival, that a Chief of Otaheite, who had got two nails into his poſſeſſion, received no ſmall emolument, by letting out the uſe of theſe to his neighbours, for the purpoſe of boring holes, when their own methods failed, or were thought too tedious*. The men of the Society Iſlands, whom we found at Wateeoo, had been driven thither, long after the knowledge and uſe of iron had thus been introduced amongſt their countrymen; and though, probably, they had no ſpecimen of it with them, they would naturally, and with eaſe, communicate at that iſland their knowledge of this valuable material, by deſcription. From the people of Wateeoo again, thoſe of Hervey's Iſland might derive that deſire to poſſeſs ſome of it, of which we had proofs during our ſhort intercourſe with them.

The conſideration of theſe facts ſufficiently explains how the knowledge of iron has been conveyed throughout this ocean, to iſlands which never have had an immediate intercourſe with Europeans; and it may eaſily be conceived, that wherever the hiſtory of it only has been reported, or a very ſmall quantity of it has been left, the greater eagerneſs will be ſhewn by the natives to get copious ſupplies of it. The application of theſe particulars, to the inſtance now under conſideration, is obvious. The people of Atooi and Oneeheow, without having ever been viſited by Europeans before us, might have received it from intermediate iſlands,

* A ſimilar inſtance of profitable revenue, drawn from the uſe of nails by the Chiefs of the Caroline Iſlands, is mentioned by father Cantova: "Si, par hazard, un "vaiſſeau étranger laiſſe dans leurs iſles quelques vieux morceaux de fer, ils appar- "tiennent de droit aux Tamoles, qui en font faire des outils, le mieux qu'il eſt poſ- "ſible. Ces outils ſont un fond dont le Tamole tire un revenu conſiderable, car il "les donne à louage, & ce louage ſe paye aſſez chere." p. 314.

lying between them and the Ladrones, which have been frequented by the Spaniards, almoſt ever ſince the date of Magellan's voyage. Or, if the diſtant Weſtern ſituation of the Ladrones ſhould render this ſolution leſs probable, is there not the extenſive continent of America to windward, where the Spaniards have been ſettled for more than two hundred years; during which long period of time, ſhipwrecks muſt have frequently happened on its coaſts? It cannot be thought at all extraordinary, that part of ſuch wrecks, containing iron, ſhould, by the Eaſterly trade wind, be, from time to time, caſt upon iſlands ſcattered about this vaſt ocean. The diſtance of Atooi from America, is no argument againſt this ſuppoſition. But even if it were, it would not deſtroy it. This ocean is traverſed every year by Spaniſh ſhips; and it is obvious, that, beſides the accident of loſing a maſt, and its appendages, caſks with iron hoops, and many other things containing iron, may be thrown, or may fall overboard, during ſo long a paſſage, and thus find their way to land. But theſe are not mere conjectures and poſſibilities; for one of my people actually did ſee ſome wood in one of the houſes at Wymoa, which he judged to be fir. It was worm-eaten, and the natives gave him to underſtand, that it had been driven aſhore by the waves of the ſea; and we had their own expreſs teſtimony, that they had got the inconſiderable ſpecimens of iron found amongſt them, from ſome place to the Eaſtward. 1778. February.

From this digreſſion (if it can be called ſo), I return to the obſervations made during our ſtay at Atooi; and ſome account muſt now be given of their canoes. Theſe, in general, are about twenty-four feet long, and have the bottom, for the moſt part, formed of a ſingle piece or log of wood, hollowed out to the thickneſs of an inch, or an inch and an

1778. February. half, and brought to a point at each end. The ſides conſiſt of three boards, each about an inch thick, and neatly fitted and laſhed to the bottom part. The extremities, both at head and ſtern, are a little raiſed, and both are made ſharp, ſomewhat like a wedge; but they flatten more abruptly; ſo that the two ſide-boards join each other, ſide by ſide, for more than a foot. But Mr. Webber's drawing will explain their conſtruction more accurately than my deſcription in words. As they are not more than fifteen or eighteen inches broad, thoſe that go ſingle (for they ſometimes join them as at the other iſlands), have out-riggers, which are ſhaped and fitted with more judgment than any I had before ſeen. They are rowed by paddles, ſuch as we had generally met with; and ſome of them have a light triangular ſail, like thoſe of the Friendly Iſlands, extended to a maſt and boom. The ropes uſed for their boats, and the ſmaller cords for their fiſhing-tackle, are ſtrong and well made.

What we ſaw of their agriculture, furniſhed ſufficient proofs that they are not novices in that art. The vale ground has already been mentioned as one continued plantation of *taro*, and a few other things, which have all the appearance of being well attended to. The potatoe fields, and ſpots of ſugar-cane, or plantains, on the higher grounds, are planted with the ſame regularity; and always in ſome determinate figure; generally as a ſquare or oblong; but neither theſe, nor the others, are incloſed with any kind of fence, unleſs we reckon the ditches in the low grounds ſuch; which, it is more probable, are intended to convey water to the *taro*. The great quantity and goodneſs of theſe articles may alſo, perhaps, be as much attributed to ſkilful culture, as to natural fertility of ſoil, which ſeems better adapted

adapted to them than to bread-fruit and cocoa-nut trees; the few which we ſaw of theſe latter not being in a thriving ſtate, which will ſufficiently account for the preference given to the culture of the other articles, though more labour be required to produce them. But notwithſtanding this ſkill in agriculture, the general appearance of the iſland ſhewed, that it was capable of much more extenſive improvement, and of maintaining, at leaſt, three times the number of the inhabitants that are at preſent upon it; for the far greater part of it, that now lies quite waſte, ſeemed to be as good a ſoil as thoſe parts of it that are in cultivation. We muſt therefore conclude, that theſe people, from ſome cauſe, which we were not long enough amongſt them to be able to trace, do not increaſe in that proportion, which would make it neceſſary to avail themſelves of the extent of their iſland, toward raiſing a greater quantity of its vegetable productions for their ſubſiſtence. 1778. February.

Though I did not ſee a Chief of any note, there were, however, ſeveral, as the natives informed us, who reſide upon Atooi, and to whom they proſtrate themſelves as a mark of ſubmiſſion; which ſeems equivalent to the *moe*, *moea*, paid to the Chiefs of the Friendly Iſlands, and is called here *hamoea* or *moe*. Whether they were, at firſt, afraid to ſhew themſelves, or happened to be abſent, I cannot ſay; but after I had left the iſland, one of theſe great men made his appearance, and paid a viſit to Captain Clerke on board the Diſcovery. He came off in a double canoe; and, like the king of the Friendly Iſlands, paid no regard to the ſmall canoes that happened to lie in his way, but ran againſt, or over them, without endeavouring, in the leaſt, to avoid them. And it was not poſſible for theſe poor people to avoid him, for they could not manage their canoes; it being a neceſſary mark

1778. February. mark of their ſubmiſſion, that they ſhould lie down till he had paſſed. His attendants helped him into the ſhip, and placed him on the gang-way. Their care of him did not ceaſe then; for they ſtood round him, holding each other by the hands; nor would they ſuffer any one to come near him but Captain Clerke himſelf. He was a young man, clothed from head to foot; and accompanied by a young woman, ſuppoſed to be his wife. His name was ſaid to be Tamahano. Captain Clerke made him ſome ſuitable preſents; and received from him, in return, a large bowl, ſupported by two figures of men, the carving of which, both as to the deſign and the execution, ſhewed ſome degree of ſkill. This bowl, as our people were told, uſed to be filled with the *kava*, or *ava* (as it is called at Otaheite), which liquor they prepare and drink here, as at the other iſlands in this ocean. Captain Clerke could not prevail upon this great man to go below, nor to move from the place where his attendants had firſt fixed him. After ſtaying ſome time in the ſhip, he was carried again into his canoe, and returned to the iſland, receiving the ſame honours from all the natives, as when he came on board. The next day, ſeveral meſſages were ſent to Captain Clerke, inviting him to return the viſit aſhore, and acquainting him, that the Chief had prepared a large preſent on that occaſion. But being anxious to get to ſea, and join the Reſolution, the Captain did not think it adviſeable to accept of the invitation.

The very ſhort and imperfect intercourſe which we had with the natives, put it out of our power to form any accurate judgment of the mode of government eſtabliſhed amongſt them; but, from the general reſemblance of cuſtoms, and particularly from what we obſerved of the honours paid to their Chiefs, it ſeems reaſonable to believe, that

that it is of the ſame nature with that which prevails throughout all the iſlands we had hitherto viſited; and, probably, their wars amongſt themſelves are equally frequent. This, indeed, might be inferred from the number of weapons which we found them poſſeſſed of, and from the excellent order theſe were kept in. But we had direct proof of the fact from their own confeſſion; and, as we underſtood, theſe wars are between the different diſtricts of their own iſland, as well as between it and their neighbours of Oneeheow and Orrehoua. We need ſcarcely aſſign any other cauſe beſides this, to account for the appearance, already mentioned, of their population bearing no proportion to the extent of their ground capable of cultivation. 1778. February.

Beſides their ſpears or lances, made of a fine cheſnut-coloured wood, beautifully poliſhed, ſome of which are barbed at one end, and flattened to a point at the other, they have a ſort of weapon which we had never ſeen before, and not mentioned by any navigator, as uſed by the natives of the South Sea. It is ſomewhat like a dagger; in general, about a foot and a half long, ſharpened at one or both ends, and ſecured to the hand by a ſtring. Its uſe is to ſtab in cloſe fight; and it ſeems well adapted to the purpoſe. Some of theſe may be called double daggers, having a handle in the middle, with which they are better enabled to ſtrike different ways. They have alſo bows and arrows; but, both from their apparent ſcarcity, and their ſlender make, it may almoſt be preſumed that they never uſe them in battle. The knife or ſaw, formerly mentioned, with which they diſſect the dead bodies, may alſo be ranked amongſt their weapons, as they both ſtrike and cut with it, when cloſely engaged. It is a ſmall flat wooden inſtrument, of an oblong ſhape, about a foot long, rounded at the corners,

1778. February. corners, with a handle, almoſt like one ſort of the *patoos* of New Zealand; but its edges are entirely ſurrounded with ſharks' teeth ſtrongly fixed to it, and pointing outward; having commonly a hole in the handle, through which paſſes a long ſtring, which is wrapped ſeveral times round the wriſt. We alſo ſuſpected that they uſe ſlings on ſome occaſions; for we got ſome pieces of the *hæmatites*, or blood-ſtone, artificially made of an oval ſhape, divided longitudinally, with a narrow groove in the middle of the convex part. To this the perſon, who had one of them, applied a cord of no great thickneſs, but would not part with it, though he had no objection to part with the ſtone, which muſt prove fatal when thrown with any force, as it weighed a pound. We likewiſe ſaw ſome oval pieces of whetſtone well poliſhed, but ſomewhat pointed toward each end, nearly reſembling in ſhape ſome ſtones which we had ſeen at New Caledonia in 1774, and uſed there in their ſlings.

What we could learn of their religious inſtitutions, and the manner of diſpoſing of their dead, which may, properly, be conſidered as cloſely connected, has been already mentioned. And as nothing more ſtrongly points out the affinity between the manners of theſe people and of the Friendly and Society Iſlands, I muſt juſt mention ſome other circumſtances to place this in a ſtrong point of view; and, at the ſame time, to ſhew how a few of the infinite modifications of which a few leading principles are capable, may diſtinguiſh any particular nation. The people of Tongataboo inter their dead in a very decent manner, and they alſo inter their human ſacrifices; but they do not offer, or expoſe any other animal, or even vegetable, to their Gods, as far as we know. Thoſe of Otaheite do not inter their dead, but expoſe them to waſte by time and putrefaction,

though the bones are afterward buried; and, as this is the caſe, it is very remarkable, that they ſhould inter the entire bodies of their human ſacrifices. They alſo offer other animals, and vegetables, to their gods; but are, by no means, attentive to the ſtate of the ſacred places, where thoſe ſolemn rites are performed; moſt of their *Morais* being in a ruinous condition, and bearing evident marks of neglect. The people of Atooi, again, inter both their common dead, and human ſacrifices, as at Tongataboo; but they reſemble thoſe of Otaheite, in the ſlovenly ſtate of their religious places, and in offering vegetables and animals to their gods. 1778. February.

The *taboo* alſo prevails in Atooi, in its full extent, and ſeemingly with much more rigour than even at Tongataboo. For the people here always aſked, with great eagerneſs and ſigns of fear to offend, whether any particular thing, which they deſired to ſee, or we were unwilling to ſhew, was *taboo*, or, as they pronounced the word, *tafoo?* The *maia*, *raä*, or forbidden articles at the Society Iſlands, though, doubtleſs, the ſame thing, did not ſeem to be ſo ſtrictly obſerved by them, except with reſpect to the dead, about whom we thought them more ſuperſtitious than any of the others were. But theſe are circumſtances with which we are not, as yet, ſufficiently acquainted, to be deciſive about; and I ſhall only juſt obſerve, to ſhew the ſimilitude in other matters, connected with religion, that the prieſts, or *tabounas*, here, are as numerous as at the other iſlands; if we may judge, from our being able, during our ſhort ſtay, to diſtinguiſh ſeveral, ſaying their *poore*, or prayer.

But whatever reſemblance we might diſcover, in the general manners of the people of Atooi, to thoſe of Otaheite, theſe,

1778. February. of courſe, were leſs ſtriking than the coincidence of language. Indeed, the languages of both places may be ſaid to be almoſt, word for word, the ſame. It is true, that we ſometimes remarked particular words to be pronounced exactly as we had found at New Zealand, and the Friendly Iſlands; but though all the four dialects are indiſputably the ſame, theſe people, in general, have neither the ſtrong guttural pronunciation of the former, nor a leſs degree of it, which alſo diſtinguiſhes the latter; and they have not only adopted the ſoft mode of the Otaheiteans, in avoiding harſh ſounds, but the whole idiom of their language; uſing not only the ſame affixes and ſuffixes to their words, but the ſame meaſure and cadence in their ſongs; though in a manner ſomewhat leſs agreeable. There ſeems, indeed, at firſt hearing, ſome diſagreement, to the ear of a ſtranger; but it ought be conſidered, that the people of Otaheite, from their frequent connections with the Engliſh, had learnt, in ſome meaſure, to adapt themſelves to our ſcanty knowledge of their language, by uſing not only the moſt common, but even corrupted expreſſions, in converſation with us; whereas, when they converſed among themſelves, and uſed the ſeveral parts neceſſary to propriety of ſpeech, they were ſcarcely at all underſtood by thoſe amongſt us, who had made the greateſt proficiency in their vocabulary. A catalogue of words was collected at Atooi, by Mr. Anderſon, who loſt no opportunity of making our voyage uſeful to thoſe, who amuſe themſelves in tracing the migrations of the various tribes, or families, that have peopled the globe, by the moſt convincing of all arguments, that drawn from affinity of language.

How ſhall we account for this nation's having ſpread itſelf, in ſo many detached iſlands, ſo widely disjoined from

each other, in every quarter of the Pacific Ocean! We find it, from New Zealand, in the South, as far as the Sandwich Iſlands, to the North! And, in another direction, from Eaſter Iſland, to the Hebrides! That is, over an extent of ſixty degrees of latitude, or twelve hundred leagues, North and South! And eighty-three degrees of longitude, or ſixteen hundred and ſixty leagues, Eaſt and Weſt! How much farther, in either direction, its colonies reach, is not known; but what we know already, in conſequence of this and our former voyage, warrants our pronouncing it to be, though perhaps not the moſt numerous, certainly, by far, the moſt extenſive nation upon earth*. 1778. February.

Had the Sandwich Iſlands been diſcovered at an early period, by the Spaniards, there is little doubt that they would have taken advantage of ſo excellent a ſituation, and have made uſe of Atooi, or ſome other of the iſlands, as a refreſhing place to the ſhips, that ſail annually from Acapulco for Manilla. They lie almoſt midway between the firſt place and Guam one of the Ladrones, which is at preſent their only port in traverſing this vaſt ocean; and it would not have been a week's ſail out of their common route, to have touched at them; which could have been done, without running the leaſt hazard of loſing the paſſage, as they are ſufficiently within the verge of the Eaſterly trade-wind. An acquaintance with the Sandwich Iſlands would have been equally favourable to our Buccaneers; who uſed ſometimes to paſs from the coaſt of America to the Ladrones, with a ſtock of food and water ſcarcely ſufficient to preſerve life. Here they might always have found plenty, and have been within a month's ſure ſail of the very part of California, which the

* See more about the great extent of the colonies of this nation, in the Introductory Preface.

1778. February. Manilla ſhip is obliged to make, or elſe have returned to the coaſt of America, thoroughly refitted, after an abſence of two months. How happy would Lord Anſon have been, and what hardſhips would he have avoided, if he had known that there was a group of iſlands, half way between America and Tinian, where all his wants could have been effectually ſupplied; and in deſcribing which, the elegant hiſtorian of that voyage, would have preſented his reader with a more agreeable picture, than I have been able to draw in this chapter?

9

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

Obſervations made at the Sandwich Iſlands, on the Longitude, Variation of the Compaſs, and Tides.—Proſecution of the Voyage.—Remarks on the Mildneſs of the Weather, as far as the Latitude 44° North.—Paucity of Sea Birds, in the Northern Hemiſphere.—Small Sea Animals deſcribed.—Arrival on the Coaſt of America.—Appearance of the Country.—Unfavourable Winds, and boiſterous Weather.—Remarks on Martin de Aguilar's River, and Juan de Fuca's pretended Strait.—An Inlet diſcovered, where the Ships anchor.—Behaviour of the Natives.

AFTER the Diſcovery had joined us, we ſtood away to the Northward, cloſe hauled, with a gentle gale from the Eaſt; and nothing occurring, in this ſituation, worthy of a place in my narrative, the reader will permit me to inſert here the nautical obſervations which I had opportunities of making, relative to the iſlands we had left; and which we had been fortunate enough to add to the geography of this part of the Pacific Ocean. 1778. February. Monday 2.

The longitude of the Sandwich Iſlands, was determined by ſeventy-two ſets of lunar obſervations; ſome of which were made while we were at anchor, in the road of Wymoa; others, before we arrived, and after we left it, and reduced to it, by the watch, or time-keeper. By the mean

1778. February. mean reſult of theſe obſervations, the longitude of the road is — " — 200° 13′ 0″ Eaſt.

Time-keeper	Greenwich rate,	202° 0′	0″
	Ulietea rate	200° 21′	0″

The latitude of the road, by the mean of two meridian obſervations of the ſun } 21° 56′ 15″ North.

The obſervations for the variation of the compaſs, did not agree very well among themſelves. It is true, they were not all made exactly in the ſame ſpot. The different ſituations, however, could make very little difference. But the whole will be beſt ſeen by caſting an eye on the following table.

Time.	Latitude.	Longitude.	Compaſs.	Eaſt Variation.	Mean Variation.
January 18th. A. M.	21° 12′	200° 41′	Gregory's	10° 10′ 10″	9° 51′ 38″
			Knight's	9° 20′ 5″	
			Martin's	10° 4′ 40″	
19th. P. M.	21° 51′	200° 20′	Knight's	10° 2′ 10″	10° 37′ 20″
			Gregory's	11° 12′ 30″	
28th. A. M.	21° 22′	199° 56′	Gregory's	9° 1′ 20″	9° 26′ 57″
			Knight's	9° 1′ 25″	
			Martin's	10° 18′ 5″	
28th. P. M.	21° 36′	199° 50′	Gregory's	11° 21′ 15″	11° 12′ 50″
			Knight's	10° 40′ 0″	
			Martin's	11° 37′ 50″	
Means of the above	21° 29′	200° 12′			10° 17′ 11″
On January 18th.	21° 12′	200° 41′	the North end of the needle dipped 42° 1′ 7″.		

The tides, at the Sandwich Iſlands, are ſo inconſiderable, that, with the great ſurf which broke againſt the ſhore, it was hardly poſſible to tell, at any time, whether we had high or low water, or whether it ebbed or flowed. On the South ſide of Atooi, we generally found a current ſetting to the

the Weſtward, or North Weſtward. But when we were at anchor off Oneeheow, the current ſet nearly North Weſt and South Eaſt, ſix hours one way, and ſix the other, and ſo ſtrong as to make the ſhips tend, though the wind blew freſh. This was certainly a regular tide; and, as far as I could judge, the flood came from the North Weſt. 1778. February.

I now return to the progreſs of our voyage. On the 7th, being in the latitude of 29° North, and in the longitude of 200° Eaſt, the wind veered to South Eaſt. This enabled us to ſteer North Eaſt and Eaſt; which courſe we continued till the 12th, when the wind had veered round by the South and Weſt, to North Eaſt and Eaſt North Eaſt. I then tacked, and ſtood to the Northward, our latitude being 30° North, and our longitude 206° 15′ Eaſt. Notwithſtanding our advanced latitude, and its being the winter ſeaſon, we had only begun, for a few days paſt, to feel a ſenſation of cold in the mornings and evenings. This is a ſign of the equal and laſting influence of the ſun's heat, at all ſeaſons, to 30° on each ſide the line. The diſproportion is known to become very great after that. This muſt be attributed, almoſt entirely, to the direction of the rays of the ſun, independent of the bare diſtance, which is, by no means, equal to the effect. Saturday 7. Thurſday 12.

On the 19th, being now in the latitude of 37° North, and in the longitude of 206° Eaſt, the wind veered to South Eaſt; and I was enabled again to ſteer to the Eaſt, inclining to the North. We had, on the 25th, reached the latitude of 42° 30′, and the longitude of 219°; and then we began to meet with the rock-weed, mentioned by the writer of Lord Anſon's voyage, under the name of ſea-leek, which the Manilla ſhips generally fall in with. Now and then, a piece of wood alſo appeared. But, if we had not known, that the continent of Thurſday 19.

1778. February. of North America was not far diſtant, we might, from the few ſigns of the vicinity of land hitherto met with, have concluded, that there was none within ſome thouſand leagues of us. We had hardly ſeen a bird, or any other oceanic animal, ſince we left Sandwich Iſlands.

March. Sunday 1. On the 1ſt of March, our latitude being now 44° 49′ North, and our longitude 228° Eaſt, we had one calm day. This was ſucceeded by a wind from the North, with which I ſtood to the Eaſt cloſe hauled, in order to make the land. According to the charts, it ought not to have been far from us. It was remarkable, that we ſhould ſtill carry with us ſuch moderate and mild weather, ſo far to the Northward, and ſo near the coaſt of an extenſive continent, at this time of the year. The preſent ſeaſon either muſt be uncommon for its mildneſs, or we can aſſign no reaſon, why Sir Francis Drake ſhould have met with ſuch ſevere cold, about this latitude, in the month of June*. Viſcaino, indeed, who was near the ſame place, in the depth of winter, ſays little of the cold, and ſpeaks of a ridge of ſnowy mountains, ſomewhere on the coaſt, as a thing rather remarkable†. Our ſeeing ſo few birds, in compariſon of what we met with in the ſame latitudes, to the South of the line, is another ſingular circumſtance, which muſt either proceed from a ſcarcity of the different ſorts, or from a deficiency of places to reſt upon. From hence we may conclude, that beyond 40° in the Southern hemiſphere, the ſpecies are much more numerous, and the iſles where they inhabit alſo more plenti-

* See the account of Sir Francis's voyage, in Campbell's edition of Harris, Vol. i. p. 18. and other Collections.

† See Torquemada's Narrative of Viſcaino's Expedition, in 1602 and 1603, in the ſecond volume of Vanegas's Hiſtory of California, Engliſh tranſlation, from p. 229. to p. 308.

fully

fully ſcattered about, than any where between the coaſt of California and Japan, in or near that latitude. 1778. March.

During a calm, on the morning of the 2d, ſome parts of the ſea ſeemed covered with a kind of ſlime; and ſome ſmall ſea animals were ſwimming about. The moſt conſpicuous of which, were of the gelatinous, or *meduſa* kind, almoſt globular; and another ſort ſmaller, that had a white, or ſhining appearance, and were very numerous. Some of theſe laſt were taken up, and put into a glaſs cup, with ſome ſalt water, in which they appeared like ſmall ſcales, or bits of ſilver, when at reſt, in a prone ſituation. When they began to ſwim about, which they did, with equal eaſe, upon their back, ſides, or belly, they emitted the brighteſt colours of the moſt precious gems, according to their poſition with reſpect to the light. Sometimes they appeared quite pellucid, at other times aſſuming various tints of blue, from a pale ſapphirine, to a deep violet colour; which were frequently mixed with a ruby, or opaline redneſs; and glowed with a ſtrength ſufficient to illuminate the veſſel and water. Theſe colours appeared moſt vivid, when the glaſs was held to a ſtrong light; and moſtly vaniſhed, on the ſubſiding of the animals to the bottom, when they had a browniſh caſt. But, with candle light, the colour was, chiefly, a beautiful, pale green, tinged with a burniſhed gloſs; and, in the dark, it had a faint appearance of glowing fire. They proved to be a new ſpecies of *oniſcus*, and, from their properties, were, by Mr. Anderſon (to whom we owe this account of them), called *oniſcus fulgens*; being, probably, an animal which has a ſhare in producing ſome ſorts of that lucid appearance, often obſerved near ſhips at ſea, in the night. On the ſame day, two large birds ſettled on the water, near the ſhip. One of theſe was the *procellaria* Monday 2.

1778 March. *maxima* (the *quebrantahueſſos*), and the other, which was little more than half the ſize, ſeemed to be of the *albatroſs* kind. The upper part of the wings, and tip of the tail, were black, with the reſt white; the bill yellowiſh; upon the whole, not unlike the ſea-gull, though larger.

Friday 6. On the 6th, at noon, being in the latitude of 44° 10′ North, and the longitude of 234 ½° Eaſt, we ſaw two ſeals, and ſeve-

Saturday 7. ral whales; and at day-break, the next morning, the long-looked for coaſt of New Albion* was ſeen, extending from North Eaſt to South Eaſt, diſtant ten or twelve leagues. At noon, our latitude was 44° 33′ North, and our longitude 235° 20′ Eaſt; and the land extended from North Eaſt half North, to South Eaſt by South, about eight leagues diſtant. In this ſituation, we had ſeventy-three fathoms water, over a muddy bottom, and about a league farther off found ninety fathoms. The land appeared to be of a moderate height, diverſified with hills and vallies, and, almoſt every where, covered with wood. There was, however, no very ſtriking object on any part of it, except one hill, whoſe elevated ſummit was flat. This bore Eaſt from us, at noon. At the Northern extreme, the land formed a point, which I called *Cape Foulweather*, from the very bad weather that we, ſoon after, met with. I judge it to lie in the latitude of 44° 55′ North, and in the longitude of 235° 54′ Eaſt.

We had variable light airs and calms, till eight o'clock in the evening, when a breeze ſprung up at South Weſt. With it, I ſtood to the North Weſt, under an eaſy ſail, waiting for

Sunday 8. day-light to range along the coaſt. But at four, next morning, the wind ſhifted to North Weſt, and blew in ſqualls, with rain. Our courſe was North Eaſt, till near ten o'clock,

* This part of the Weſt ſide of North America, was ſo named by Sir Francis Drake.

when,

Views on the West Coast of AMERICA.

View when Table Hill bore E.b.N.4 N.

View when Mount Edgecumbe bore N.W.b.N. ½ lea.s dist.t

View of the Entrance of NOOTKA Sound when the N.point of the Entrance bore E.b.S.4 Miles

View of Mount Edgecumbe when the Cape bore N.¼ W.4 lea.s dist.t

View when Mount St.Elias bore N.W.b.W. 20 lea.s

View of Kayes Island the S.End bearing W.S.W.4 or 9 lea.s

View of Kayes Island bearing from S.W.b.W.to N.W.¼ W.distant from the nearest part 3¼ lea.s

View of Kayes Island when the N.End bore N.¾ other dist.t

N.B. in the three last Views is the same Land.

View of the Land in PRINCE WILLIAM'S Sound, taken from the first Anchoring to the Northward of Cape Hinchingbrook.

when, finding that I could make no progreſs on this tack, and ſeeing nothing like a harbour, I tacked, and ſtood off South Weſt. At this time, Cape Foulweather bore North Eaſt by North, about eight leagues diſtant. Toward noon, the wind veered more to the Weſtward, and the weather became fair and clear; ſo that we were enabled to make lunar obſervations. Having reduced all thoſe that we had made ſince the 19th of laſt month to the preſent ones, by the time-keeper, amounting, in the whole, to ſeventy-two ſets; their mean reſult determined the longitude to be 235° 15′ 26″ Eaſt, which was 14′ 11″ leſs than what the time-keeper gave. This longitude is made uſe of for ſettling that of the coaſt; and I have not a doubt of its being within a very few miles of the truth. 1778. March.

Our difficulties now began to increaſe. In the evening, the wind came to the North Weſt, blowing in ſqualls with hail and ſleet; and the weather being thick and hazy, I ſtood out to ſea till near noon the next day, when I tacked and ſtood in again for the land, which made its appearance at two in the afternoon, bearing Eaſt North Eaſt. The wind and weather continued the ſame; but, in the evening, the former veered more to the Weſt, and the latter grew worſe; which made it neceſſary to tack and ſtand off till four the next morning, when I ventured to ſtand in again. Monday 9.

At four in the afternoon, we ſaw the land, which, at ſix, extended from North Eaſt half Eaſt, to South Eaſt by South, about eight leagues diſtant. In this ſituation, we tacked and ſounded; but a line of a hundred and ſixty fathoms did not reach the ground. I ſtood off till midnight, then ſtood in again; and, at half paſt ſix, we were within three leagues of the land, which extended from North by Eaſt, half Eaſt, Tueſday 10. Wedneſ. 11.

1778. March. to South, half Eaſt; each extreme about ſeven leagues diſtant. Seeing no ſigns of a harbour, and the weather being ſtill unſettled, I tacked and ſtretched off South Weſt, having then fifty-five fathoms water over a muddy bottom.

That part of the land, which we were ſo near when we tacked, is of a moderate height, though, in ſome places, it riſes higher within. It was diverſified with a great many riſing grounds and ſmall hills; many of which were entirely covered with tall, ſtraight trees; and others, which were lower, and grew in ſpots like coppices; but the interſpaces, and ſides of many of the riſing grounds, were clear. The whole, though it might make an agreeable ſummer proſpect, had now an uncomfortable appearance; as the bare grounds toward the coaſt were all covered with ſnow, which ſeemed to be of a conſiderable depth between the little hills and riſing grounds; and, in ſeveral places toward the ſea, might eaſily have been miſtaken, at a diſtance, for white cliffs. The ſnow on the riſing grounds was thinner ſpread; and farther inland, there was no appearance of any; from whence we might, perhaps, conclude, that what we ſaw toward the ſea, had fallen during the night; which was colder than any we had experienced ſince our arrival on the coaſt; and we had ſometimes a kind of ſleet. The coaſt ſeemed every where almoſt ſtraight, without any opening or inlet; and it appeared to terminate in a kind of white ſandy beach; though ſome on board thought that appearance was owing to the ſnow. Each extreme of the land that was now before us, ſeemed to ſhoot out into a point. The Northern one was the ſame which we had firſt ſeen on the 7th; and, on that account, I called it *Cape Perpetua*. It lies in the latitude of 44° 6′ North, and in the longitude of 235° 52′ Eaſt. The Southern extreme before us, I named

Cape

Cape Gregory *. Its latitude is 43° 30′, and its longitude 235° 57′ Eaſt. It is a remarkable point; the land of it riſing almoſt directly from the ſea, to a tolerable height, while that on each ſide of it is low. 1778. March.

I continued ſtanding off till one in the afternoon. Then I tacked, and ſtood in, hoping to have the wind off from the land in the night. But in this I was miſtaken; for at five o'clock it began to veer to the Weſt and South Weſt; which obliged me, once more, to ſtand out to ſea. At this time, Cape Perpetua bore North Eaſt by North; and the fartheſt land we could ſee to the South of Cape Gregory, bore South by Eaſt, perhaps ten or twelve leagues diſtant. If I am right in this eſtimation, its latitude will be 43° 10′, and its longitude 235° 55′ Eaſt, which is nearly the ſituation of Cape Blanco, diſcovered or ſeen by Martin d'Aguilar, on the 19th of January, 1603. It is worth obſerving, that, in the very latitude where we now were, geographers have been pleaſed to place a large entrance or ſtrait, the diſcovery of which they take upon them to aſcribe to the ſame navigator; whereas nothing more is mentioned in the account of his voyage, than his having ſeen, in this ſituation, a large river, which he would have entered, but was prevented by the currents †.

The wind, as I have obſerved, had veered to South Weſt in the evening; but it was very unſettled, and blew in ſqualls with ſnow ſhowers. In one of theſe, at midnight, it ſhifted at once to Weſt North Weſt, and ſoon increaſed to a very hard gale, with heavy ſqualls, attended with ſleet or ſnow. There was no choice now; and we were obliged

* In our calendar, the 7th of March is diſtinguiſhed by the name of Perpetua M, and the 12th by that of Gregory B.

† See the Hiſtory of California. Eng. tranſ. Vol. ii. p. 292.

to

1778. March. to ſtretch to the Southward, in order to get clear of the coaſt. This was done under courſes, and two cloſe-reefed topſails; being rather more ſail than the ſhips could ſafely bear; but it was neceſſary to carry it to avoid the more preſſing danger of being forced on ſhore. This gale con-
Friday 13. tinued till eight o'clock in the morning of the 13th; when it abated, and I ſtood in again for the land. We had been forced a conſiderable way backward; for at the time of our tacking, we were in the latitude of 42° 45′, and in the longitude of 233° 30′.

The wind continued at Weſt, and North Weſt; ſtorms, moderate weather, and calms, ſucceeding each other by
Saturday 21. turns, till the morning of the 21ſt; when, after a few hours calm, a breeze ſprung up at South Weſt. This bringing with it fair weather, I ſteered North Eaſterly, in order to fall in with the land, beyond that part of it where we had already ſo unprofitably been toſſed about for the laſt fortnight. In the evening, the wind veered to the Weſtward;
Sunday 22. and, at eight o'clock, the next morning, we ſaw the land, extending from North Eaſt to Eaſt, nine leagues diſtant. At this time we were in the latitude of 47° 5′ North, and in the longitude of 235° 10′ Eaſt.

I continued to ſtand to the North with a fine breeze at Weſt, and Weſt North Weſt, till near ſeven o'clock in the evening, when I tacked to wait for day-light. At this time, we were in forty-eight fathoms water, and about four leagues from the land, which extended from North to South Eaſt half Eaſt, and a ſmall round hill, which had the appearance of being an iſland, bore North three quarters Eaſt, diſtant ſix or ſeven leagues, as I gueſſed; it appears to be of a tolerable height, and was but juſt to be ſeen from the

deck. Between this iſland or rock, and the Northern extreme of the land, there appeared to be a ſmall opening, which flattered us with the hopes of finding an harbour. Theſe hopes leſſened as we drew nearer; and, at laſt, we had ſome reaſon to think, that the opening was cloſed by low land. On this account I called the point of land to the North of it *Cape Flattery*. It lies in the latitude of 48° 15′ North, and in the longitude of 235° 3′ Eaſt. There is a round hill of a moderate height over it; and all the land upon this part of the coaſt is of a moderate and pretty equal height, well covered with wood, and had a very pleaſant and fertile appearance. It is in this very latitude where we now were, that geographers have placed the pretended ſtrait of Juan de Fuca. But we ſaw nothing like it; nor is there the leaſt probability that ever any ſuch thing exiſted *. 1778. March.

I ſtood off to the Southward till midnight, when I tacked, and ſteered to the North Weſt, with a gentle breeze at South Weſt, intending to ſtand in for the land as ſoon as day-light ſhould appear. But, by that time, we were reduced to two courſes and cloſe-reefed top-ſails, having a very hard gale, with rain, right on ſhore; ſo that, inſtead of running in for the land, I was glad to get an offing, or to keep that which we had already got. The South Weſt wind was, however, but of ſhort continuance; for, in the evening, it veered again to the Weſt. Thus had we perpetually ſtrong Weſt and North Weſt winds to encounter. Sometimes, in an evening, the wind would become moderate, and veer to the Southward; but this was always a ſure prelude to a Monday 23.

* See Michael Locke's apocryphal account of Juan de Fuca, and his pretended ſtrait, in Purchas, Vol. iii. p. 849—852. and many later Collections.

ſtorm,

1778. March. ſtorm, which blew the hardeſt at South South Eaſt, and was attended with rain and ſleet. It ſeldom laſted above four or ſix hours, before it was ſucceeded by another gale from the North Weſt, which, generally, brought with it fair weather. It was, by the means of theſe Southerly blaſts, that we were enabled to get to the North Weſt at all.

Sunday 29. At length, at nine o'clock in the morning of the 29th, as we were ſtanding to the North Eaſt, we again ſaw the land, which, at noon, extended from North Weſt by Weſt, to Eaſt South Eaſt, the neareſt part about ſix leagues diſtant. Our latitude was now 49° 29′ North, and our longitude 232° 29′ Eaſt. The appearance of the country differed much from that of the parts which we had before ſeen; being full of high mountains, whoſe ſummits were covered with ſnow. But the valleys between them, and the grounds on the ſea coaſt, high as well as low, were covered to a conſiderable breadth with high, ſtraight trees, that formed a beautiful proſpect, as of one vaſt foreſt. The South Eaſt extreme of the land formed a low point, off which are many breakers, occaſioned by ſunken rocks. On this account it was called *Point Breakers*. It lies in the latitude of 49° 15′ North, and in the longitude of 233° 20′ Eaſt; and the other extreme, in about the latitude of 50°, and the longitude of 232°. I named this laſt *Woody Point*. It projects pretty much out to the South Weſt, and is high land. Between theſe two points, the ſhore forms a large bay, which I called *Hope Bay*; hoping, from the appearance of the land, to find in it a good harbour. The event proved, that we were not miſtaken.

As we drew nearer the coaſt, we perceived the appearance of two inlets; one in the North Weſt, and the other in

the North Eaſt corner of the bay. As I could not fetch the former, I bore up for the latter; and paſſed ſome breakers, or ſunken rocks, that lay a league or more from the ſhore. We had nineteen and twenty fathoms water half a league without them; but as ſoon as we had paſſed them, the depth increaſed to thiry, forty, and fifty fathoms, with a ſandy bottom; and farther in we found no ground with the greateſt length of line. Notwithſtanding appearances, we were not yet ſure that there were any inlets; but, as we were in a deep bay, I had reſolved to anchor, with a view to endeavour to get ſome water, of which, by this time, we were in great want. At length, as we advanced, the exiſtence of the inlet was no longer doubtful. At five o'clock we reached the Weſt point of it, where we were becalmed for ſome time. While in this ſituation, I ordered all the boats to be hoiſted out to tow the ſhips in. But this was hardly done, before a freſh breeze ſprung up again at North Weſt, with which we were enabled to ſtretch up into an arm of the inlet, that was obſerved by us to run in to the North Eaſt. There we were again becalmed, and obliged to anchor in eighty-five fathoms water, and ſo near the ſhore as to reach it with a hawſer. The wind failed the Diſcovery before ſhe got within the arm, where ſhe anchored, and found only ſeventy fathoms. 1778. March.

We no ſooner drew near the inlet than we found the coaſt to be inhabited; and at the place where we were firſt becalmed, three canoes came off to the ſhip. In one of theſe were two men, in another ſix, and in the third ten. Having come pretty near us, a perſon in one of the two laſt ſtood up, and made a long harangue, inviting us to land, as we gueſſed, by his geſtures. At the ſame time, he

1778. March. kept ſtrewing handfuls of feathers toward us*; and ſome of his companions threw handfuls of a red duſt or powder in the ſame manner. The perſon who played the orator, wore the ſkin of ſome animal, and held, in each hand, ſomething which rattled as he kept ſhaking it. After tiring himſelf with his repeated exhortations, of which we did not underſtand a word, he was quiet; and then others took it, by turns, to ſay ſomething, though they acted their part neither ſo long, nor with ſo much vehemence as the other. We obſerved that two or three had their hair quite ſtrewed over with ſmall white feathers; and others had large ones ſtuck into different parts of the head. After the tumultuous noiſe had ceaſed, they lay at a little diſtance from the ſhip, and converſed with each other in a very eaſy manner; nor did they ſeem to ſhew the leaſt ſurprize or diſtruſt. Some of them, now and then, got up, and ſaid ſomething after the manner of their firſt harangues; and one ſung a very agreeable air, with a degree of ſoftneſs and melody which we could not have expected; the word *haela*, being often repeated as the burden of the ſong. The breeze which ſoon after ſprung up, bringing us nearer to the ſhore, the canoes began to come off in greater numbers; and we had, at one time, thirty-two of them near the ſhip, carrying from three to ſeven or eight perſons each, both men and women. Several of theſe ſtood up in their canoes haranguing, and making geſtures after the manner of our firſt viſiters. One canoe was remarkable for a ſingular head, which had a bird's eye and bill, of an enormous ſize, painted on it; and a perſon who was in it, who ſeemed to be a Chief, was no

* The natives of this coaſt, twelve degrees farther South, alſo brought feathers as preſents to Sir Francis Drake on his arrival. See an account of his voyage in *Campbell's edit. of Harris*, Vol. i. p. 18.

leſs

leſs remarkable for his uncommon appearance; having many feathers hanging from his head, and being painted in an extraordinary manner*. He held in his hand a carved bird of wood, as large as a pigeon, with which he rattled as the perſon firſt-mentioned had done; and was no leſs vociferous in his harangue, which was attended with ſome expreſſive geſtures. 1778. March.

Though our viſiters behaved very peaceably, and could not be ſuſpected of any hoſtile intention, we could not prevail upon any of them to come on board. They ſhewed great readineſs, however, to part with any thing they had, and took from us whatever we offered them in exchange; but were more deſirous of iron, than of any other of our articles of commerce; appearing to be perfectly acquainted with the uſe of that metal. Many of the canoes followed us to our anchoring-place; and a group of about ten or a dozen of them remained along-ſide the Reſolution moſt part of the night.

Theſe circumſtances gave us a reaſonable ground of hope, that we ſhould find this a comfortable ſtation to ſupply all our wants, and to make us forget the hardſhips and delays experienced during a conſtant ſucceſſion of adverſe winds, and boiſterous weather, almoſt ever ſince our arrival upon the coaſt of America.

* Viſcaino met with natives on the coaſt of California, while he was in the harbour of San Diego, *who were painted or beſmeared with black and white, and had their heads loaded with feathers. Hiſtory of California*, Vol. ii. p. 272.

A

VOYAGE

TO THE

PACIFIC OCEAN.

BOOK IV.

Tranſactions amongſt the Natives of North America; Diſcoveries along that Coaſt and the Eaſtern Extremity of Aſia, Northward to Icy Cape; and Return Southward to the Sandwich Iſlands.

CHAP. I.

The Ships enter the Sound, and moor in a Harbour.—Intercourſe with the Natives.—Articles brought to barter.—Thefts committed.—The Obſervatories erected, and Carpenters ſet to work.—Jealouſy of the Inhabitants of the Sound to prevent other Tribes having Intercourſe with the Ships.—Stormy and rainy Weather.—Progreſs round the Sound.—Behaviour of the Natives at their Villages.—Their Manner of drying Fiſh, &c.—Remarkable Viſit from Strangers, and introductory Ceremonies.—A ſecond Viſit to one of the Villages.—Leave to cut Graſs, purchaſed.—The Ships ſail.—Preſents given and received at parting.

THE ſhips having happily found ſo excellent ſhelter in an inlet, the coaſts of which appeared to be inhabited by a race of people, whoſe inoffenſive behaviour promiſed a friendly intercourſe, the next morning, 1778. March. Monday 30.

1778. March. ing, after coming to anchor, I loſt no time in endeavouring to find a commodious harbour where we might ſtation ourſelves during our continuance in the Sound. Accordingly, I ſent three armed boats, under the command of Mr. King, upon this ſervice; and ſoon after, I went myſelf, in a ſmall boat, on the ſame ſearch. I had very little trouble in finding what we wanted. On the North Weſt of the arm we were now in, and not far from the ſhips, I met with a convenient ſnug cove well ſuited to our purpoſe. Mr. King was equally ſucceſsful; for he returned about noon, with an account of a ſtill better harbour, which he had ſeen and examined, lying on the North Weſt ſide of the land. But as it would have required more time to carry the ſhips thither, than to the cove where I had been, which was immediately within our reach; this reaſon operated to determine my choice in favour of the latter ſituation. But being apprehenſive, that we ſhould not be able to tranſport our ſhips to it, and to moor them properly, before night came on, I thought it beſt to remain where we were till next morning; and, that no time might be loſt, I employed the remainder of the day to ſome uſeful purpoſes, ordering the ſails to be unbent, the top-maſts to be ſtruck, and the foremaſt of the Reſolution to be unrigged, in order to fix a new bib, one of the old ones being decayed.

A great many canoes, filled with the natives, were about the ſhips all day; and a trade commenced betwixt us and them, which was carried on with the ſtricteſt honeſty on both ſides. The articles which they offered to ſale were ſkins of various animals, ſuch as bears, wolves, foxes, deer, rackoons, polecats, martins; and, in particular, of the ſea otters, which are found at the iſlands Eaſt of Kamtſchatka. Beſides the ſkins in their native ſhape, they alſo brought garments made of them, and another ſort of cloth-

ing

ing made of the bark of a tree, or ſome plant like hemp; weapons, ſuch as bows, arrows, and ſpears; fiſh-hooks, and inſtruments of various kinds; wooden vizors of many different monſtrous figures; a ſort of woollen ſtuff, or blanketing; bags filled with red ochre; pieces of carved work; beads; and ſeveral other little ornaments of thin braſs and iron, ſhaped like a horſe-ſhoe, which they hang at their noſes; and ſeveral chiſſels, or pieces of iron, fixed to handles. From their poſſeſſing which metals, we could infer that they had either been viſited before by ſome civilized nation, or had connections with tribes on their continent, who had communication with them. But the moſt extraordinary of all the articles which they brought to the ſhips for ſale, were human ſkulls, and hands not yet quite ſtripped of the fleſh, which they made our people plainly underſtand they had eaten; and, indeed, ſome of them had evident marks that they had been upon the fire. We had but too much reaſon to ſuſpect, from this circumſtance, that the horrid practice of feeding on their enemies is as prevalent here, as we had found it to be at New Zealand and other South Sea iſlands. For the various articles which they brought, they took in exchange knives, chiſſels, pieces of iron and tin, nails, looking-glaſſes, buttons, or any kind of metal. Glaſs beads they were not fond of; and cloth of every ſort they rejected. 1778. March.

We employed the next day in hauling our ſhips into the cove, where they were moored head and ſtern, faſtening our hawſers to the trees on ſhore. On heaving up the anchor of the Reſolution, we found, notwithſtanding the great depth of water in which it was let go, that there were rocks at the bottom. Theſe had done ſome conſiderable damage to the cable; and the hawſers that were carried out, to warp Tueſday 31.

1778. March. warp the ſhip into the cove, alſo got foul of rocks; from which it appeared that the whole bottom was ſtrewed with them. The ſhip being again very leaky in her upper works, I ordered the carpenters to go to work to caulk her, and to repair ſuch other defects as, on examination, we might diſcover.

The fame of our arrival brought a great concourſe of the natives to our ſhips in the courſe of this day. We counted above a hundred canoes at one time, which might be ſuppoſed to contain, at an average, five perſons each; for few of them had leſs than three on board; great numbers had ſeven, eight, or nine; and one was manned with no leſs than ſeventeen. Amongſt theſe viſiters, many now favoured us with their company for the firſt time, which we could gueſs, from their approaching the ſhips with their orations and other ceremonies. If they had any diſtruſt or fear of us at firſt, they now appeared to have laid it aſide; for they came on board the ſhips, and mixed with our people with the greateſt freedom. We ſoon diſcovered, by this nearer intercourſe, that they were as light-fingered as any of our friends in the iſlands we had viſited in the courſe of the voyage. And they were far more dangerous thieves; for, poſſeſſing ſharp iron inſtruments, they could cut a hook from a tackle, or any other piece of iron from a rope, the inſtant that our backs were turned. A large hook, weighing between twenty and thirty pounds, ſeveral ſmaller ones, and other articles of iron, were loſt in this manner. And, as to our boats, they ſtripped them of every bit of iron that was worth carrying away, though we had always men left in them as a guard. They were dextrous enough in effecting their purpoſes; for one fellow would contrive to amuſe the boat-keeper, at one end of a boat, while another

other was pulling out the iron work at the other. If we missed a thing immediately after it had been stolen, we found little difficulty in detecting the thief, as they were ready enough to impeach one another. But the guilty person generally relinquished his prize with reluctance; and sometimes we found it necessary to have recourse to force. 1778. March.

The ships being securely moored, we began our other necessary business the next day. The observatories were carried ashore, and placed upon an elevated rock on one side of the cove, close to the Resolution. A party of men, with an officer, was sent to cut wood, and to clear a place for the conveniency of watering. Others were employed to brew spruce-beer, as pine trees abounded here. The forge was also set up, to make the iron-work wanting for the repairs of the fore-mast. For, besides one of the bibs being defective, the larboard trestle-tree, and one of the cross-trees were sprung. April. Wednes. 1.

A considerable number of the natives visited us daily; and, every now and then, we saw new faces. On their first coming, they generally went through a singular mode of introducing themselves. They would paddle, with all their strength, quite round both ships, a Chief, or other principal person in the canoe, standing up with a spear, or some other weapon, in his hand, and speaking, or rather hollowing, all the time. Sometimes the orator of the canoe would have his face covered with a mask, representing either a human visage, or that of some animal; and, instead of a weapon, would hold a rattle in his hand, as before described. After making this circuit round the ships, they would come along-side, and begin to trade without further ceremony. Very often, indeed, they would first give us a

1778. April. ſong, in which all in the canoe joined, with a very pleaſing harmony.

During theſe viſits, they gave us no other trouble, than to guard againſt their thieviſh tricks. But, in the Saturday 4. morning of the 4th, we had a ſerious alarm. Our party on ſhore, who were employed in cutting wood, and filling water, obſerved, that the natives all around them were arming themſelves in the beſt manner they could; thoſe, who were not poſſeſſed of proper weapons, preparing ſticks, and collecting ſtones. On hearing this, I thought it prudent to arm alſo; but, being determined to act upon the defenſive, I ordered all our workmen to retreat to the rock, upon which we had placed our obſervatories; leaving the natives in quiet poſſeſſion of the ground where they had aſſembled, which was within a ſtone's throw of the Reſolution's ſtern. Our fears were ill-grounded: theſe hoſtile preparations were not directed againſt us, but againſt a body of their own countrymen, who were coming to fight them; and our friends of the Sound, on obſerving our apprehenſions, uſed their beſt endeavours to convince us that this was the caſe. We could ſee, that they had people looking out, on each point of the cove, and canoes frequently paſſed between them and the main body aſſembled near the ſhips. At length, the adverſe party, in about a dozen large canoes, appeared off the South point of the cove, where they ſtopped, and lay drawn up in line of battle, a negociation having commenced. Some people in canoes, in conducting the treaty, paſſed between the two parties, and there was ſome ſpeaking on both ſides. At length, the difference, whatever it was, ſeemed to be compromiſed; but the ſtrangers were not allowed to come along-ſide the ſhips, nor to have any trade or intercourſe with us. Probably we were the cauſe

cauſe of the quarrel; the ſtrangers, perhaps, being deſirous to ſhare in the advantages of a trade with us; and our firſt friends, the inhabitants of the Sound, being determined to engroſs us entirely to themſelves. We had proofs of this on ſeveral other occaſions; nay, it appeared, that even thoſe who lived in the Sound were not united in the ſame cauſe; for the weaker were frequently obliged to give way to the ſtronger party, and plundered of every thing, without attempting to make the leaſt reſiſtance. 1778. April.

We reſumed our work in the afternoon, and, the next day, rigged the fore-maſt; the head of which being rather too ſmall for the cap, the carpenter went to work, to fix a piece on one ſide, to fill up the vacant ſpace. In cutting into the maſt-head for this purpoſe, and examining the ſtate of it, both cheeks were found to be ſo rotten, that there was no poſſibility of repairing them; and it became neceſſary to get the maſt out, and to fix new ones upon it. It was evident, that one of the cheeks had been defective at the firſt, and that the unſound part had been cut out, and a piece put in; which had not only weakened the maſt-head, but had, in a great meaſure, been the occaſion of rotting every other part of both cheeks. Thus, when we were almoſt ready to put to ſea, we had all our work to do over again; and, what was ſtill more provoking, an additional repair was to be undertaken, which would require ſome time to be completed. But, as there was no remedy, we immediately ſet about it. It was fortunate for the voyage, that theſe defects were diſcovered, when we were in a place, where the materials requiſite were to be procured. For, amongſt the drift-wood, in the cove where the ſhips lay, were ſome ſmall ſeaſoned trees very fit for our purpoſe. One of theſe was pitched upon; and the carpenters began, without loſs of time, to make out of it two new cheeks. Sunday 5.

1778. April. Tueſday 7. In the morning of the 7th, we got the fore-maſt out, and hauled it aſhore; and the carpenters of the ſhips were ſet to work upon it. Some parts of the lower ſtanding rigging having been found to be very much decayed, as we had time now to put them in order, while the carpenters were repairing the fore-maſt, I ordered a new ſet of main-rigging to be fitted, and a more perfect ſet of fore-rigging to be ſelected out of the beſt parts of the old.

From the time of our putting into the Sound till now, the weather had been exceedingly fine, without either wind or rain. That comfort, at the very moment when the continuance of it would have been of moſt ſervice, was with-
Wedneſ. 8. drawn. In the morning of the 8th, the wind freſhened at South Eaſt, attended with thick hazy weather and rain. In the afternoon the wind increaſed; and, toward the evening, it blew very hard indeed. It came, in exceſſively heavy ſqualls, from over the high land on the oppoſite ſhore, right into the cove; and, though the ſhips were very well moored, put them in ſome danger. Theſe tempeſtuous blaſts ſucceeded each other pretty quick; but they were of ſhort duration; and in the intervals between them we had a perfect calm. According to the old proverb, Misfortunes ſeldom come ſingle; the mizen was now the only maſt on board the Reſolution that remained rigged, with its top-maſt up. The former was ſo defective, that it could not ſupport the latter during the violence of the ſqualls, but gave way at the head under the rigging. About eight o'clock the gale abated; but the rain continued with very little intermiſſion for ſeveral days; and, that the carpenters might be enabled to proceed in their labours, while it prevailed, a tent was erected over the fore-maſt, where they could work with ſome degree of convenience.

The

The bad weather which now came on, did not, however, hinder the natives from viſiting us daily; and, in ſuch circumſtances, their viſits were very advantageous to us. For they frequently brought us a tolerable ſupply of fiſh, when we could not catch any ourſelves with hook and line; and there was not a proper place near us where we could draw a net. The fiſh which they brought us were either ſardines; or what reſembled them much, a ſmall kind of bream; and ſometimes ſmall cod. 1778. April.

On the 11th, notwithſtanding the rainy weather, the main-rigging was fixed and got over head; and our employment, the day after, was to take down the mizen-maſt, the head of which proved to be ſo rotten, that it dropped off while in the ſlings. In the evening we were viſited by a tribe of natives whom we had never ſeen before; and who, in general, were better looking people than moſt of our old friends, ſome of whom attended them. I prevailed upon theſe viſiters to go down into the cabin for the firſt time; and obſerved, that there was not a ſingle object that fixed the attention of moſt of them for a moment; their countenances marking, that they looked upon all our novelties with the utmoſt indifference. This, however, was not without exception; for a few of the company ſhewed a certain degree of curioſity. Saturday 11. Sunday 12.

In the afternoon of the next day, I went into the woods with a party of our men, and cut down a tree for a mizen-maſt. On the day following, it was brought to the place where the carpenters were employed upon the fore-maſt. In the evening the wind, which had been, for ſome time, Weſterly, veered to South Eaſt, and increaſed to a very hard gale, with rain, which continued till eight o'clock the next morning, when it abated, and veered again to the Weſt. Monday 13. Tueſday 14. Wedneſ. 15.

The

1778. April. The fore-maſt being, by this time, finiſhed, we hauled it along-ſide; but the bad weather prevented our getting it in till the afternoon; and we ſet about rigging it with the greateſt expedition, while the carpenters were going on with the mizen-maſt on ſhore. They had made very conſiderable
Thurſday 16. progreſs in it on the 16th; when they diſcovered, that the ſtick upon which they were at work was ſprung, or wounded; owing, as ſuppoſed, to ſome accident in cutting it down. So that all their labour was thrown away; and it became neceſſary to get another tree out of the woods, which employed all hands above half a day. During theſe various operations, ſeveral of the natives, who were about the ſhips, looked on with an expreſſive ſilent ſurprize, which we did not expect, from their general indifference and inattention.

Saturday 18. On the 18th, a party of ſtrangers, in ſix or eight canoes, came into the cove, where they remained, looking at us, for ſome time; and then retired, without coming along-ſide either ſhip. We ſuppoſed, that our old friends, who were more numerous, at this time, about us, than theſe new viſiters, would not permit them to have any intercourſe with us. It was evident, upon this and ſeveral other occaſions, that the inhabitants of the adjoining parts of the Sound engroſſed us entirely to themſelves; or if, at any time, they did not hinder ſtrangers from trading with us, they contrived to manage the trade for them in ſuch a manner, that the price of their commodities was always kept up, while the value of ours was leſſening every day. We alſo found, that many of the principal natives, who lived near us, carried on a trade with more diſtant tribes, in the articles they had procured from us. For we obſerved, that they would frequently diſappear for four or five days at a time, and then return with freſh cargoes of ſkins and curioſities, which

SKETCH
of
NOOTKA Sound.
A. Ship Cove. (Lat. 49°. 36. 1'
(Long. 233. 18 E.
Var. 17. 49 E.
1778.
Breakers Point

which our people were ſo paſſionately fond of, that they always came to a good market. But we received moſt benefit from ſuch of the natives as viſited us daily. Theſe, after diſpoſing of all their little trifles, turned their attention to fiſhing; and we never failed to partake of what they caught. We alſo got from theſe people a conſiderable quantity of very good animal oil, which they had reſerved in bladders. In this traffic ſome would attempt to cheat us, by mixing water with the oil; and, once or twice, they had the addreſs to carry their impoſition ſo far, as to fill their bladders with mere water, without a ſingle drop of oil. It was always better to bear with theſe tricks, than to make them the foundation of a quarrel; for our articles of traffic conſiſted, for the moſt part, of mere trifles; and yet we were put to our ſhifts to find a conſtant ſupply even of theſe. Beads, and ſuch other toys, of which I had ſtill ſome left, were in little eſtimation. Nothing would go down with our viſiters but metal; and braſs had, by this time, ſupplanted iron; being ſo eagerly ſought after, that before we left this place, hardly a bit of it was left in the ſhips, except what belonged to our neceſſary inſtruments. Whole ſuits of clothes were ſtripped of every button; bureaus of their furniture; and copper kettles, tin canniſters, candleſticks, and the like, all went to wreck; ſo that our American friends here got a greater medley and variety of things from us, than any other nation whom we had viſited in the courſe of the voyage. 1778. April.

After a fortnight's bad weather, the 19th proving a fair day, we availed ourſelves of it, to get up the top-maſts and yards, and to fix up the rigging. And, having now finiſhed moſt of our heavy work, I ſet out the next morning to take a view of the Sound. I firſt went to the Weſt point, where Sunday 19. Monday 20.

1778. April. I found a large village, and, before it, a very ſnug harbour, in which was from nine to four fathoms water, over a bottom of fine ſand. The people of this village, who were numerous, and to moſt of whom I was well known, received me very courteouſly; every one preſſing me to go into his houſe, or rather his apartment; for ſeveral families live under the ſame roof. I did not decline the invitations; and my hoſpitable friends, whom I viſited, ſpread a mat for me to ſit down upon, and ſhewed me every other mark of civility. In moſt of the houſes were women at work, making dreſſes of the plant or bark before mentioned, which they executed exactly in the ſame manner that the New Zealanders manufacture their cloth. Others were occupied in opening ſardines. I had ſeen a large quantity of them brought on ſhore from canoes, and divided by meaſure amongſt ſeveral people, who carried them up to their houſes, where the operation of curing them by ſmoke-drying is performed. They hang them on ſmall rods; at firſt, about a foot from the fire; afterward they remove them higher and higher, to make room for others, till the rods, on which the fiſh hang, reach the top of the houſe. When they are completely dried, they are taken down and packed cloſe in bales, which they cover with mats. Thus they are kept till wanted; and they are not a diſagreeable article of food. Cod, and other large fiſh, are alſo cured in the ſame manner by them; though they ſometimes dry theſe in the open air, without fire.

From this village I proceeded up the Weſt ſide of the Sound. For about three miles, I found the ſhore covered with ſmall iſlands, which are ſo ſituated as to form ſeveral convenient harbours, having various depths of water, from thirty to ſeven fathoms, with a good bottom. Two leagues

within the Sound, on this Weſt ſide, there runs in an arm in the direction of North North Weſt; and two miles farther, is another nearly in the ſame direction, with a pretty large iſland before it. I had no time to examine either of theſe arms; but have reaſon to believe, that they do not extend far inland, as the water was no more than brackiſh at their entrances. A mile above the ſecond arm, I found the remains of a village. The logs or framings of the houſes were ſtanding; but the boards that had compoſed their ſides and roofs did not exiſt. Before this village were ſome large fiſhing wears; but I ſaw nobody attending them. Theſe wears were compoſed of pieces of wicker-work made of ſmall rods, ſome cloſer than others, according to the ſize of the fiſh intended to be caught in them. Theſe pieces of wicker-work (ſome of whoſe *ſuperficies* are, at leaſt, twenty feet by twelve), are fixed up edgewiſe in ſhallow water, by ſtrong poles or pickets, that ſtand firm in the ground. Behind this ruined village is a plain of a few acres extent, covered with the largeſt pine-trees that I ever ſaw. This was more remarkable, as the elevated ground, on moſt other parts of this Weſt ſide of the Sound, was rather naked. 1778. April.

From this place, I croſſed over to the other, or Eaſt ſide of the Sound, paſſing an arm of it that runs in North North Eaſt, to appearance not far. I now found, what I had before conjectured, that the land, under which the ſhips lay, was an iſland; and that there were many ſmaller ones lying ſcattered in the Sound on the Weſt ſide of it. Oppoſite the North end of our large iſland, upon the main land, I obſerved a village, and there I landed. The inhabitants of it were not ſo polite as thoſe of the other I had juſt viſited. But this cold reception ſeemed, in a great meaſure, if not entirely, owing to one ſurly Chief, who would not let me

1778. April. enter their houſes, following me wherever I went; and ſeveral times, by expreſſive ſigns, marking his impatience that I ſhould be gone. I attempted in vain to ſooth him by preſents; but though he did not refuſe them, they did not alter his behaviour. Some of the young women, better pleaſed with us than was their inhoſpitable Chief, dreſſed themſelves expeditiouſly in their beſt apparel, and, aſſembling in a body, welcomed us to their village, by joining in a ſong, which was far from harſh or diſagreeable.

The day being now far ſpent, I proceeded for the ſhips, round the North end of the large iſland; meeting, in my way, with ſeveral canoes laden with ſardines, which had been juſt caught, ſomewhere in the Eaſt corner of the Sound. When I got on board, I was informed, that, while I was abſent, the ſhips had been viſited by ſome ſtrangers, in two or three large canoes, who, by ſigns, made our people underſtand that they had come from the South Eaſt, beyond the bay. They brought ſeveral ſkins, garments, and other articles, which they bartered. But what was moſt ſingular, two ſilver table-ſpoons were purchaſed from them, which, from their peculiar ſhape, we ſuppoſed to be of Spaniſh manufacture. One of theſe ſtrangers wore them round his neck, by way of ornament. Theſe viſiters alſo appeared to be more plentifully ſupplied with iron than the inhabitants of the Sound.

The mizen-maſt being finiſhed, it was got in, and rigged, Tueſday 21. on the 21ſt; and the carpenters were ſet to work to make a new fore-top-maſt, to replace the one that had been carried away ſome time before.

Wedneſ. 22. Next morning, about eight o'clock, we were viſited by a number of ſtrangers, in twelve or fourteen canoes. They came into the cove from the Southward; and as ſoon as they had turned the point of it, they ſtopped, and lay drawn

drawn up in a body above half an hour, about two or three hundred yards from the ſhips. At firſt, we thought, that they were afraid to come nearer; but we were miſtaken in this, and they were only preparing an introductory ceremony. On advancing toward the ſhips, they all ſtood up in their canoes, and began to ſing. Some of their ſongs, in which the whole body joined, were in a ſlow, and others in in quicker time; and they accompanied their notes with the moſt regular motions of their hands; or beating in concert, with their paddles, on the ſides of the canoes; and making other very expreſſive geſtures. At the end of each ſong, they remained ſilent a few ſeconds, and then began again, ſometimes pronouncing the word *hooee!* forcibly, as a chorus. After entertaining us with this ſpecimen of their muſic, which we liſtened to with admiration, for above half an hour, they came along-ſide the ſhips, and bartered what they had to diſpoſe of. Some of our old friends of the Sound, were now found to be amongſt them; and they took the whole management of the traffic between us and the ſtrangers, much to the advantage of the latter. 1778. April.

Our attendance on theſe viſiters being finiſhed, Captain Clerke and I went, in the forenoon, with two boats, to the village at the Weſt point of the Sound. When I was there the day before, I had obſerved, that plenty of graſs grew near it; and it was neceſſary to lay in a quantity of this, as food for the few goats and ſheep which were ſtill left on board. The inhabitants received us with the ſame demonſtrations of friendſhip which I had experienced before; and the moment we landed, I ordered ſome of my people to begin their operation of cutting. I had not the leaſt imagination, that the natives could make any objection to our furniſhing ourſelves with what ſeemed to be of no uſe to them,

1778. April. but was neceſſary for us. However, I was miſtaken; for, the moment that our men began to cut, ſome of the inhabitants interpoſed, and would not permit them to proceed, ſaying they muſt "*makook*;" that is, muſt firſt buy it. I was now in one of the houſes; but as ſoon as I heard of this, I went to the field, where I found about a dozen of the natives, each of whom laid claim to ſome part of the graſs that grew in this place. I bargained with them for it, and having completed the purchaſe, thought that we were now at liberty to cut wherever we pleaſed. But here, again, it appeared, that I was under a miſtake; for the liberal manner in which I had paid the firſt pretended proprietors, brought freſh demands upon me from others; ſo that there did not ſeem to be a ſingle blade of graſs, that had not a ſeparate owner; and ſo many of them were to be ſatisfied, that I very ſoon emptied my pockets. When they found, that I really had nothing more to give, their importunities ceaſed, and we were permitted to cut wherever we pleaſed, and as much as we choſe to carry away.

Here I muſt obſerve, that I have no where, in my ſeveral voyages, met with any uncivilized nation, or tribe, who had ſuch ſtrict notions of their having a right to the excluſive property of every thing that their country produces, as the inhabitants of this Sound. At firſt, they wanted our people to pay for the wood and water that they carried on board; and had I been upon the ſpot, when theſe demands were made, I ſhould certainly have complied with them. Our workmen, in my abſence, thought differently; for they took but little notice of ſuch claims; and the natives, when they found that we were determined to pay nothing, at laſt ceaſed to apply. But they made a merit of neceſſity; and frequently afterward, took occaſion to remind

mind us, that they had given us wood and water out of friendſhip*. 1778. April.

During the time I was at this village, Mr. Webber, who had attended me thither, made drawings of every thing that was curious, both within and without doors. I had alſo an opportunity of inſpecting, more narrowly, the conſtruction of the houſes, houſehold furniture, and utenſils, and the ſtriking peculiarities of the cuſtoms and modes of living of the inhabitants. Theſe ſhall be deſcribed in another place, in the beſt manner I can, calling in to my aſſiſtance the obſervations of Mr. Anderſon. When we had completed all our operations at this village, the natives and we parted very good friends; and we got back to the ſhips in the afternoon.

The three following days were employed in getting ready to put to ſea; the ſails were bent; the obſervatories and inſtruments, brewing veſſels, and other things, were moved from the ſhore; ſome ſmall ſpars, for different uſes, and pieces of timber, which might be occaſionally ſawn into boards, were prepared and put on board; and both ſhips were cleared, and put into a ſailing condition. Thurſday 23. Friday 24. Saturday 25.

Every thing being now ready, in the morning of the 26th, I intended to have put to ſea; but both wind and tide being againſt us, was obliged to wait till noon, when the South Weſt wind was ſucceeded by a calm; and the tide turning Sunday 26.

* Similar to the behaviour of the natives of Nootka, on this occaſion, was that of another tribe of Indians, farther North, in latitude 57° 18′, to the Spaniards, who had preceded Captain Cook only three years, in a voyage to explore the coaſt of America, Northward of California. See the journal of that voyage, writ by the ſecond pilot of the fleet, and publiſhed by the Honourable Mr. Daines Barrington, to whom the literary world owes ſo many obligations. *Miſcellanies*, p. 505, 506.

1778. April. in our favour, we caſt off the moorings, and with our boats towed the ſhips out of the cove. After this, we had variable light airs and calms, till four in the afternoon, when a breeze ſprung up Northerly, with very thick, hazy weather. The mercury in the barometer fell unuſually low; and we had every other fore-runner of an approaching ſtorm, which we had reaſon to expect would be from the Southward. This made me heſitate a little, as night was at hand, whether I ſhould venture to ſail, or wait till the next morning. But my anxious impatience to proceed upon the voyage, and the fear of loſing this opportunity of getting out of the Sound, making a greater impreſſion on my mind, than any apprehenſion of immediate danger, I determined to put to ſea at all events.

Our friends, the natives, attended us, till we were almoſt out of the Sound; ſome on board the ſhips, and others in their canoes. One of their Chiefs, who had, ſome time before, attached himſelf to me, was amongſt the laſt who left us. Having, before he went, beſtowed upon him a ſmall preſent, I received in return, a beaver-ſkin, of much greater value. This called upon me to make ſome addition to my preſent, which pleaſed him ſo much, that he inſiſted upon my acceptance of the beaver-ſkin cloak which he then wore; and of which I knew he was particularly fond. Struck with this inſtance of generoſity, and deſirous that he ſhould be no ſufferer by his friendſhip to me, I preſented to him a new broad-ſword, with a braſs hilt; the poſſeſſion of which made him completely happy. He, and alſo many others of his countrymen, importuned us much to pay them another viſit; and, by way of encouragement, promiſed to lay in a good ſtock of ſkins. I make no doubt, that whoever comes after me to this place, will find the na-

tives prepared accordingly, with no inconſiderable ſupply of an article of trade, which, they could obſerve, we were eager to poſſeſs; and which we found could be purchaſed to great advantage. 1778. April.

Such particulars about the country, and its inhabitants, as came to our knowledge, during our ſhort ſtay, and have not been mentioned in the courſe of the narrative, will furniſh materials for the two following Chapters.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

The Name of the Sound, and Directions for ſailing into it. Account of the adjacent Country.—Weather.—Climate.—Trees.—Other vegetable Productions.—Quadrupeds, whoſe Skins were brought for Sale.—Sea Animals.—Deſcription of a Sea Otter.—Birds.—Water Fowl.—Fiſh.—Shell-fiſh, &c.—Reptiles.—Inſects.—Stones, &c.—Perſons of the Inhabitants.—Their Colour.—Common Dreſs and Ornaments.—Occaſional Dreſſes, and monſtrous Decorations of wooden Maſks.—Their general Diſpoſitions.—Songs.—Muſical Inſtruments.—Their Eagerneſs to poſſeſs Iron and other Metals.

1778. April. ON my arrival in this inlet, I had honoured it with the name of King George's Sound; but I afterward found, that it is called Nootka by the natives. The entrance is ſituated in the Eaſt corner of Hope Bay, in the latitude of 49° 33′ North, and in the longitude of 233° 12′ Eaſt. The Eaſt coaſt of that bay, all the way from Breakers Point to the entrance of the Sound, is covered by a chain of ſunken rocks, that ſeemed to extend ſome diſtance from the ſhore; and, near the Sound, are ſome iſlands and rocks above water.

We enter this Sound between two rocky points, that lie Eaſt South Eaſt, and Weſt North Weſt from each other, diſtant between three and four miles. Within theſe points the Sound widens conſiderably, and extends in, to the Northward,

ward, four leagues at leaſt, excluſive of the ſeveral branches toward its bottom, the termination of which we had not an opportunity to aſcertain. But, from the circumſtance of finding that the water freſhened where our boats croſſed their entrance, it is probable that they had almoſt reached its utmoſt limits. And this probability is increaſed by the hills that bounded it toward the land, being covered with thick ſnow, when thoſe toward the ſea, or where we lay, had not a ſpeck remaining on them; though, in general, they were much higher. In the middle of the Sound are a number of iſlands of various ſizes. But the chart or ſketch of the Sound, here annexed, though it has no pretenſions to accuracy, will, with all its imperfections, convey a better idea of theſe iſlands, and of the figure, and the extent of the Sound, than any written deſcription. The depth of water in the middle of the Sound, and even cloſe home to ſome parts of its ſhore, is from forty-ſeven to ninety fathoms, and perhaps more. The harbours, and anchoring-places within its circuit, are numerous; but we had no time to ſurvey them. The cove in which our ſhips lay is on the Eaſt ſide of the Sound, and on the Eaſt ſide of the largeſt of the iſlands. It is covered from the ſea, but has little elſe to recommend it, being expoſed to the South Eaſt winds, which we found to blow with great violence; and the devaſtation they make ſometimes, was apparent in many places. 1778. April.

The land bordering upon the ſea-coaſt is of a middling height and level; but within the Sound, it riſes almoſt every where into ſteep hills, which agree in their general formation, ending in round or blunted tops, with ſome ſharp, though not very prominent, ridges on their ſides. Some of theſe hills may be reckoned high, while others of them

1778. April. are of a very moderate height; but even the higheſt are entirely covered to their tops with the thickeſt woods; as well as every flat part toward the ſea. There are ſometimes ſpots upon the ſides of ſome of the hills which are bare; but they are few, in compariſon of the whole, though they ſufficiently point out the general rocky diſpoſition of theſe hills. Properly ſpeaking, they have no ſoil upon them, except a kind of compoſt, produced from rotten moſſes and trees, of the depth of two feet or more. Their foundations are, therefore, to be conſidered as nothing more than ſtupendous rocks, of a whitiſh or grey caſt, where they have been expoſed to the weather; but, when broken, they appeared to be of a blueiſh grey colour, like that univerſal ſort which were found at Kerguelen's Land. The rocky ſhores are a continued maſs of this; and the little coves, in the Sound, have beaches compoſed of fragments of it, with a few other pebbles. All theſe coves are furniſhed with a great quantity of fallen wood lying in them, which is carried in by the tide; and with rills of freſh water, ſufficient for the uſe a ſhip, which ſeem to be ſupplied entirely from the rains and fogs that hover about the tops of the hills. For few ſprings can be expected in ſo rocky a country, and the freſh water found farther up the Sound, moſt probably aroſe from the melting of the ſnow; there being no room to ſuſpect, that any large river falls into the Sound, either from ſtrangers coming down it, or from any other circumſtance. The water of theſe rills is perfectly clear, and diſſolves ſoap eaſily.

The weather, during our ſtay, correſponded pretty nearly with that which we had experienced off the coaſt. That is, when the wind was any where between North and Weſt, the weather was fine and clear; but if to the Southward of

Weſt, hazy with rain. The climate, as far as we had any experience of it, is infinitely milder than that on the Eaſt coaſt of America, under the ſame parallel of latitude. The mercury in the thermometer never, even in the night, fell lower than 42°; and very often, in the day, it roſe to 60°. No ſuch thing as froſt was perceived in any of the low ground; on the contrary, vegetation had made a conſiderable progreſs; for I met with graſs that was already above a foot long. 1778. April.

The trees which chiefly compoſe the woods, are the Canadian pine, white cypreſs, *cypreſſus thyoides*, the wild pine, with two or three other ſorts of pine leſs common. The two firſt make up almoſt two thirds of the whole; and, at a diſtance, might be miſtaken for the ſame tree; as they both run up into pointed ſpire-like tops; but they are eaſily diſtinguiſhed on coming nearer, from their colour; the cypreſs being of a much paler green, or ſhade, than the other. The trees, in general, grow with great vigour, and are all of a large ſize.

There is but little variety of other vegetable productions, though, doubtleſs, ſeveral had not yet ſprung up at the early ſeaſon when we viſited the place; and many more might be hid from the narrow ſphere of our reſearches. About the rocks, and verge of the woods, we found ſtrawberry-plants, ſome raſberry, currant, and gooſeberry buſhes; which were all in a moſt flouriſhing ſtate; with a few ſmall black alder-trees. There are, likewiſe, a ſpecies of ſow-thiſtle; gooſe-graſs; ſome crow's-foot, which has a very fine crimſon flower; and two ſorts of *anthericum*; one with a large orange flower, and the other with a blue one. We alſo found, in theſe ſituations, ſome wild roſe-buſhes, which

1778. April. were juſt budding; a great quantity of young leeks, with triangular leaves; a ſmall ſort of graſs; and ſome water-creſſes, which grow about the ſides of the rills; beſides great abundance of *andromeda*. Within the woods, beſides two ſorts of underwood ſhrubs unknown to us, are moſſes and ferns. Of the firſt of which, are ſeven or eight different ſorts; of the laſt, not above three or four; and the *ſpecies* of both, are moſtly ſuch as are common to Europe and America.

As the ſeaſon of the year was unfavourable to our gaining much knowledge of the vegetable productions of this country, ſo our own ſituation while there, put it out of our power to learn much about its animals. For as the want of water made it neceſſary that we ſhould enter the Sound at firſt, the unforeſeen accidents which happened afterward, though they lengthened our ſtay, were rather unfavourable to our obtaining any knowledge of this kind. The emergency of the caſe required, that every perſon ſhould be conſtantly employed in the neceſſary buſineſs of the ſhips, which was the capital object; as the ſeaſon was advancing very faſt, and the ſucceſs of the voyage depended upon their diligence and alacrity in expediting the various taſks aſſigned to them. Hence it happened, that excurſions of every kind, either on the land, or by water, were never attempted. And as we lay in a cove on an iſland, no other animals were ever ſeen alive in the woods there, than two or three racoons, martins, and ſquirrels. Beſides theſe, ſome of our people who, one day, landed on the continent, near the South Eaſt ſide of the entrance of the Sound, obſerved the p ints of a bear's feet near the ſhore. The account, therefore, that we can give of the quadrupeds, is taken from the ſkins which the natives brought to ſell; and theſe

1778. April.

were often ſo mutilated with reſpect to the diſtinguiſhing parts, ſuch as the paws, tails, and heads, that it was impoſſible even to gueſs at the animals to whom they belonged; though others were ſo perfect, or, at leaſt, ſo well known, that they left no room to doubt about them.

Of theſe the moſt common were bears, deer, foxes, and wolves. The bear-ſkins were in great numbers; few of them very large; but, in general, of a ſhining black colour. The deer-ſkins were ſcarcer, and they ſeem to belong to that ſort called the fallow-deer by the hiſtorians of Carolina; though Mr. Pennant thinks it quite a different ſpecies from ours, and diſtinguiſhes it by the name of Virginian deer *. The foxes are in great plenty, and of ſeveral varieties; ſome of their ſkins being quite yellow, with a black tip to the tail; others of a deep or reddiſh yellow, intermixed with black; and a third ſort of a whitiſh grey or aſh-colour, alſo intermixed with black. Our people uſed to apply the name of fox or wolf indiſcriminately, when the ſkins were ſo mutilated as to leave room for a doubt. But we got, at laſt, an entire wolf's ſkin with the head on; and it was grey. Beſides the common ſort of martin, the pine-martin is alſo here; and another, whoſe ſkin is of a lighter brown colour than either, with coarſer hair; but is not ſo common, and is, perhaps, only a mere variety ariſing from age, or ſome other accidental circumſtance. The ermine is alſo found at this place; but is rare and ſmall; nor is the hair remarkably fine, though the animal appeared to be perfectly white, except an inch or more at the tip of the tail. The racoons and ſquirrels are of the common ſort; but the latter is rather ſmaller than ours, and has a deeper ruſty colour running along the back.

* See *Virginian deer*; Pennant's Hiſt. Quad. Vol. i. N° 46; and Arctic Zool. N° 6.

We

1778. April. We were clear as to the exiſtence of all the animals already mentioned; but there are two others, beſides, which we could not diſtinguiſh with ſufficient certainty. Of the firſt of theſe we ſaw none of the ſkins, but what were dreſſed or tanned like leather. The natives wear them on ſome occaſions; and, from the ſize as well as thickneſs, they were generally concluded to belong to the elk, or mouſe-deer; though ſome of them perhaps might belong to the buffalo. The other animal, which ſeems by no means rare, was gueſſed to be a ſpecies of the wild cat or *lynx*. The length of the ſkins, without the head, which none of them had, was about two feet two inches. They are covered with a very fine wool or fur, of a very light brown or whitiſh yellow colour, intermixed with long hairs, which on the back, where they are ſhorteſt, are blackiſh; on the ſides, where they are longer, of a ſilver white; and on the belly, where they are longeſt, of the colour of the wool; but the whitiſh, or ſilver hairs, are often ſo predominant, that the whole animal acquires a caſt of that kind. The tail is only three inches long, and has a black tip. The whole ſkin being, by the natives, called *wanſhee*; that, moſt probably, is their name for this animal. Hogs, dogs, and goats, have not as yet found their way to this place. Nor do the natives ſeem to have any knowledge of our brown rats, to which, when they ſaw them on board the ſhips, they applied the name they give to ſquirrels. And though they called our goats *eineetla*, this, moſt probably, is their name for a young deer or fawn.

The ſea animals ſeen off the coaſt, were whales, porpoiſes, and ſeals. The laſt of theſe ſeem only of the common ſort, judging from the ſkins which we ſaw here; their colour being either ſilverly, yellowiſh, plain, or ſpotted, with black.

1778. April.

black. The porpoiſe is the *phocena*. I have choſen to refer to this claſs the ſea-otter, as living moſtly in the water. It might have been ſufficient to have mentioned, that this animal abounds here, as it is fully deſcribed in different books, taken from the accounts of the Ruſſian adventurers in their expeditions Eaſtward from Kamtſchatka, if there had not been a ſmall difference in one that we ſaw. We, for ſome time, entertained doubts, whether the many ſkins which the natives brought, really belonged to this animal; as our only reaſon for being of that opinion, was founded on the ſize, colour, and fineneſs of the fur; till a ſhort while before our departure, when a whole one, that had been juſt killed, was purchaſed from ſome ſtrangers who came to barter; and of this Mr. Webber made a drawing. It was rather young, weighing only twenty-five pounds; of a ſhining or gloſſy black colour; but many of the hairs being tipt with white, gave it a greyiſh caſt at firſt ſight. The face, throat, and breaſt were of a yellowiſh white, or very light brown colour, which, in many of the ſkins, extended the whole length of the belly. It had ſix cutting teeth in each jaw; two of thoſe of the lower jaw being very minute, and placed without, at the baſe of the two middle ones. In theſe circumſtances, it ſeems to diſagree with thoſe found by the Ruſſians; and alſo in not having the outer toes of the hind feet ſkirted with a membrane. There ſeemed alſo a greater variety in the colour of the ſkins, than is mentioned by the deſcribers of the Ruſſian ſea-otters. Theſe changes of colour certainly take place at the different gradations of life. The very young ones had brown hair, which was coarſe, with very little fur underneath; but thoſe of the ſize of the entire animal, which came into our poſſeſſion, and juſt deſcribed, had a conſiderable quantity of

that

1778. April. that ſubſtance; and both in that colour and ſtate the ſea-otters ſeem to remain, till they have attained their full growth. After that, they loſe the black colour, and aſſume a deep brown or ſooty colour; but have then a greater quantity of very fine fur, and ſcarcely any long hairs. Others, which we ſuſpected to be ſtill older, were of a cheſnut brown; and a few ſkins were ſeen that had even acquired a perfectly yellow colour. The fur of theſe animals, as mentioned in the Ruſſian accounts, is certainly ſofter and finer than that of any others we know of; and, therefore, the diſcovery of this part of the continent of North America, where ſo valuable an article of commerce may be met with, cannot be a matter of indifference *.

Birds, in general, are not only rare as to the different ſpecies, but very ſcarce as to numbers; and theſe few are ſo ſhy, that, in all probability, they are continually haraſſed by the natives; perhaps to eat them as food, certainly to get poſſeſſion of their feathers, which they uſe as ornaments. Thoſe which frequent the woods, are crows and ravens, not at all different from our Engliſh ones; a blueiſh jay or magpie; common wrens, which are the only ſinging bird that we heard; the Canadian, or migrating thruſh; and a conſiderable number of brown eagles, with white heads and tails; which, though they ſeem principally to frequent the coaſt, come into the Sound in bad weather, and ſometimes perch upon the trees. Amongſt ſome other birds, of which the natives either brought fragments, or dried ſkins, we could diſtinguiſh a ſmall ſpecies of hawk; a heron; and the *alcyon*, or large-creſted American king-

* Mr. Coxe, on the authority of Mr. Pallas, informs us, that the old and middle-aged ſea-otters ſkins are ſold, at Kiachta, by the Ruſſians, to the Chineſe, from 80 to 100 rubles a ſkin; that is, from 16l. to 20l. each. See *Coxe's Ruſſian Diſcoveries*, p. 13.

fiſher.

1778. April.

fiſher. There are alſo ſome, which, I believe, are not mentioned, or at leaſt vary, very conſiderably, from the accounts given of them by any writers who have treated profeſſedly on this part of natural hiſtory. The two firſt of theſe are *ſpecies* of wood-peckers. One leſs than a thruſh, of a black colour above, with white ſpots on the wings, a crimſon head, neck and breaſt, and a yellowiſh olive-coloured belly; from which laſt circumſtance it might, perhaps, not improperly be called the yellow-bellied wood-pecker. The other is a larger, and much more elegant bird, of a duſky brown colour, on the upper part, richly waved with black, except about the head; the belly of a reddiſh caſt, with round black ſpots; a black ſpot on the breaſt; and the under-ſide of the wings and tail of a plain ſcarlet colour, though blackiſh above; with a crimſon ſtreak running from the angle of the mouth, a little down the neck on each ſide. The third and fourth, are a ſmall bird of the finch kind, about the ſize of a linnet, of a dark duſky colour, whitiſh below, with a black head and neck, and white bill; and a ſand-piper, of the ſize of a ſmall pigeon, of a duſky brown colour, and white below, except the throat and breaſt, with a broad white band acroſs the wings. There are alſo humming-birds; which yet ſeem to differ from the numerous ſorts of this delicate animal already known, unleſs they be a mere variety of the *trochilus colubris* of Linnæus. Theſe, perhaps, inhabit more to the Southward, and ſpread Northward as the ſeaſon advances; becauſe we ſaw none at firſt, though, near the time of our departure, the natives brought them to the ſhips in great numbers.

The birds which frequent the waters and the ſhores, are not more numerous than the others. The quebrantahueſſos, gulls, and ſhags were ſeen off the coaſt; and the two laſt

1778. April. alſo frequent the Sound. They are of the common ſorts; the ſhags being our cormorant or water-crow. We ſaw two ſorts of wild-ducks; one black, with a white head, which were in conſiderable flocks; the other white, with a red bill, but of a larger ſize; and the greater *lumme*, or diver, found in our northern countries. There were alſo ſeen, once or twice, ſome ſwans flying acroſs the Sound to the Northward; but we knew nothing of their haunts. On the ſhores, beſides the ſand-piper, deſcribed above, we found another, about the ſize of a lark, which bears a great affinity to the burre; and a plover differing very little from our common ſea-lark.

Fiſh are more plentiful in quantity than birds, though the variety is not very great; and yet, from ſeveral circumſtances, it is probable, that even the variety is conſiderably increaſed at certain ſeaſons. The principal ſorts, which we found in great numbers, are the common herring, but ſcarcely exceeding ſeven inches in length; a ſmaller ſort, which is the ſame with the anchovy, or ſardine, though rather larger; a white, or ſilver-coloured bream, and another of a gold-brown colour, with many narrow longitudinal blue ſtripes. The herrings and ſardines, doubtleſs, come in large ſhoals, and only at ſtated ſeaſons, as is common with that ſort of fiſh. The bream, of both ſorts, may be reckoned the next to theſe in quantity; and the full grown ones weighed, at leaſt, a pound. The other fiſh, which are all ſcarce, are a ſmall brown kind of *ſculpin*, ſuch as is found on the coaſt of Norway; another of a browniſh red caſt; froſt-fiſh; a large one, ſomewhat reſembling the bull-head, with a tough ſkin, deſtitute of ſcales; and now and then, toward the time of our leaving the Sound, the natives brought a ſmall browniſh cod, ſpotted with white;

and a red fiſh of the ſame ſize, which ſome of our people ſaid they had ſeen in the Straits of Magellan; beſides another differing little from the hake. There are alſo conſiderable numbers of thoſe fiſh called the *chimæræ*, or little ſea wolves, by ſome; which is a-kin to, and about the ſize of, the *pezegallo*, or elephant-fiſh. Sharks, likewiſe, ſometimes frequent the Sound; for the natives have ſome of their teeth in their poſſeſſion; and we ſaw ſome pieces of ray, or ſcate, which ſeemed to have been pretty large. The other marine animals that ought to be mentioned here, are a ſmall cruciated *meduſa*, or blubber; ſtar-fiſh, which differ ſomewhat from the common ones; two ſmall ſorts of crabs; and two others, which the natives brought; one of them of a thick, tough, gelatinous conſiſtence; and the other a ſort of membranaceous tube or pipe, both which are probably taken from the rocks. And we, alſo, purchaſed from them, once, a very large cuttle-fiſh. 1778 April.

There is abundance of large muſcles about the rocks; many ſea-ears; and we often ſaw ſhells of pretty large plain *chamæ*. The ſmaller ſorts are ſome *trochi* of two ſpecies; a curious *murex*; rugged wilks; and a ſnail; all which are, probably, peculiar to this place; at leaſt I do not recollect to have ſeen them in any country near the ſame latitude, in either hemiſphere. There are, beſides theſe, ſome ſmall plain cockles, limpets; and ſome ſtrangers, who came into the Sound, wore necklaces of a ſmall bluiſh *volute*, or *panamae*. Many of the muſcles are a ſpan in length; and ſome having pretty large pearls; which, however, are both badly ſhaped and coloured. We may conclude, that there is red coral in the Sound, or ſomewhere upon the coaſt; ſome thick pieces, or branches, having been ſeen in the canoes of the natives.

1778. April. The only animals of the reptile kind obſerved here, and found in the woods, were brown ſnakes two feet long, with whitiſh ſtripes on the back and ſides; which are harmleſs, as we often ſaw the natives carry them alive in their hands; and browniſh water-lizards, with a tail exactly like that of an eel, which frequented the ſmall ſtanding pools about the rocks.

The inſect tribe ſeem to be more numerous. For though the ſeaſon, which is peculiarly fitted to their appearing abroad was only beginning, we ſaw four or five different ſorts of butterflies, none of which were uncommon; a good many humble-bees; ſome of our common gooſeberry moths; two or three ſorts of flies; a few beetles; and ſome muſquitoes, which, probably, may be more numerous and troubleſome in a country ſo full of wood, during the Summer, though at this time they did little miſchief.

As to the mineral ſubſtances in this country, though we found both iron and copper here, there is little reaſon to believe that either of them belong to the place. Neither were the ores of any metal ſeen, if we except a coarſe, red, earthy, or ochry ſubſtance, uſed by the natives in painting themſelves, which probably may contain a little iron; with a white and a black pigment uſed for the ſame purpoſe. But we did not procure ſpecimens of them, and therefore cannot poſitively determine what are their component parts.

Beſides the ſtone or rock that conſtitutes the mountains and ſhores, which ſometimes contains pieces of very coarſe *quartz*, we found, amongſt the natives things made of a hard black *granite*, though not remarkably compact or fine grained; a greyiſh whetſtone; the common oil-ſtone of our

carpenters, in coarſer and finer pieces; and ſome black bits which are little inferior to the hone-ſtone. The natives alſo uſe the tranſparent leafy *glimmer*, or Muſcovy glaſs; a brown leafy or martial ſort; and they, ſometimes, brought to us pieces of rock-cryſtal, tolerably tranſparent. The two firſt are, probably, found near the ſpot, as they ſeemed to be in conſiderable quantities; but the latter ſeems to be brought from a greater diſtance, or is very ſcarce; for our viſiters always parted with it reluctantly. Some of the pieces were octangular, and had the appearance of being formed into that ſhape by art. 1778. April.

The perſons of the natives are, in general, under the common ſtature; but not ſlender in proportion, being commonly pretty full or plump, though not muſcular. Neither doth the ſoft fleſhineſs ſeem ever to ſwell into corpulence; and many of the older people are rather ſpare, or lean. The viſage of moſt of them is round and full; and ſometimes, alſo, broad, with high prominent cheeks; and, above theſe, the face is frequently much depreſſed, or ſeems fallen in quite acroſs between the temples; the noſe alſo flattening at its baſe, with pretty wide noſtrils, and a rounded point. The forehead rather low; the eyes ſmall, black, and rather languiſhing than ſparkling; the mouth round, with large round thickiſh lips; the teeth tolerably equal and well ſet, but not remarkably white. They have either no beards at all, which was moſt commonly the caſe, or a ſmall thin one upon the point of the chin; which does not ariſe from any natural defect of hair on that part, but from plucking it out more or leſs; for ſome of them, and particularly the old men, have not only conſiderable beards all over the chin, but whiſkers, or muſtachios; both on the upper lip, and running from thence toward the lower jaw obliquely

1778. April. liquely downward*. Their eye-brows are alſo ſcanty, and always narrow; but the hair of the head is in great abundance, very coarſe and ſtrong; and, without a ſingle excep-

* One of the moſt curious ſingularities obſervable in the natural hiſtory of the human ſpecies, is the ſuppoſed defect in the habit and temperature of the bodies of the American Indians, exemplified in their having no beards, while they are furniſhed with a profuſion of hair on their heads. M. de Paw, the ingenious author of *Recherches ſur les Americains*; Dr. Robertſon, in his *Hiſtory of America*; and, in general, the writers for whoſe authority we ought to have the higheſt deference, adopt this as an indiſputable matter of fact. May we not be permitted to requeſt thoſe who eſpouſe their ſentiments, to reconſider the queſtion, when we can produce Captain Cook's evidence on the oppoſite ſide, at leaſt ſo far as relates to the American tribe, whom he had intercourſe with at Nootka? Nor is Captain Cook ſingular in his report. What he ſaw on the ſea coaſt, Captain Carver alſo met with amongſt the American Indians far up in the country. His words are as follow: "From minute inquiries, and a "curious inſpection, I am able to declare (however reſpectable I may hold the autho-"rity of theſe Hiſtorians in other points), that their aſſertions are erroneous, and pro-"ceeding from a want of a thorough knowledge of the cuſtoms of the Indians. After "the age of puberty, their bodies, in their natural ſtate, are covered in the ſame man-"ner as thoſe of the Europeans. The men, indeed, eſteem a beard very unbecoming, "and take great pains to get rid of it; nor is there any ever to be perceived on their "faces, except when they grow old, and become inattentive to appearances.—The "Naudoweſſes, and the remote nations, pluck them out with bent pieces of hard "wood, formed into a kind of nippers; whilſt thoſe who have communication "with Europeans, procure from them wire, which they twiſt into a ſcrew or worm; "applying this to the part, they preſs the rings together, and with a ſudden twitch "draw out all the hairs that are incloſed in them." *Carver's Travels*, p. 224, 225. The remark made by Mr. Marſden, who alſo quotes Carver, is worth attending to, that the vizor or maſk of Montezuma's armour, preſerved at Bruſſels, has remarkably large whiſkers; and that thoſe Americans could not have imitated this ornament, unleſs nature had preſented them with the model. From Captain Cook's obſervation on the Weſt coaſt of North America, combined with Carver's in the inland parts of that continent, and confirmed by the Mexican Vizor as above, there ſeems abundant reaſon to agree with Mr. Marſden, who thus modeſtly expreſſes himſelf: "Were it not for the "numerous and very reſpectable authorities, from which we are aſſured that the na-"tives of America are naturally beardleſs, I ſhould think that the common opinion "on that ſubject had been haſtily adopted; and that their appearing thus at a mature "age, was only the conſequence of an early practice, ſimilar to that obſerved among "the Sumatrans. Even now, I muſt confeſs, that it would remove ſome ſmall degree "of doubt from my mind, could it be aſcertained that no ſuch cuſtom prevails." *Marſden's Hiſtory of Sumatra*, p. 39, 40.

tion,

tion, black, ſtraight, and lank, or hanging down over the ſhoulders. The neck is ſhort; the arms and body have no particular mark of beauty or elegance in their formation, but are rather clumſy; and the limbs, in all, are very ſmall in proportion to the other parts, and crooked, or ill made, with large feet badly ſhaped, and projecting ankles. This laſt defect ſeems, in a great meaſure, to ariſe from their ſitting ſo much on their hams or knees, both in their canoes and houſes. 1778. April.

Their colour we could never poſitively determine, as their bodies were incruſted with paint and dirt; though, in particular caſes, when theſe were well rubbed off, the whiteneſs of the ſkin appeared almoſt to equal that of Europeans; though rather of that pale effete caſt which diſtinguiſhes thoſe of our Southern nations. Their children, whoſe ſkins had never been ſtained with paint, alſo equalled ours in whiteneſs. During their youth, ſome of them have no diſagreeable look, if compared to the generality of the people; but this ſeems to be entirely owing to the particular animation attending that period of life; for, after attaining a certain age, there is hardly any diſtinction. Upon the whole, a very remarkable ſameneſs ſeems to characterize the countenances of the whole nation; a dull phlegmatic want of expreſſion, with very little variation, being ſtrongly marked in all of them.

The women are nearly of the ſame ſize, colour, and form, with the men; from whom it is not eaſy to diſtinguiſh them, as they poſſeſs no natural delicacies ſufficient to render their perſons agreeable; and hardly any one was ſeen, even amongſt thoſe who were in the prime of life, who had the leaſt pretenſions to be called handſome.

Their

1778. April.

Their common dreſs is a flaxen garment, or mantle, ornamented on the upper edge by a narrow ſtrip of fur, and, at the lower edge, by fringes or taſſels. It paſſes under the left arm, and is tied over the right ſhoulder, by a ſtring before, and one behind, near its middle; by which means both arms are left free; and it hangs evenly, covering the left ſide, but leaving the right open, except from the looſe part of the edges falling upon it, unleſs when the mantle is faſtened by a girdle (of coarſe matting or woollen) round the waiſt, which is often done. Over this, which reaches below the knees, is worn a ſmall cloak of the ſame ſubſtance, likewiſe fringed at the lower part. In ſhape this reſembles a round diſh cover, being quite cloſe, except in the middle, where there is a hole juſt large enough to admit the head; and then, reſting upon the ſhoulders, it covers the arms to the elbows, and the body as far as the waiſt. Their head is covered with a cap, of the figure of a truncated cone, or like a flower-pot, made of fine matting, having the top frequently ornamented with a round or pointed knob, or bunch of leathern taſſels; and there is a ſtring that paſſes under the chin, to prevent its blowing off.

Beſides the above dreſs, which is common to both ſexes, the men frequently throw over their other garments the ſkin of a bear, wolf, or ſea-otter, with the hair outward, and tie it, as a cloak, near the upper part, wearing it ſometimes before, and ſometimes behind. In rainy weather, they throw a coarſe mat about their ſhoulders. They have alſo woollen garments, which, however, are little in uſe. The hair is commonly worn, hanging down looſe; but ſome, when they have no cap, tie it in a bunch on the crown of the head. Their dreſs, upon the whole, is convenient, and would by no means be inelegant, were it kept clean. But

as

as they rub their bodies conſtantly over with a red paint, of a clayey or coarſe ochry ſubſtance, mixed with oil, their garments, by this means, contract a rancid offenſive ſmell, and a greaſy naſtineſs. So that they make a very wretched dirty appearance; and what is ſtill worſe, their heads and their garments ſwarm with vermin, which, ſo depraved is their taſte for cleanlineſs, we uſed to ſee them pick off with great compoſure, and eat. 1778. April.

Though their bodies are always covered with red paint, their faces are often ſtained with a black, a brighter red, or a white colour, by way of ornament. The laſt of theſe gives them a ghaſtly, diſguſting aſpect. They alſo ſtrew the brown martial *mica* upon the paint, which makes it glitter. The ears of many of them are perforated in the lobe, where they make a pretty large hole; and two others higher up on the outer edge. In theſe holes they hang bits of bone; quills fixed upon a leathern thong; ſmall ſhells; bunches of woollen taſſels; or pieces of thin copper, which our beads could never ſupplant. The *ſeptum* of the noſe, in many, is alſo perforated, through which they draw a piece of ſoft cord; and others wear, at the ſame place, ſmall thin pieces of iron, braſs, or copper, ſhaped almoſt like a horſe-ſhoe, the narrow opening of which receives the *ſeptum*, ſo as that the two points may gently pinch it; and the ornament thus hangs over the upper lip. The rings of our braſs buttons, which they eagerly purchaſed, were appropriated to this uſe. About their wriſts they wear bracelets or bunches of white bugle beads, made of a conic ſhelly ſubſtance; bunches of thongs, with taſſels; or a broad black ſhining horny ſubſtance, of one piece. And about their ankles they alſo frequently wear many folds of leathern thongs, or the ſinews of animals twiſted to a conſiderable thickneſs.

1778. April. Thus far of their ordinary dreſs and ornaments; but they have ſome that ſeem to be uſed only on extraordinary occaſions; either when they exhibit themſelves as ſtrangers, in viſits of ceremony, or when they go to war. Amongſt the firſt may be conſidered the ſkins of animals, ſuch as wolves or bears, tied on in the uſual manner, but ornamented at the edges with broad borders of fur, or of the woollen ſtuff manufactured by them, ingeniouſly wrought with various figures. Theſe are worn either ſeparately, or over their other common garments. On ſuch occaſions, the moſt common head-dreſs is a quantity of withe, or half beaten bark, wrapped about the head; which, at the ſame time, has various large feathers, particularly thoſe of eagles, ſtuck in it, or is entirely covered, or, we may ſay, powdered with ſmall white feathers. The face, at the ſame time, is variouſly painted, having its upper and lower parts of different colours, the ſtrokes appearing like freſh gaſhes; or it is beſmeared with a kind of tallow, mixed with paint, which is afterward formed into a great variety of regular figures, and appears like carved work. Sometimes, again, the hair is ſeparated into ſmall parcels, which are tied at intervals of about two inches, to the end, with thread; and others tie it together, behind, after our manner, and ſtick branches of the *cupreſſus thyoides* in it. Thus dreſſed, they have a truly ſavage and incongruous appearance; but this is much heightened when they aſſume, what may be called, their monſtrous decorations. Theſe conſiſt of an endleſs variety of carved wooden maſks or vizors, applied on the face, or to the upper part of the head or forehead. Some of theſe reſemble human faces, furniſhed with hair, beards, and eye-brows; others, the heads of birds, particularly of eagles, and quebrantahueſſos; and many, the heads of land

and

and ſea-animals, ſuch as wolves, deer, and porpoiſes, and others. But, in general, theſe repreſentations much exceed the natural ſize; and they are painted, and often ſtrewed with pieces of the foliaceous *mica*, which makes them glitter, and ſerves to augment their enormous deformity. They even exceed this ſometimes, and fix on the ſame part of the head large pieces of carved work, reſembling the prow of a canoe, painted in the ſame manner, and projecting to a conſiderable diſtance. So fond are they of theſe diſguiſes, that I have ſeen one of them put his head into a tin kettle he had got from us, for want of another ſort of maſk. Whether they uſe theſe extravagant maſquerade ornaments on any particular religious occaſion, or diverſion; or whether they be put on to intimidate their enemies when they go to battle, by their monſtrous appearance; or as decoys when they go to hunt animals, is uncertain. But it may be concluded, that, if travellers or voyagers, in an ignorant and credulous age, when many unnatural or marvellous things were ſuppoſed to exiſt, had ſeen a number of people decorated in this manner, without being able to approach ſo near as to be undeceived, they would readily have believed, and, in their relations, would have attempted to make others believe, that there exiſted a race of beings, partaking of the nature of man and beaſt; more eſpecially, when, beſides the heads of animals on the human ſhoulders, they might have ſeen the whole bodies of their men-monſters covered with quadrupeds' ſkins *.

1778. April.

The only dreſs amongſt the people of Nootka, obſerved by us, that ſeems peculiarly adapted to war, is a thick leathern

* The reflection in the text may furniſh the admirers of Herodotus, in particular, with an excellent apology for ſome of his wonderful tales of this ſort.

1778. April. mantle doubled, which, from its ſize, appears to be the ſkin of an elk, or buffalo tanned. This they faſten on, in the common manner; and it is ſo contrived, that it may reach up, and cover the breaſt, quite to the throat, falling, at the ſame time, almoſt to the heels. It is, ſometimes, ingeniouſly painted in different compartments; and is not only ſufficiently ſtrong to reſiſt arrows; but, as they informed us by ſigns, even ſpears cannot pierce it; ſo that it may be conſidered as their coat of mail, or moſt complete defenſive armour. Upon the ſame occaſion, they ſometimes wear a kind of leathern cloak, covered with rows of dried hoofs of deer, diſpoſed horizontally, appended by leathern thongs, covered with quills; which, when they move, make a loud rattling noiſe, almoſt equal to that of many ſmall bells. It ſeems doubtful, however, whether this part of their garb be intended to ſtrike terror in war, or only is to be conſidered as belonging to their eccentric ornaments on ceremonious occaſions. For we ſaw one of their muſical entertainments, conducted by a man dreſſed in this ſort of cloak, with his maſk on, and ſhaking his rattle.

Though theſe people cannot be viewed without a kind of horror, when equipped in ſuch extravagant dreſſes, yet, when diveſted of them, and beheld in their common habit and actions, they have not the leaſt appearance of ferocity in their countenances; and ſeem, on the contrary, as obſerved already, to be of a quiet, phlegmatic, and inactive diſpoſition; deſtitute, in ſome meaſure, of that degree of animation and vivacity that would render them agreeable as ſocial beings. If they are not reſerved, they are far from being loquacious; but their gravity is, perhaps, rather a conſequence of the diſpoſition juſt mentioned, than of any conviction of its propriety, or the effect of any particular mode

mode of education. For, even in the greateſt paroxyſms of their rage, they ſeem unable to expreſs it ſufficiently, either with warmth of language, or ſignificancy of geſtures. 1778. April.

Their orations, which are made either when engaged in any altercation or diſpute, or to explain their ſentiments publicly on other occaſions, ſeem little more than ſhort ſentences, or rather ſingle words, forcibly repeated, and conſtantly in one tone and degree of ſtrength, accompanied only with a ſingle geſture, which they uſe at every ſentence, jerking their whole body a little forward, by bending the knees, their arms hanging down by their ſides at the ſame time.

Though there be but too much reaſon, from their bringing to ſale human ſkulls and bones, to infer that they treat their enemies with a degree of brutal cruelty, this circumſtance rather marks a general agreement of character with that of almoſt every tribe of uncivilized man, in every age, and in every part of the globe, than that they are to be reproached with any charge of peculiar inhumanity. We had no reaſon to judge unfavourably of their diſpoſition in this reſpect. They ſeem to be a docile, courteous, good-natured people; but notwithſtanding the predominant phlegm of their tempers, quick in reſenting what they look upon as an injury; and, like moſt other paſſionate people, as ſoon forgetting it. I never found that theſe fits of paſſion went farther than the parties immediately concerned; the ſpectators not troubling themſelves about the quarrel, whether it was with any of us, or amongſt their own body; and preſerving as much indifference as if they had not known any thing about it. I have often ſeen one of them rave and ſcold, without any of his countrymen paying the leaſt attention to his agitation; and when none of us could

1778. April. trace the cauſe, or the object of his diſpleaſure. In ſuch caſes they never diſcover the leaſt ſymptom of timidity, but ſeem determined, at all events, to puniſh the inſult. For, even with reſpect to us, they never appeared to be under the leaſt apprehenſion of our ſuperiority; but when any difference happened, were juſt as ready to avenge the wrong, as amongſt themſelves.

Their other paſſions, eſpecially their curioſity, appear in ſome meaſure to lie dormant. For few expreſſed any deſire to ſee or examine things wholly unknown to them; and which, to thoſe truly poſſeſſed of that paſſion, would have appeared aſtoniſhing. They were always contented to procure the articles they knew and wanted, regarding every thing elſe with great indifference; nor did our perſons, apparel, and manners, ſo different from their own, or even the extraordinary ſize and conſtruction of our ſhips, ſeem to excite admiration, or even engage attention.

One cauſe of this may be their indolence, which ſeems conſiderable. But, on the other hand, they are certainly not wholly unſuſceptible of the tender paſſions; if we may judge from their being ſo fond of muſic, which is moſtly of the grave or ſerious, but truly pathetic ſort. They keep the exacteſt concert in their ſongs, which are often ſung by great numbers together, as thoſe already mentioned, with which they uſed to entertain us in their canoes. Theſe are generally ſlow and ſolemn; but the muſic is not of that confined ſort found amongſt many rude nations; for the variations are very numerous and expreſſive, and the cadence or melody powerfully ſoothing. Beſides their full concerts, ſonnets of the ſame grave caſt were frequently ſung by ſingle performers, who keep time by ſtriking the hand

againſt the thigh. However, the muſic was ſometimes varied, from its predominant ſolemnity of air; and there were inſtances of ſtanzas being ſung in a more gay and lively ſtrain, and even with a degree of humour. 1778. April.

The only inſtruments of muſic (if ſuch they may be called) which I ſaw amongſt them, were a rattle; and a ſmall whiſtle, about an inch long, incapable of any variation, from having but one hole. They uſe the rattle when they ſing; but upon what occaſions they uſe the whiſtle I know not, unleſs it be when they dreſs themſelves like particular animals, and endeavour to imitate their howl or cry. I once ſaw one of them dreſſed in a wolf's ſkin, with the head over his own, and imitating that animal by making a ſqueaking noiſe with one of theſe whiſtles, which he had in his mouth. The rattles are, for the moſt part, made in the ſhape of a bird, with a few pebbles in the belly; and the tail is the handle. They have others, however, that bear rather more reſemblance to a child's rattle.

In trafficking with us, ſome of them would betray a knaviſh diſpoſition, and carry off our goods without making any return. But, in general, it was otherwiſe; and we had abundant reaſon to commend the fairneſs of their conduct. However, their eagerneſs to poſſeſs iron and braſs, and, indeed, any kind of metal, was ſo great, that few of them could reſiſt the temptation to ſteal it, whenever an opportunity offered. The inhabitants of the South Sea Iſlands, as appears from a variety of inſtances in the courſe of this voyage, rather than be idle, would ſteal any thing that they could lay their hands upon, without ever conſidering, whether it could be of uſe to them or no. The novelty of the object, with them, was a ſufficient motive for their endeavouring,

1778. April. vouring, by any indirect means, to get poſſeſſion of it; which marked that, in ſuch caſes, they were rather actuated by a childiſh curioſity, than by a diſhoneſt diſpoſition, regardleſs of the modes of ſupplying real wants. The inhabitants of Nootka, who invaded our property, cannot have ſuch apology made for them. They were thieves in the ſtricteſt ſenſe of the word; for they pilfered nothing from us, but what they knew could be converted to the purpoſes of private utility, and had a real value according to their eſtimation of things. And it was lucky for us, that nothing was thought valuable by them, but the ſingle articles of our metals. Linen, and ſuch like things, were perfectly ſecure from their depredations; and we could ſafely leave them hanging out aſhore all night, without watching. The ſame principle which prompted our Nootka friends to pilfer from us, it was natural to ſuppoſe, would produce a ſimilar conduct in their intercourſe with each other. And, accordingly, we had abundant reaſon to believe, that ſtealing is much practiſed amongſt them; and that it chiefly gives riſe to their quarrels; of which we ſaw more than one inſtance.

CHAP. III.

Manner of building the Houſes in Nootka Sound.—Inſide of them deſcribed.—Furniture and Utenſils.—Wooden Images.—Employments of the Men.—Of the Women.—Food, animal and vegetable.—Manner of preparing it.—Weapons.—Manufactures and mechanic Arts.—Carving and Painting.—Canoes.—Implements for fiſhing and hunting.—Iron Tools.—Manner of procuring that Metal.—Remarks on their Language, and a Specimen of it.—Aſtronomical and nautical Obſervations made in Nootka Sound.

THE two towns or villages, mentioned in the courſe of my Journal, ſeem to be the only inhabited parts of the Sound. The number of inhabitants in both might be pretty exactly computed from the canoes that were about the ſhips the ſecond day after our arrival. They amounted to about a hundred; which, at a very moderate allowance, muſt, upon an average, have held five perſons each. But as there were ſcarcely any women, very old men, children, or youths amongſt them at that time, I think it will rather be rating the number of the inhabitants of the two towns too low, if we ſuppoſe they could be leſs than four times the number of our viſiters; that is, two thouſand in the whole. 1778. April.

The village at the entrance of the Sound ſtands on the ſide of a riſing ground, which has a pretty ſteep aſcent

1778. April. from the beach to the verge of the wood, in which ſpace it is ſituated.

The houſes are diſpoſed in three ranges or rows, riſing gradually behind each other; the largeſt being that in front, and the others leſs; beſides a few ſtraggling, or ſingle ones, at each end. Theſe ranges are interrupted or disjoined at irregular diſtances, by narrow paths, or lanes, that paſs upward; but thoſe which run in the direction of the houſes, between the rows, are much broader. Though there be ſome appearance of regularity in this diſpoſition, there is none in the ſingle houſes; for each of the diviſions, made by the paths, may be conſidered either as one houſe, or as many; there being no regular or complete ſeparation, either without or within, to diſtinguiſh them by. They are built of very long and broad planks *, reſting upon the edges of each other, faſtened or tied by withes of pine bark, here and there; and have only ſlender poſts, or rather poles, at conſiderable diſtances, on the outſide, to which they alſo are tied; but within are ſome larger poles placed aſlant. The height of the ſides and ends of theſe habitations, is ſeven or eight feet; but the back part is a little higher, by which means the planks, that compoſe the roof, ſlant forward, and are laid on looſe, ſo as to be moved about; either to be put cloſe, to exclude the rain; or, in fair weather, to be ſeparated, to let in the light, and carry out the ſmoke. They are, however, upon the whole, miſerable dwellings, and conſtructed with little care or ingenuity. For, though the ſide-planks be made to fit pretty cloſely in

* The habitations of the natives, more to the North upon this coaſt, where Behring's people landed in 1741, ſeem to reſemble thoſe of Nootka. Muller deſcribes them thus: "Ces cabanes étoient de bois revetu de planches bien unies, & même en-" chantrées en quelques endroits." Muller, *Decouvertes*, p. 255.

ſome places, in others they are quite open; and there are no regular doors into them; the only way of entrance being either by a hole, where the unequal length of the planks has accidentally left an opening; or, in ſome caſes, the planks are made to paſs a little beyond each other, or overlap, about two feet aſunder; and the entrance is in this ſpace. There are alſo holes, or windows, in the ſides of the houſes to look out at; but without any regularity of ſhape or diſpoſition; and theſe have bits of mat hung before them, to prevent the rain getting in. 1778. April.

On the inſide, one may frequently ſee from one end to the other of theſe ranges of building without interruption. For though, in general, there be the rudiments, or rather veſtiges, of ſeparations on each ſide, for the accommodation of different families, they are ſuch as do not intercept the ſight; and often conſiſt of no more than pieces of plank, running from the ſide toward the middle of the houſe; ſo that, if they were complete, the whole might be compared to a long ſtable, with a double range of ſtalls, and a broad paſſage in the middle. Cloſe to the ſides, in each of theſe parts, is a little bench of boards, raiſed five or ſix inches higher than the reſt of the floor, and covered with mats, on which the family ſit and ſleep. Theſe benches are commonly ſeven or eight feet long, and four or five broad. In the middle of the floor, between them, is the fire-place, which has neither hearth nor chimney. In one houſe, which was in the end of a middle range, almoſt quite ſeparated from the reſt by a high cloſe partition, and the moſt regular, as to deſign, of any that I ſaw, there were four of theſe benches; each of which held a ſingle family, at a corner, but without any ſeparation by boards; and the middle part of the houſe appeared common to them all.

1778. April. Their furniture conſiſts chiefly of a great number of cheſts and boxes of all ſizes, which are generally piled upon each other, cloſe to the ſides or ends of the houſe; and contain their ſpare garments, ſkins, maſks, and other things which they ſet a value upon. Some of theſe are double, or one covers the other as a lid; others have a lid faſtened with thongs; and ſome of the very large ones have a ſquare hole, or ſcuttle, cut in the upper part; by which the things are put in and taken out. They are often painted black, ſtudded with the teeth of different animals, or carved with a kind of freeze-work, and figures of birds or animals, as decorations. Their other domeſtic utenſils are moſtly ſquare and oblong pails or buckets to hold water and other things; round wooden cups and bowls; and ſmall ſhallow wooden troughs, about two feet long, out of which they eat their food; and baſkets of twigs, bags of matting, &c. Their fiſhing implements, and other things alſo, lie or hang up in different parts of the houſe, but without the leaſt order; ſo that the whole is a complete ſcene of confuſion; and the only places that do not partake of this confuſion are the ſleeping-benches, that have nothing on them but the mats; which are alſo cleaner, or of a finer ſort, than thoſe they commonly have to ſit on in their boats.

The naſtineſs and ſtench of their houſes are, however, at leaſt equal to the confuſion. For, as they dry their fiſh within doors, they alſo gut them there, which, with their bones and fragments thrown down at meals, and the addition of other ſorts of filth, lie every where in heaps, and are, I believe, never carried away, till it becomes troubleſome, from their ſize, to walk over them. In a word, their houſes are as filthy as hog-ſties; every thing in and about them ſtinking of fiſh, train-oil, and ſmoke.

1778. April.

But, amidſt all the filth and confuſion that are found in the houſes, many of them are decorated with images. Theſe are nothing more than the trunks of very large trees, four or five feet high, ſet up ſingly, or by pairs, at the upper end of the apartment, with the front carved into a human face; the arms and hands cut out upon the ſides, and variouſly painted; ſo that the whole is a truly monſtrous figure. The general name of theſe images is *Klumma*; and the names of two particular ones, which ſtood abreaſt of each other, three or four feet aſunder, in one of the houſes, were *Natchkoa* and *Matſeeta*. Mr. Webber's view of the inſide of a Nootka houſe, in which theſe images are repreſented, will convey a more perfect idea of them than any deſcription. A mat, by way of curtain, for the moſt part hung before them, which the natives were not willing, at all times, to remove; and when they did unveil them, they ſeemed to ſpeak of them in a very myſterious manner. It ſhould ſeem that they are, at times, accuſtomed to make offerings to them; if we can draw this inference from their deſiring us, as we interpreted their ſigns, to give ſomething to theſe images, when they drew aſide the mats that covered them *. It was natural, from

* It ſhould ſeem, that Mr. Webber was obliged to repeat his offerings pretty frequently, before he could be permitted to finiſh his drawing of theſe images. The following account is in his own words: "After having made a general view of their "habitations, I ſought for an inſide, which might furniſh me with ſufficient matter "to convey a perfect idea of the mode in which theſe people live. Such was ſoon "found. While I was employed, a man approached me with a large knife in his "hand, ſeemingly diſpleaſed, when he obſerved that my eyes were fixed on two repre-"ſentations of human figures, which were placed at one end of the apartment, carv-"ed on planks, of a gigantic proportion, and painted after their cuſtom. However, "I took as little notice of him as poſſible, and proceeded; to prevent which, he ſoon "provided himſelf with a mat, and placed it in ſuch a manner as to hinder my having "any longer a ſight of them Being pretty certain that I could have no future op-"portunity to finiſh my drawing, and the object being too intereſting to be omitted, "I con-

1778. April. from theſe circumſtances, for us to think that they were repreſentatives of their gods, or ſymbols of ſome religious or ſuperſtitious object: and yet we had proofs of the little real eſtimation they were in; for with a ſmall quantity of iron or braſs, I could have purchaſed all the gods (if their images were ſuch) in the place. I did not ſee one that was not offered to me; and I actually got two or three of the very ſmalleſt ſort.

The chief employment of the men ſeems to be that of fiſhing, and killing land or ſea animals, for the ſuſtenance of their families; for we ſaw few of them doing any thing in the houſes; whereas the women were occupied in manufacturing their flaxen or woollen garments, and in preparing the ſardines for drying; which they alſo carry up from the beach in twig-baſkets, after the men have brought them in their canoes. The women are alſo ſent in the ſmall canoes to gather muſcles, and other ſhell-fiſh; and perhaps on ſome other occaſions; for they manage theſe with as much dexterity as the men; who, when in the canoes with them, ſeem to pay little attention to their ſex, by offering to relieve them from the labour of the paddle; nor, indeed, do they treat them with any particular reſpect or tenderneſs in other ſituations. The young men appeared to be the moſt indolent or idle ſet in this community; for they were either ſitting about, in ſcattered companies, to baſk

" I conſidered that a little bribery might probably have ſome effect. Accordingly I " made an offer of a button from my coat, which, being of metal, I thought they " would be pleaſed with. This, inſtantly, produced the deſired effect. For the mat " was removed, and I was left at liberty to proceed as before. Scarcely had I ſeated " myſelf, and made a beginning, when he returned and renewed his former practice, " continuing it till I had parted with every ſingle button; and when he ſaw that he " had completely ſtripped me, I met with no farther obſtruction."

themſelves

themſelves in the ſun; or lay wallowing in the ſand upon the beach, like a number of hogs, for the ſame purpoſe, without any covering. But this diſregard of decency was confined to the men. The women were always properly clothed, and behaved with the utmoſt propriety; juſtly deſerving all commendation, for a baſhfulneſs and modeſty becoming their ſex; but more meritorious in them, as the men ſeem to have no ſenſe of ſhame. It is impoſſible, however, that we ſhould have been able to obſerve the exact mode of their domeſtic life and employments, from a ſingle viſit (as the firſt was quite tranſitory) of a few hours. For it may be eaſily ſuppoſed, that, on ſuch an occaſion, moſt of the labour of all the inhabitants of the village would ceaſe upon our arrival, and an interruption be given even to the uſual manner of appearing in their houſes, during their more remiſs or ſociable hours, when left to themſelves. We were much better enabled to form ſome judgment of their diſpoſition, and, in ſome meaſure, even of their method of living, from the frequent viſits ſo many of them paid us at our ſhips, in their canoes; in which, it ſhould ſeem, they ſpend a great deal of time, at leaſt in the ſummer ſeaſon. For we obſerved that they not only eat and ſleep frequently in them, but ſtrip off their clothes, and lay themſelves along to baſk in the ſun, in the ſame manner as we had ſeen practiſed at their village. Their canoes of the larger ſort, are, indeed, ſufficiently ſpacious for that purpoſe, and perfectly dry; ſo that, under ſhelter of a ſkin, they are, except in rainy weather, much more comfortable habitations than their houſes. 1778. April.

Though their food, ſtrictly ſpeaking, may be ſaid to conſiſt of every thing animal or vegetable that they can procure, the quantity of the latter bears an exceedingly ſmall proportion

1778. April. tion to that of the former. Their greateſt reliance ſeems to be upon the ſea, as affording fiſh, muſcles, and ſmaller ſhell-fiſh, and ſea-animals. Of the firſt, the principal are herrings and ſardines; the two ſpecies of bream formerly mentioned; and ſmall cod. But the herrings and ſardines are not only eaten freſh, in their ſeaſon, but likewiſe ſerve as ſtores, which, after being dried and ſmoked, are preſerved by being ſewed up in mats, ſo as to form large bales, three or four feet ſquare. It ſeems that the herrings alſo ſupply them with another grand reſource for food; which is a vaſt quantity of roe, very curiouſly prepared. It is ſtrewed upon, or, as it were, incruſtated about, ſmall branches of the Canadian pine. They alſo prepare it upon a long narrow ſea-graſs, which grows plentifully upon the rocks, under water. This *caviare*, if it may be ſo called, is kept in baſkets or bags of mat, and uſed occaſionally, being firſt dipped in water. It may be conſidered as the winter bread of theſe people, and has no diſagreeable taſte. They alſo eat the roe of ſome other fiſh, which, from the ſize of its grains, muſt be very large; but it has a rancid taſte and ſmell. It does not appear that they prepare any other fiſh in this manner, to preſerve them for any length of time. For though they ſplit and dry a few of the bream and *chimæræ*, which are pretty plentiful; they do not ſmoke them as the herrings and ſardines.

The next article, on which they ſeem to depend for a large proportion of their food, is the large muſcle; great abundance of which are found in the Sound. Theſe are roaſted in their ſhells, then ſtuck upon long wooden ſkewers, and taken off occaſionally as wanted; being eat without any other preparation, though they often dip them in oil, as a ſauce. The other marine productions, ſuch as the ſmaller

ſhell-

ſhell-fiſh, though they contribute to increaſe the general ſtock, are by no means to be looked upon as a ſtanding or material article of their food, when compared to thoſe juſt mentioned. 1778. April.

Of the ſea-animals, the moſt common that we ſaw in uſe amongſt them, as food, is the porpoiſe; the fat or rind of which, as well as the fleſh, they cut in large pieces, and having dried them, as they do the herrings, eat them without any farther preparation. They alſo prepare a ſort of broth from this animal, in its freſh ſtate, in a ſingular manner, putting pieces of it in a ſquare wooden veſſel or bucket, with water, and then throwing heated ſtones into it. This operation they repeat till they think the contents are ſufficiently ſtewed or ſeethed. They put in the freſh, and take out the other ſtones, with a cleft ſtick, which ſerves as tongs; the veſſel being always placed near the fire, for that purpoſe *. This is a pretty common diſh amongſt them; and, from its appearance, ſeems to be ſtrong, nouriſhing food. The oil which they procure from theſe and other ſea-animals, is alſo uſed by them in great quantities; both ſupping it alone, with a large ſcoop or ſpoon, made of horn; or mixing it with other food, as ſauce.

It may alſo be preſumed that they feed upon other ſea-animals, ſuch as ſeals, ſea-otters, and whales; not only from the ſkins of the two firſt being frequent amongſt them, but from the great number of implements, of all ſorts, intended to deſtroy theſe different animals;

* This operation is repreſented by Mr. Webber, in his drawing of the inſide of a Nootka houſe.

1778. April. which clearly points out their dependance upon them; though perhaps they do not catch them in great plenty at all ſeaſons; which ſeemed to be the caſe while we lay there, as no great number of freſh ſkins, or pieces of the fleſh, were ſeen.

The ſame might, perhaps, be ſaid of the land-animals, which, though doubtleſs the natives ſometimes kill them, appeared to be ſcarce at this time; as we did not ſee a ſingle piece of the fleſh belonging to any of them; and though their ſkins be in tolerable plenty, it is probable that many of theſe are procured by traffic from other tribes. Upon the whole, it ſeems plain, from a variety of circumſtances, that theſe people procure almoſt all their animal food from the ſea, if we except a few birds, of which the gulls or ſea-fowl, which they ſhoot with their arrows, are the moſt material.

As the Canadian pine-branches and ſea-graſs, on which the fiſh roe is ſtrewed, may be conſidered as their only winter-vegetables; ſo, as the ſpring advances, they make uſe of ſeveral others as they come in ſeaſon. The moſt common of theſe, which we obſerved, were two ſorts of liliaceous roots, one ſimply tunicated, the other granulated upon its ſurface, called *mahkatte* and *koohquoppa*, which have a mild ſweetiſh taſte, and are mucilaginous, and eaten raw. The next, which they have in great quantities, is a root called *aheita*, reſembling, in taſte, our liquorice; and another fern root, whoſe leaves were not yet diſcloſed. They alſo eat, raw, another ſmall, ſweetiſh, inſipid root, about the thickneſs of *ſarſaparilla*; but we were ignorant of the plant to which it belongs; and alſo of another root, which is very large and palmated, which we ſaw them dig up near

the village, and afterward eat it. It is alſo probable that, as the ſeaſon advances, they have many others, which we did not ſee. For though there be no appearance of cultivation amongſt them, there are great quantities of alder, gooſeberry and currant buſhes, whoſe fruits they may eat in their natural ſtate, as we have ſeen them eat the leaves of the laſt, and of the lilies, juſt as they were plucked from the plant. It muſt, however, be obſerved, that one of the conditions which they ſeem to require, in all food, is, that it ſhould be of the bland or leſs acrid kind; for they would not eat the leek or garlic, though they brought vaſt quantities to ſell, when they underſtood we were fond of it. Indeed, they ſeemed to have no reliſh for any of our food; and when offered ſpirituous liquors, they rejected them as ſomething unnatural and diſguſting to the palate. 1778. April.

Though they ſometimes eat ſmall marine-animals, in their freſh ſtate, raw, it is their common practice to roaſt or broil their food; for they are quite ignorant of our method of boiling; unleſs we allow that of preparing their porpoiſe broth is ſuch; and, indeed, their veſſels being all of wood, are quite inſufficient for this purpoſe.

Their manner of eating is exactly conſonant to the naſtineſs of their houſes and perſons; for the troughs and platters, in which they put their food, appear never to have been waſhed from the time they were firſt made, and the dirty remains of a former meal are only ſweeped away by the ſucceeding one. They alſo tear every thing ſolid, or tough, to pieces, with their hands and teeth; for though they make uſe of their knives to cut off the larger portions, they have not, as yet, thought of reducing theſe to ſmaller pieces and mouthfuls, by the ſame means, though obvi-

1778. April. ouſly more convenient and cleanly [illegible]ey ſeem to have no idea of cleanlineſs; for they eat t[illegible]ots which they dig from the ground, without ſo much as ſhaking off the ſoil that adheres to them.

We are uncertain if they have any ſet time for meals; for we have ſeen them eat at all hours, in their canoes. And yet, from ſeeing ſeveral meſſes of the porpoiſe broth preparing toward noon, when we viſited the village, I ſhould ſuſpect that they make a principal meal about that time.

Their weapons are bows and arrows, ſlings, ſpears, ſhort truncheons of bone, ſomewhat like the *patoo patoo* of New Zealand, and a ſmall pick-axe, not unlike the common American *tomahawk*. The ſpear has generally a long point, made of bone. Some of the arrows are pointed with iron; but moſt commonly their points were of indented bone. The tomahawk is a ſtone, ſix or eight inches long, pointed at one end, and the other end fixed into a handle of wood. This handle reſembles the head and neck of the human figure; and the ſtone is fixed in the mouth, ſo as to repreſent an enormouſly large tongue. To make the reſemblance ſtill ſtronger, human hair is alſo fixed to it. This weapon they call *taaweeſh*, or *tſuſkeeah*. They have another ſtone weapon called *ſeeaik*, nine inches or a foot long, with a ſquare point.

From the number of ſtone weapons, and others, we might almoſt conclude, that it is their cuſtom to engage in cloſe fight; and we had too convincing proofs that their wars are both frequent and bloody, from the vaſt number of human ſculls which they brought to ſell.

Their

1778. April.

Their manufactures, and mechanic arts, are far more extenſive and ingenious, whether we regard the deſign, or the execution, than could have been expected from the natural diſpoſition of the people, and the little progreſs that civilization has made amongſt them in other reſpects. The flaxen and woollen garments, with which they cover themſelves, muſt neceſſarily engage their firſt care; and are the moſt material of thoſe that can be ranked under the head of manufactures. The former of theſe are made of the bark of a pine-tree, beat into a hempen ſtate. It is not ſpun, but, after being properly prepared, is ſpread upon a ſtick, which is faſtened acroſs to two others that ſtand upright. It is diſpoſed in ſuch a manner, that the manufacturer, who ſits on her hams at this ſimple machine, knots it acroſs with ſmall plaited threads, at the diſtance of half an inch from each other. Though, by this method, it be not ſo cloſe or firm as cloth that is woven, the bunches between the knots make it ſufficiently impervious to the air, by filling the interſtices; and it has the additional advantage of being ſofter and more pliable. The woollen garments, though probably manufactured in the ſame manner, have the ſtrongeſt reſemblance to woven cloth. But the various figures which are very artificially inſerted in them, deſtroy the ſuppoſition of their being wrought in a loom; it being extremely unlikely, that theſe people ſhould be ſo dexterous as to be able to finiſh ſuch a complex work, unleſs immediately by their hands. They are of different degrees of fineneſs; ſome reſembling our coarſeſt rugs or blankets; and others almoſt equal to our fineſt ſorts, or even ſofter, and certainly warmer. The wool, of which they are made, ſeems to be taken from different animals, as the fox and brown *lynx*; the laſt of which is by far the fineſt ſort; and, in its natural ſtate, differs

1778. April. little from the colour of our coarſer wools; but the hair, with which the animal is alſo covered, being intermixed, its appearance, when wrought, is ſomewhat different. The ornamental parts or figures in theſe garments, which are diſpoſed with great taſte, are commonly of a different colour, being dyed, chiefly, either of a deep brown, or of a yellow; the laſt of which, when it is new, equals the beſt in our carpets as to brightneſs.

To their taſte or deſign in working figures upon their garments, correſponds their fondneſs for carving, in every thing they make of wood. Nothing is without a kind of freeze-work, or the figure of ſome animal upon it; but the moſt general repreſentation is that of the human face, which is often cut out upon birds, and the other monſtrous figures mentioned before; and even upon their ſtone and their bone weapons. The general deſign of all theſe things is perfectly ſufficient to convey a knowledge of the object they are intended to repreſent; but the carving is not executed with the nicety that a dexterous artiſt would beſtow even upon an indifferent deſign. The ſame, however, cannot be ſaid of many of the human maſks and heads; where they ſhew themſelves to be ingenious ſculptors. They not only preſerve, with great exactneſs, the general character of their own faces, but finiſh the more minute parts, with a degree of accuracy in proportion, and neatneſs in execution. The ſtrong propenſity of this people to works of this ſort, is remarkable, in a vaſt variety of particulars. Small whole human figures; repreſentations of birds, fiſh, and land and ſea animals; models of their houſehold utenſils and of their canoes, were found amongſt them in great abundance.

The

The imitative arts being nearly allied, no wonder that, to their ſkill in working figures in their garments, and carving them in wood, they ſhould add that of drawing them in colours. We have ſometimes ſeen the whole proceſs of their whale-fiſhery painted on the caps they wear. This, though rudely executed, ſerves, at leaſt, to ſhew, that though there be no appearance of the knowledge of letters amongſt them, they have ſome notion of a method of commemorating and repreſenting actions, in a laſting way, independently of what may be recorded in their ſongs and traditions. They have alſo other figures painted on ſome of their things; but it is doubtful if they ought to be conſidered as ſymbols, that have certain eſtabliſhed ſignifications, or only the mere creation of fancy and caprice. 1778. April.

Their canoes are of a ſimple ſtructure; but, to appearance, well calculated for every uſeful purpoſe. Even the largeſt, which carry twenty people or more, are formed of one tree. Many of them are forty feet long, ſeven broad, and about three deep. From the middle, toward each end, they become gradually narrower, the after-part, or ſtern, ending abruptly or perpendicularly, with a ſmall knob on the top; but the fore-part is lengthened out, ſtretching forward and upward, ending in a notched point or prow, conſiderably higher than the ſides of the canoe, which run nearly in a ſtraight line. For the moſt part, they are without any ornament; but ſome have a little carving, and are decorated by ſetting ſeals' teeth on the ſurface, like ſtuds; as is the practice on their maſks and weapons. A few have, likewiſe, a kind of additional head or prow, like a large cut-water, which is painted with the figure of ſome animal. They have no ſeats, nor any other ſupporters, on the inſide, than ſeveral round ſticks, little thicker than a cane, placed acroſs,

at

1778. April. at mid depth. They are very light, and their breadth and flatneſs enable them to ſwim firmly, without an out-rigger, which none of them have; a remarkable diſtinction between the navigation of all the American nations, and that of the Southern parts of the Eaſt Indies, and the iſlands in the Pacific Ocean. Their paddles are ſmall and light; the ſhape, in ſome meaſure, reſembling that of a large leaf, pointed at the bottom, broadeſt in the middle, and gradually loſing itſelf in the ſhaft, the whole being about five feet long. They have acquired great dexterity in managing theſe paddles, by conſtant uſe; for ſails are no part of their art of navigation.

Their implements for fiſhing and hunting, which are both ingeniouſly contrived, and well made, are nets, hooks and lines, harpoons, gigs, and an inſtrument like an oar. This laſt is about twenty feet long, four or five inches broad, and about half an inch thick. Each edge, for about two-thirds of its length (the other third being its handle), is ſet with ſharp bone-teeth, about two inches long. Herrings and ſardines, and ſuch other ſmall fiſh as come in ſhoals, are attacked with this inſtrument; which is ſtruck into the ſhoal, and the fiſh are caught either upon, or between the teeth. Their hooks are made of bone and wood, and rather inartificially; but the harpoon, with which they ſtrike the whales and leſſer ſea animals, ſhews a great reach of contrivance. It is compoſed of a piece of bone, cut into two barbs, in which is fixed, the oval blade of a large muſcle ſhell, in which is the point of the inſtrument. To this is faſtened about two or three fathoms of rope; and to throw this harpoon, they uſe a ſhaft of about twelve or fifteen feet long, to which the line or rope is made faſt; and to one end of which the harpoon is fixed, ſo as to ſeparate from

from the ſhaft, and leave it floating upon the water as a buoy, when the animal darts away with the harpoon. 1778. April.

We can ſay nothing as to the manner of their catching or killing land animals, unleſs we may ſuppoſe that they ſhoot the ſmaller ſorts with their arrows, and engage bears, or wolves and foxes, with their ſpears. They have, indeed, ſeveral nets, which are probably applied to that purpoſe *; as they frequently throw them over their heads, to ſhew their uſe, when they brought them to us for ſale. They alſo, ſometimes, decoy animals, by covering themſelves with a ſkin, and running about upon all fours, which they do very nimbly, as appeared from the ſpecimens of their ſkill, which they exhibited to us, making a kind of noiſe or neighing at the ſame time; and, on theſe occaſions, the maſks, or carved heads, as well as the real dried heads, of the different animals, are put on.

As to the materials, of which they make their various articles, it is to be obſerved, that every thing of the rope kind, is formed either from thongs of ſkins, and ſinews of animals; or from the ſame flaxen ſubſtance of which their mantles are manufactured. The ſinews often appeared to be of ſuch a length, that it might be preſumed they could be of no other animal than the whale. And the ſame may be ſaid of the bones of which they make their weapons already mentioned; ſuch as their bark-beating inſtruments, the points of their ſpears, and the barbs of their harpoons.

Their great dexterity in works of wood, may, in ſome meaſure, be aſcribed to the aſſiſtance they receive from iron

* One of the methods of catching the ſea-otter, when aſhore, in Kamtſchatka, is with nets. See *Cox's Ruſſian Diſcoveries*, p. 13.

1778. April. tools. For, as far as we know, they uſe no other; at leaſt, we ſaw only one chiſſel of bone. And though, originally, their tools muſt have been of different materials, it is not improbable that many of their improvements have been made ſince they acquired a knowledge of that metal, which now is univerſally uſed in their various wooden works. The chiſſel and the knife, are the only forms, as far as we ſaw, that iron aſſumes amongſt them. The chiſſel is a long flat piece, fitted into a handle of wood. A ſtone ſerves for a mallet, and a piece of fiſh-ſkin for a poliſher. I have ſeen ſome of theſe chiſſels that were eight or ten inches long, and three or four inches broad; but, in general, they were ſmaller. The knives are of various ſizes; ſome very large; and their blades are crooked, ſomewhat like our pruning-knife; but the edge is on the back or convex part. Moſt of them that we ſaw were about the breadth and thickneſs of an iron hoop; and their ſingular form marks that they are not of European make. Probably, they are imitations of their own original inſtruments, uſed for the ſame purpoſes. They ſharpen theſe iron tools upon a coarſe ſlate whetſtone; and likewiſe keep the whole inſtrument conſtantly bright.

Iron, which they call *ſeekemaile*, (which name they alſo give to tin, and all white metals) being familiar to theſe people, it was very natural for us to ſpeculate about the mode of its being conveyed to them. Upon our arrival in the Sound, they immediately diſcovered a knowledge of traffic, and an inclination for it; and we were convinced afterward, that they had not received this knowledge from a curſory interview with any ſtrangers; but, from their method, it ſeemed to be an eſtabliſhed practice, of which they were fond, and in which they were alſo well ſkilled. With whom they carry on

on this traffic, may perhaps admit of ſome doubt. For though we found amongſt them things doubtleſs of European manufacture, or at leaſt derived from ſome civilized nation, ſuch as iron and braſs, it, by no means, appears that they receive them immediately from theſe nations. For we never obſerved the leaſt ſign of their having ſeen ſhips like ours before, nor of their having traded with ſuch people. Many circumſtances ſerve to prove this almoſt beyond a doubt. They were earneſt in their inquiries, by ſigns, on our arrival, if we meant to ſettle amongſt them; and if we came as friends: ſignifying, at the ſame time, that they gave the wood and water freely, from friendſhip. This not only proves, that they conſidered the place as entirely their property, without fearing any ſuperiority; but the inquiry would have been an unnatural one, on a ſuppoſition that any ſhips had been here before; had trafficked, and ſupplied themſelves with wood and water; and had then departed; for, in that caſe, they might reaſonably expect we would do the ſame. They, indeed, expreſſed no marks of ſurprize at ſeeing our ſhips. But this, as I obſerved before, may be imputed to their natural indolence of temper, and want of curioſity. Nor were they even ſtartled at the report of a muſquet; till, one day, upon their endeavouring to make us ſenſible, that their arrows and ſpears could not penetrate the hide-dreſſes, one of our gentlemen ſhot a muſquet ball through one of them, folded ſix times. At this they were ſo much ſtaggered, that they plainly diſcovered their ignorance of the effect of fire-arms. This was very often confirmed afterward, when we uſed them at their village, and other places, to ſhoot birds, the manner of which plainly confounded them; and our explanations of the uſe

1778. April.

1778. April. of ſhot and ball, were received with the moſt ſignificant marks of their having no previous ideas on this matter.

Some account of a Spaniſh voyage to this coaſt, in 1774, or 1775, had reached England before I ſailed; but the foregoing circumſtances ſufficiently prove, that theſe ſhips had not been at Nootka *. Beſides this, it was evident that iron was too common here; was in too many hands; and the uſes of it were too well known, for them to have had the firſt knowledge of it ſo very lately; or, indeed, at any earlier period, by an accidental ſupply from a ſhip. Doubtleſs, from the general uſe they make of this metal, it may be ſuppoſed to come from ſome conſtant ſource, by way of traffic, and that not of a very late date; for they are as dexterous in uſing their tools as the longeſt practice can make them. The moſt probable way, therefore, by which we can ſuppoſe that they get their iron, is by trading for it with other Indian tribes, who either have immediate communication with European ſettlements upon that continent, or receive it, perhaps, through ſeveral intermediate nations. The ſame might be ſaid of the braſs and copper found amongſt them.

Whether theſe things be introduced by way of Hudſon's Bay and Canada, from the Indians, who deal with our traders, and ſo ſucceſſively acroſs from one tribe to the other; or whether they be brought from the North Weſtern parts of Mexico, in the ſame manner; perhaps cannot be eaſily

* We now know that Captain Cook's conjecture was well founded. It appears, from the Journal of this Voyage, already referred to, that the Spaniards had intercourſe with the natives of this coaſt, only in three places, in latitude 41° 7′; in latitude 47° 21′; and in latitude 57° 18′. So that they were not within two degrees of Nootka; and it is moſt probable, that the people there never heard of theſe Spaniſh ſhips.

determined. But it ſhould ſeem, that not only the rude materials, but ſome articles in their manufactured ſtate, find their way hither. The braſs ornaments for noſes, in particular, are ſo neatly made, that I am doubtful whether the Indians are capable of fabricating them. The materials certainly are European; as no American tribes have been found, who knew the method of making braſs; though copper has been commonly met with, and, from its ſoftneſs, might be faſhioned into any ſhape, and alſo poliſhed. If our traders to Hudſon's Bay and Canada do not uſe ſuch articles in their traffic with the natives, they muſt have been introduced at Nootka from the quarter of Mexico, from whence, no doubt, the two ſilver table-ſpoons, met with here, were originally derived. It is moſt probable, however, that the Spaniards are not ſuch eager traders, nor have formed ſuch extenſive connections with the tribes North of Mexico, as to ſupply them with quantities of iron, from which they can ſpare ſo much to the people here *. 1778. April.

Of the political and religious inſtitutions eſtabliſhed amongſt them, it cannot be ſuppoſed that we ſhould learn much. This we could obſerve, that there are ſuch men as Chiefs, who are diſtinguiſhed by the name or title of *Acweek*, and to whom the others are, in ſome meaſure, ſubordinate. But, I ſhould gueſs, the authority of each of theſe great men extends no farther than the family to which he

* Though the two ſilver table-ſpoons, found at Nootka Sound, moſt probably came from the Spaniards in the South, there ſeems to be ſufficient grounds for believing that the regular ſupply of iron comes from a different quarter. It is remarkable, that the Spaniards, in 1775, found at *Puerto de la Trinidad*, in latitude 41° 7′, *arrows pointed with copper or iron, which they underſtood were procured from the North.* Mr. Daines Barrington, in a note at this part of the Spaniſh Journal, p. 20. ſays, "I "ſhould conceive that the copper and iron, here mentioned, muſt have originally been "bartered at our forts in Hudſon's Bay."

belongs,

1778. April. belongs, and who own him as their head. Theſe *Acweeks* were not always elderly men; from which I concluded that this title came to them by inheritance.

I ſaw nothing that could give the leaſt inſight into their notions of religion, beſides the figures before mentioned, called by them *Klumma*. Moſt probably theſe were idols; but as they frequently mentioned the word *acweek*, when they ſpoke of them, we may, perhaps, be authorized to ſuppoſe that they are the images of ſome of their anceſtors, whom they venerate as divinities. But all this is mere conjecture; for we ſaw no act of religious homage paid to them; nor could we gain any information, as we had learned little more of their language, than to aſk the names of things, without being able to hold any converſation with the natives, that might inſtruct us as to their inſtitutions or traditions.

In drawing up the preceding account of the people of this Sound, I have occaſionally blended Mr. Anderſon's obſervations with my own; but I owe every thing to him that relates to their language; and the following remarks are in his own words.

" Their language is, by no means, harſh or diſagreeable, farther than proceeds from their uſing the *k* and *h* with more force, or pronouncing them with leſs ſoftneſs than we do; and, upon the whole, it abounds rather with what we may call labial and dental, than with guttural ſounds. The ſimple ſounds which we have not heard them uſe, and which, conſequently, may be reckoned rare, or wanting in their language, are thoſe repreſented by the letters *b*, *d*, *f*, *g*, *r*, and *v*. But, on the other hand, they have one, which is very frequent, and not uſed by us. It is formed, in a

particular manner, by claſhing the tongue partly againſt the roof of the mouth, with conſiderable force; and may be compared to a very coarſe or harſh method of liſping. It is difficult to repreſent this ſound by any compoſition of our letters, unleſs, ſomehow, from *lſzthl.* This is one of their moſt uſual terminations, though we ſometimes found it in the beginning of words. The next moſt general termination is compoſed of *tl;* and many words end with *z* and *ſs.* A ſpecimen or two, of each of theſe, is here put down: 1778. April.

Opulſzthl,	The ſun.
Onulſzthl,	The moon.
Kahſheetl,	Dead.
Teeſhcheetl,	To throw a ſtone.
Kooomitz,	A human ſcull.
Quahmiſs,	Fiſh roe.

They ſeem to take ſo great a latitude in their mode of ſpeaking, that I have ſometimes obſerved four or five different terminations of the ſame word. This is a circumſtance very puzzling at firſt to a ſtranger, and marks a great imperfection in their language.

As to the compoſition of it, we can ſay very little; having been ſcarcely able to diſtinguiſh the ſeveral parts of ſpeech. It can only be inferred, from their method of ſpeaking, which is very ſlow and diſtinct, that it has few prepoſitions or conjunctions; and, as far as we could diſcover, is deſtitute of even a ſingle interjection, to expreſs admiration or ſurprize. From its having few conjunctions, it may be conceived, that theſe being thought unneceſſary, as being underſtood, each ſingle word, with them, will alſo expreſs a great deal, or comprehend ſeveral ſimple ideas; which ſeems to be the caſe. But, for the ſame reaſon, the language

1778. April.

guage will be defective in other reſpects; not having words to diſtinguiſh or expreſs differences which really exiſt, and hence not ſufficiently copious. This was obſerved to be the caſe, in many inſtances, particularly with reſpect to the names of animals. The relation or affinity it may bear to other languages, either on this, or on the Aſiatic continent, I have not been able ſufficiently to trace, for want of proper ſpecimens to compare it with, except thoſe of the Eſquimaux, and Indians about Hudſon's Bay; to neither of which it bears the leaſt reſemblance. On the other hand, from the few Mexican words I have been able to procure, there is the moſt obvious agreement, in the very frequent terminations of the words in *l*, *tl*, or *z*, throughout the language *."

The large vocabulary of the Nootka language, collected by Mr. Anderſon, ſhall be reſerved for another place †, as its inſertion here would too much interrupt our narration. At preſent, I only ſelect their numerals, for the ſatisfaction of ſuch of our readers as love to compare thoſe of different nations, in different parts of the world:

Tſawack,	One.
Akkla,	Two.
Katſitſa,	Three.
Mo, or *moo*,	Four.
Sochah,	Five.
Nofpo,	Six.
Atſlepoo,	Seven.
Atlaquolthl,	Eight.
Tſawaqualthl,	Nine.
Haeeoo,	Ten.

* May we not, in confirmation of Mr. Anderſon's remark, obſerve, that *Opulſzthl*, the Nootka name of the Sun; and *Vitziputzli*, the name of the Mexican Divinity, have no very diſtant affinity in ſound?

† It will be found at the end of the third volume.

Were

1778. April.

Were I to affix a name to the people of Nootka, as a diſtinct nation, I would call them *Wakaſhians*; from the word *wakaſh*, which was very frequently in their mouths. It ſeemed to expreſs applauſe, approbation, and friendſhip. For when they appeared to be ſatisfied, or well pleaſed with any thing they ſaw, or any incident that happened, they would, with one voice, call out *wakaſh! wakaſh!* I ſhall take my leave of them, with remarking, that, differing ſo eſſentially as they certainly do, in their perſons, their cuſtoms, and language, from the inhabitants of the iſlands in the Pacific Ocean, we cannot ſuppoſe their reſpective progenitors to have been united in the ſame tribe, or to have had any intimate connection, when they emigrated from their original ſettlements, into the places where we now find their deſcendants.

My account of the tranſactions in Nootka Sound would be imperfect, without adding the aſtronomical and nautical obſervations made by us, while the ſhips were in that ſtation.

Latitude.

The latitude of the obſervatory by -	Sun - -	49° 36′ 1″, 15‴	
	Stars South	49° 36′ 8″, 36‴	
	Stars North	49° 36′ 10″, 30‴	
The mean of theſe means -		49° 36′ 6″, 47‴	North.

Longitude.

The longitude, by lunar obſervations	Twenty ſets taken on the 21ſt and 23d of March	233° 26′ 18″, 7‴	
	Ninety-three taken at the obſervatory - -	233° 18′ 6″, 6‴	
	Twenty-four taken on the 1ſt, 2d, and 3d of May	233° 7′ 16″, 7‴	
The mean of theſe means -		233° 17′ 14″, 0‴	Eaſt.

1778. April. But by reducing each ſet taken before we arrived in the Sound, and after we left it, by the time-keeper, and adding them up with thoſe made on the ſpot, the mean of the 137 ſets will be - - - - - 233° 17′ 30″, 5‴.

Longitude by the time-keeper { Greenwich rate - 235° 46′ 51″, 0‴ / Ulietea rate - 233° 59′ 24″, 0‴

From the reſults of the laſt fifteen days obſervations of equal altitudes of the Sun, the daily rate of the time-keeper was loſing, on mean time, 7″; and on the 16th of April, ſhe was too ſlow for mean time, by 16ʰ 0ᵐ 58″, 45. There was found an irregularity in her rate, greater than at any time before. It was thought proper to reject the firſt five days, as the rate in them differed ſo much from that of the fifteen following; and even in theſe, each day differed from another more than uſual.

Variation of the Compaſs.

April 4th.	A. M.	Obſervatory,	15° 57′ 48½″	15° 49′ 25″ Eaſt.
	P. M.	Mean of four needles	15° 41′ 2″	
5th. 17th.	A. M.	On board the ſhip,	19° 50′ 49″	19° 44′ 37½″
	P. M.	Mean of four needles	19 38′ 46″	

The variation found on board the ſhip, ought to be taken for the true one; not only as it agreed with what we obſerved at ſea; but becauſe it was found, that there was ſomething aſhore that had a conſiderable effect upon the compaſſes; in ſome places more than others. At one ſpot, on the Weſt point of the Sound, the needle was attracted 11¾ points from its proper direction.

Inclination of the dipping Needle.

1778. April.

April 5th. On board with balanced needle	Marked	End North and dipping	71°	26′	22½″	71°	40″	22½″
	Unmarked		71°	54′	22½″			
The ſame needle at the obſervatory	Marked	End North and dipping	72°	3′	45″	70°	0′	0″
	Unmarked		71°	56′	15″			
18th. Ditto - - -	Marked	End North and dipping	71°	58′	20″	72°	7′	15″
	Unmarked		72°	16′	10″			
5th. Spare needle at the obervatory	Marked	End North and dipping	72°	32′	30″	72°	49′	15″
	Unmarked		73°	6′	0″			
18th. Ditto - - -	Marked	End North and dipping	72°	55′	0″	73°	11′	45″
	Unmarked		73°	28′	30″			
22d. Spare needle on board - -	Marked	End North and dipping	73°	28′	38″	73°	11′	0″
	Unmarked		72°	53′	30″			
Hence the mean dip, with both needles, on ſhore, was -						72°	32′	3¼″
On board - - - - - -						72°	25′	41¼″

This is as near as can be expected; and ſhews, that whatever it was that affected the compaſſes, whether on board or aſhore, it had no effect upon the dipping needles.

Tides.

It is high-water on the days of the new and full moon, at 12^{h} 20^{m}. The perpendicular riſe and fall, eight feet nine inches; which is to be underſtood of the day-tides, and thoſe which happen two or three days after the full and new moon. The night tides, at this time, riſe near two feet higher. This was very conſpicuous during the ſpring-tide of the full moon, which happened ſoon after our arrival; and it was obvious, that it would be the ſame in thoſe of the new moon, though we did not remain here long enough to ſee the whole of its effect.

Some circumſtances, that occurred daily, relating to this, deſerve particular notice. In the cove where we got wood

1778. April. and water, was a great deal of drift-wood thrown aſhore; a part of which we had to remove, to come at the water. It often happened, that large pieces or trees, which we had removed in the day, out of the reach of the then high-water, were found, the next morning, floated again in our way; and all our ſpouts, for conveying down the water, thrown out of their places, which were immoveable during the day tides. We alſo found, that wood, which we had ſplit up for fuel, and had depoſited beyond the reach of the day tide, floated away during the night. Some of theſe circumſtances happened every night or morning, for three or four days in the height of the ſpring-tides; during which time we were obliged to attend every morning tide, to remove the large logs out of the way of watering.

I cannot ſay, whether the flood-tide falls into the Sound from the North Weſt, South Weſt, or South Eaſt. I think it does not come from the laſt quarter; but this is only conjecture, founded upon the following obſervations: The South Eaſt gales, which we had in the Sound, were ſo far from increaſing the riſe of the tide, that they rather diminiſhed it; which would hardly have happened, if the flood and wind had been in the ſame direction.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

A Storm, after ſailing from Nootka Sound.—Reſolution ſprings a Leak.—Pretended Strait of Admiral de Fonte paſſed unexamined.—Progreſs along the Coaſt of America.—Behring's Bay.—Kaye's Iſland.—Account of it.—The Ships come to an Anchor.—Viſited by the Natives.—Their Behaviour.—Fondneſs for Beads and Iron.—Attempt to plunder the Diſcovery.—Reſolution's Leak ſtopped.—Progreſs up the Sound.—Meſſrs. Gore and Roberts ſent to examine its Extent.—Reaſons againſt a Paſſage to the North through it.—The Ships proceed down it, to the open Sea.

HAVING put to ſea, on the evening of the 26th, as before related, with ſtrong ſigns of an approaching ſtorm; theſe ſigns did not deceive us. We were hardly out of the Sound, before the wind, in an inſtant, ſhifted from North Eaſt to South Eaſt by Eaſt, and increaſed to a ſtrong gale, with ſqualls and rain, and ſo dark a ſky, that we could not ſee the length of the ſhip. Being apprehenſive, from the experience I had ſince our arrival on this coaſt, of the wind veering more to the South, which would put us in danger of a lee-ſhore, we got the tacks on board, and ſtretched off to the South Weſt, under all the ſail the ſhips could bear. Fortunately, the wind veered no farther Southerly, than South Eaſt; ſo that at day-light the next morning, we were quite clear of the coaſt. 1778. April. Sunday 26. Monday 27.

The

1778 April. The Diſcovery being at ſome diſtance aſtern, I brought to, till ſhe came up, and then bore away, ſteering North Weſt; in which direction I ſuppoſed the coaſt to lie. The wind was at South Eaſt, blew very hard, and in ſqualls, with thick hazy weather. At half paſt one in the afternoon, it blew a perfect hurricane; ſo that I judged it highly dangerous to run any longer before it, and, therefore, brought the ſhips to, with their heads to the Southward, under the foreſails and mizen-ſtayſails. At this time, the Reſolution ſprung a leak, which, at firſt, alarmed us not a little. It was found to be under the ſtarboard buttock; where, from the bread-room, we could both hear and ſee the water ruſh in; and, as we then thought, two feet under water. But in this we were happily miſtaken; for it was afterward found to be even with the water-line, if not above it, when the ſhip was upright. It was no ſooner diſcovered, than the fiſh-room was found to be full of water, and the caſks in it afloat; but this was, in a great meaſure, owing to the water not finding its way to the pumps through the coals that lay in the bottom of the room. For after the water was baled out, which employed us till midnight, and had found its way directly from the leak to the pumps, it appeared that one pump kept it under, which gave us no ſmall ſatisfaction. In the evening, the wind veered to the South, and its fury, in ſome degree, ceaſed. On this, we ſet the main-ſail, and two topſails cloſe-reefed, and ſtretched to the Weſtward. But at eleven o'clock, the gale again increaſed, and obliged us to take in the topſails, till five
Tueſday 28. o'clock the next morning, when the ſtorm began to abate; ſo that we could bear to ſet them again.

The weather now began to clear up; and, being able to ſee ſeveral leagues round us, I ſteered more to the Northward.

At

At noon, the latitude, by obſervation, was 50° 1′; longitude 229° 26′*. I now ſteered North Weſt by North, with a freſh gale at South South Eaſt, and fair weather. But at nine in the evening, it began again to blow hard, and in ſqualls with rain. With ſuch weather, and the wind between South South Eaſt and South Weſt, I continued the ſame courſe till the 30th, at four in the morning, when I ſteered North by Weſt, in order to make the land. I regretted very much indeed that I could not do it ſooner, for this obvious reaſon, that we were now paſſing the place where geographers † have placed the pretended ſtrait of Admiral de Fonte. For my own part, I give no credit to ſuch vague and improbable ſtories, that carry their own confutation along with them. Nevertheleſs, I was very deſirous of keeping the American coaſt aboard, in order to clear up this point beyond diſpute. But it would have been highly imprudent in me, to have engaged with the land in weather ſo exceedingly tempeſtuous, or to have loſt the advantage of a fair wind, by waiting for better weather. This ſame day at noon we were in the latitude of 53° 22′, and in the longitude of 225° 14′.

1778. April. Thurſday 30.

The next morning, being the 1ſt of May, ſeeing nothing of the land, I ſteered North Eaſterly, with a freſh breeze at South South Eaſt and South, with ſqualls and ſhowers of rain and hail. Our latitude at noon was 54° 43′, and our longitude 224° 44′. At ſeven in the evening, being in the latitude of 55° 20′, we got ſight of the land, extending from

May. Friday 1.

* As in the remaining part of this Volume, the Latitude and Longitude are very frequently ſet down; the former being invariably North, and the latter Eaſt, the conſtant repetition of the two words, *North* and *Eaſt*, has been omitted, to avoid unneceſſary preciſion.

† See De Liſle's *Carte Générale des Decouvertes de l'Amiral de Fonte*, &c. Paris. 1752; and many other Maps.

North

1778. May. Saturday 2. North North East to East, or East by South, about twelve or fourteen leagues distant. An hour after, I steered North by West; and at four the next morning, the coast was seen from North by West to South East, the nearest part about six leagues distant *.

At this time the Northern point of an inlet, or what appeared to be one, bore East by South. It lies in the latitude of 56°; and from it to the Northward, the coast seemed to be much broken, forming bays and harbours every two or three leagues; or else appearances much deceived us. At six o'clock, drawing nearer the land, I steered North West by North, this being the direction of the coast; having a fresh gale at South East, with some showers of hail, snow and sleet. Between eleven and twelve o'clock, we passed a group of small islands lying under the main land, in the latitude of 56° 48′; and off, or rather to the Northward of, the South point of a large bay. An arm of this bay, in the Northern part of it, seemed to extend in toward the North, behind a round elevated mountain that lies between it and the sea. This mountain I called *Mount Edgecumbe*; and the point of land that shoots out from it, *Cape Edgecumbe*. The latter lies in the latitude of 57° 3′, and in the longitude of 224° 7′; and, at noon, it bore North 20° West, six leagues distant.

* This must be very near that part of the American coast, where Tscherikow anchored in 1741. For Muller places its latitude in 56°. Had this Russian navigator been so fortunate as to proceed a little farther Northward along the coast, he would have found, as we now learn from Captain Cook, bays, and harbours, and islands, where his ship might have been sheltered, and his people protected in landing. For the particulars of the misfortunes he met with here, two boats crews, which he sent ashore, having never returned, probably cut off by the natives, see *Muller's Découvertes de Russes*, p. 248. 254. The Spaniards, in 1775, found two good harbours on this part of the coast; that called *Gualoupe*, in latitude 57° 11′, and the other, *De los Remedios*, in latitude 57° 18′.

The land, except in ſome places cloſe to the ſea, is all of a conſiderable height, and hilly; but Mount Edgcumbe far out-tops all the other hills. It was wholly covered with ſnow; as were alſo all the other elevated hills; but the lower ones, and the flatter ſpots, bordering upon the ſea, were free from it, and covered with wood. 1778. May.

As we advanced to the North, we found the coaſt from Cape Edgcumbe to trend to North and North Eaſterly for ſix or ſeven leagues, and there form a large bay. In the entrance of that bay are ſome iſlands; for which reaſon I named it the *Bay of Iſlands*. It lies in the latitude of 57° 20′*; and ſeemed to branch into ſeveral arms, one of which turned to the South, and may probably communicate with the bay on the Eaſt ſide of Cape Edgcumbe, and make the land of that Cape an iſland. At eight o'clock in the evening, the Cape bore South Eaſt half South; the Bay of Iſlands North 53° Eaſt; and another inlet, before which are alſo ſome iſlands, bore North 52° Eaſt, five leagues diſtant. I continued to ſteer North North Weſt, half Weſt, and North Weſt by Weſt, as the coaſt trended, with a fine gale at North Eaſt, and clear weather.

At half an hour paſt four in the morning, on the 3d, Mount Edgcumbe bore South 54° Eaſt; a large inlet, North 50° Eaſt, diſtant ſix leagues; and the moſt advanced point of the land, to the North Weſt, lying under a very high peaked mountain, which obtained the name of *Mount Fair Weather*, bore North 32° Weſt. The inlet was named *Croſs Sound*, as being firſt ſeen on that day, ſo marked in our calendar. It Sunday 3.

* It ſhould ſeem, that in this very bay, the Spaniards, in 1775, found their port which they call *De los Remedios*. The latitude is exactly the ſame; and their Journal mentions its *being protected by a long ridge of high iſlands*. See *Miſcellanies by the Honourable Daines Barrington*, p. 503, 504.

1778. May. appeared to branch in ſeveral arms, the largeſt of which turned to the Northward. The South Eaſt point of this Sound is a high promontory, which obtained the name of *Croſs Cape*. It lies in the latitude of 57° 57′, and its longitude is 223° 21′. At noon it bore South Eaſt; and the point, under the peaked mountain, which was called *Cape Fair Weather*, North by Weſt a quarter Weſt, diſtant thirteen leagues. Our latitude at this time, was 58° 17′, and our longitude 222° 14′; and we were diſtant from the ſhore three or four leagues. In this ſituation we found the variation of the compaſs to be from 24° 11′ to 26° 11′ Eaſt.

Here the North Eaſt wind left us, and was ſucceeded by light breezes from the North Weſt, which laſted for ſeveral days. I ſtood to the South Weſt, and Weſt South Weſt, till eight
Monday 4. o'clock the next morning, when we tacked, and ſtood toward the ſhore. At noon, the latitude was 58° 22′, and the longitude 220° 45′. Mount Fair Weather, the peaked mountain over the cape of the ſame name, bore North, 63° Eaſt; the ſhore under it twelve leagues diſtant. This mountain, which lies in the latitude of 58° 52′, and in the longitude of 222°, and five leagues inland, is the higheſt of a chain, or rather a ridge, of mountains, that riſe at the North Weſt entrance of Croſs Sound, and extend to the North Weſt, in a parallel direction with the coaſt. Theſe mountains were wholly covered with ſnow, from the higheſt ſummit down to the ſea-coaſt; ſome few places excepted, where we could perceive trees riſing, as it were, out of the ſea; and which, therefore, we ſuppoſed, grew on low land, or on iſlands bordering upon the ſhore of the continent *.

At

* According to Muller, Beering fell in with the coaſt of North America, in latitude 58° 28′; and he deſcribes its aſpect thus: " *L'aſpect du pays étoit affrayant par*
" *ſes*

At five in the afternoon, our latitude being then 58° 53′, and our longitude 220° 52′; the ſummit of an elevated mountain appeared above the horizon, bearing North, 26° Weſt; and, as was afterward found, forty leagues diſtant. We ſuppoſed it to be Beering's Mount St. Elias; and it ſtands by that name in our chart. 1778. May.

This day we ſaw ſeveral whales, ſeals, and porpoiſes; many gulls, and ſeveral flocks of birds, which had a black ring about the head; the tip of the tail, and upper part of the wings with a black band; and the reſt blueiſh above, and white below. We alſo ſaw a browniſh duck, with a black or deep blue head and neck, ſitting upon the water.

Having but light winds, with ſome calms, we advanced ſlowly; ſo that, on the 6th at noon, we were only in the latitude of 59° 8′, and in the longitude of 220° 19′. Mount Fair Weather bore South, 63° Eaſt, and Mount Elias North, 30° Weſt; the neareſt land about eight leagues diſtant. In the direction of North, 47° Eaſt from this ſtation, there was the appearance of a bay, and an iſland off the South point of it, that was covered with wood. It is here where I ſuppoſe Commodore Beering to have anchored. The latitude, which is 59° 18′, correſponds pretty well with the map of his voyage *, and the longitude is 221° Eaſt. Behind the bay (which I ſhall diſtinguiſh by the name of *Beering's Bay*, in honour of its diſcoverer), or rather to the South of it, the chain of mountains before mentioned, is interrupted by a plain of a few leagues extent; beyond which the ſight was unlimit- Wedneſ. 6.

" *ſes hautes montagnes couvertes de niege.*" The chain, or ridge of mountains, covered with ſnow, mentioned here by Captain Cook, in the ſame latitude, exactly agrees with what Beering met with. See Muller's *Voyages et Decouvertes des Ruſſes*, p. 248—254.

* Probably, Captain Cook means Muller's map, prefixed to his Hiſtory of the Ruſſian Diſcoveries.

1778. May. ed; ſo that there is either a level country or water behind it. In the afternoon, having a few hours calm, I took this opportunity to ſound, and found ſeventy fathoms water over a muddy bottom. The calm was ſucceeded by a light breeze from the North, with which we ſtood to the Weſt-

Thurſday 7. ward; and at noon the next day, we were in the latitude of 59° 27′, and the longitude of 219° 7′. In this ſituation, Mount Fair Weather bore South, 70° Eaſt; Mount St. Elias, North, half Weſt; the Weſternmoſt land in ſight, North, 52° Weſt; and our diſtance from the ſhore four or five leagues; the depth of water being eighty-two fathoms over a muddy bottom. From this ſtation we could ſee a bay (circular to appearance) under the high land, with low wood-land on each ſide of it.

We now found the coaſt to trend very much to the Weſt, inclining hardly any thing to the North; and as we had the wind moſtly from the Weſtward, and but little of it, our

Saturday 9. progreſs was ſlow. On the 9th at noon, the latitude was 59° 30′, and the longitude 217°. In this ſituation the neareſt land was nine leagues diſtant; and Mount St. Elias bore North, 30° Eaſt, nineteen leagues diſtant. This mountain lies twelve leagues inland, in the latitude of 60° 27′, and in the longitude of 219°. It belongs to a ridge of exceedingly high mountains, that may be reckoned a continuation of the former; as they are only divided from them by the plain above mentioned. They extend as far to the Weſt as the longitude of 217°; where, although they do not end, they loſe much of their height, and become more broken and divided.

Sunday 10. At noon on the 10th, our latitude was 59° 51′ and our longitude 215° 56′, being no more than three leagues from the

coaſt of the continent, which extended from Eaſt half North, to North Weſt half Weſt, as far as the eye could reach. To the Weſtward of this laſt direction was an iſland that extended from North, 52° Weſt, to South, 85° Weſt, diſtant ſix leagues. A point ſhoots out from the main toward the North Eaſt end of the iſland, bearing, at this time, North, 30° Weſt, five or ſix leagues diſtant. This point I named *Cape Suckling*. The point of the Cape is low; but within it, is a tolerably high hill, which is disjoined from the mountains by low land; ſo that, at a diſtance, the Cape looks like an iſland. On the North ſide of Cape Suckling is a bay that appeared to be of ſome extent, and to be covered from moſt winds. To this bay I had ſome thoughts of going to ſtop our leak, as all our endeavours to do it at ſea had proved ineffectual. With this view, I ſteered for the Cape; but as we had only variable light breezes, we approached it ſlowly. However, before night, we were near enough to ſee ſome low land ſpitting out from the Cape to the North Weſt, ſo as to cover the Eaſt part of the bay from the South wind. We alſo ſaw ſome ſmall iſlands in the bay, and elevated rocks between the Cape and the North Eaſt end of the iſland. But ſtill there appeared to be a paſſage on both ſides of theſe rocks; and I continued ſteering for them all night, having from forty-three to twenty-ſeven fathoms water over a muddy bottom. 1778. May.

At four o'clock next morning, the wind, which had been moſtly at North Eaſt, ſhifted to North. This being againſt us, I gave up the deſign of going within the iſland, or into the bay, as neither could be done without loſs of time. I therefore bore up for the Weſt end of the iſland. The wind blew faint; and at ten o'clock it fell calm. Being not far from the iſland, I went in a boat, and landed upon it, with a view Monday 11.

1778. May. a view of ſeeing what lay on the other ſide; but finding it farther to the hills than I expected, and the way being ſteep and woody, I was obliged to drop the deſign. At the foot of a tree, on a little eminence not far from the ſhore, I left a bottle, with a paper in it, on which were inſcribed the names of the ſhips, and the date of our diſcovery. And along with it, I incloſed two ſilver twopenny pieces of his Majeſty's coin, of the date 1772. Theſe, with many others, were furniſhed me by the Reverend Dr. Kaye*; and, as a mark of my eſteem and regard for that gentleman, I named the iſland, after him, *Kaye's Iſland*. It is eleven or twelve leagues in length, in the direction of North Eaſt and South Weſt; but its breadth is not above a league, or a league and a half, in any part of it. The South Weſt point, which lies in the latitude of 59° 49′, and the longitude of 216° 58′, is very remarkable, being a naked rock, elevated conſiderably above the land within it. There is alſo an elevated rock lying off it, which, from ſome points of view, appears like a ruined caſtle. Toward the ſea, the iſland terminates in a kind of bare ſloping cliffs, with a beach, only a few paces acroſs to their foot, of large pebble ſtones, intermixed in ſome places with a browniſh clayey ſand, which the ſea ſeems to depoſit after rolling in, having been waſhed down from the higher parts, by the rivulets or torrents. The cliffs are compoſed of a blueiſh ſtone or rock, in a ſoft or mouldering ſtate, except in a few places. There are parts of the ſhore interrupted by ſmall vallies and gullies. In each of theſe, a rivulet or torrent ruſhes down with conſiderable impetuoſity; though it may be ſuppoſed that they are only furniſhed from the ſnow, and laſt no longer than till it is all

* Then Sub-almoner, and Chaplain to his Majeſty, now Dean of Lincoln.

melted.

melted. Theſe vallies are filled with pine-trees, which grow down cloſe to the entrance, but only to about half way up the higher or middle part of the iſland. The woody part alſo begins, every where, immediately above the cliffs, and is continued to the ſame height with the former; ſo that the iſland is covered, as it were, with a broad girdle of wood, ſpread upon its ſide, included between the top of the cliffy ſhore, and the higher parts in the centre. The trees, however, are far from being of an uncommon growth; few appearing to be larger than one might graſp round with his arms, and about forty or fifty feet high; ſo that the only purpoſe they could anſwer for ſhipping, would be to make top-gallant-maſts, and other ſmall things. How far we may judge of the ſize of the trees which grow on the neighbouring continent, it may be difficult to determine. But it was obſerved, that none larger than thoſe we ſaw growing, lay upon the beach amongſt the drift wood. The pine-trees ſeemed all of one ſort; and there was neither the Canadian pine, nor cypreſs to be ſeen. But there were a few which appeared to be the alder, that were but ſmall, and had not yet ſhot forth their leaves. Upon the edges of the cliffs, and on ſome ſloping ground, the ſurface was covered with a kind of turf, about half a foot thick; which ſeemed compoſed of the common moſs; and the top, or upper part of the iſland had almoſt the ſame appearance as to colour; but whatever covered it ſeemed to be thicker. I found amongſt the trees ſome currant and hawberry buſhes; a ſmall yellow-flowered violet; and the leaves of ſome other plants not yet in flower, particularly one which Mr. Anderſon ſuppoſed to be the *heracleum* of Linnæus, the ſweet herb, which Steller, who attended Beering, imagined the

1778. May.

1778. May. the Americans here dreſs for food, in the ſame manner as the natives of Kamtſchatka*.

We ſaw, flying about the wood, a crow; two or three of the white-headed eagles mentioned at Nootka; and another ſort full as large, which appeared alſo of the ſame colour, or blacker, and had only a white breaſt. In the paſſage from the ſhip to the ſhore, we ſaw a great many fowls ſitting upon the water, or flying about in flocks or pairs; the chief of which were a few quebrantahueſſes; divers; ducks, or large peterels; gulls; ſhags; and burres. The divers were of two ſorts; one very large, of a black colour, with a white breaſt and belly; the other ſmaller, and with a longer and more pointed bill, which ſeemed to be the common guillemot. The ducks were alſo of two ſorts; one browniſh, with a black or deep blue head and neck, and is perhaps the ſtone duck deſcribed by Steller. The others fly in larger flocks, but are ſmaller than theſe, and are of a dirty black colour. The gulls were of the common ſort, and thoſe which fly in flocks. The ſhags were large and black, with a white ſpot behind the wings as they flew; but probably only the larger water cormorant. There was alſo a ſingle bird ſeen flying about, to appearance of the gull kind, of a ſnowy white colour, with black along part of the upper ſide of its wings. I owe all theſe remarks to Mr. Anderſon. At the place where we landed, a fox came from the verge of the wood, and eyed us with very little emotion, walking leiſurely without any ſigns of fear. He was of a reddiſh-yellow colour, like ſome of the ſkins we bought at Nootka, but not of a large ſize. We alſo ſaw two or three little ſeals off ſhore; but no other animals or

* See Muller, p. 256.

birds;

CHART
of
COOKS RIVER
in the
N.W. part of AMERICA.
PRINCE WILLIAM SOUND.
R. Turn-again
COOKS RIVER
Point Possession
Snug Corner Bay
Hinchingbrook
Green Isles
Comptrollers Bay
C. Suckling
Kayes Isle
Montagu Isle
Volcano Mt.
Anchor Point
Mount St. Augustine
Point Bede
C. Elizabeth
Barren Isles
C. Douglas
SMOKEY BAY
Point Banks
St. Hermogenes Isle
Whitsuntide Bay
C. Whitsunday
C. Greville
East Longitude from Greenwich

birds; nor the leaſt ſigns of inhabitants having ever been upon the iſland. 1778. May.

I returned on board at half paſt two in the afternoon; and, with a light breeze Eaſterly, ſteered for the South Weſt of the iſland, which we got round by eight o'clock, and then ſtood for the Weſternmoſt land now in ſight, which, at this time, bore North Weſt half North. On the North Weſt ſide of the North Eaſt end of Kaye's Iſland, lies another iſland, ſtretching South Eaſt and North Weſt about three leagues, to within the ſame diſtance of the North Weſt boundary of the bay above mentioned, which is diſtinguiſhed by the name of *Comptroller's Bay*.

Next morning, at four o'clock, Kaye's Iſland was ſtill in ſight, bearing Eaſt a quarter South. At this time, we were about four or five leagues from the main; and the moſt Weſtern part in ſight bore North Weſt half North. We had now a freſh gale at Eaſt South Eaſt; and as we advanced to the North Weſt, we raiſed land more and more Weſterly; and, at laſt, to the Southward of Weſt; ſo that, at noon, when the latitude was 61° 11′, and the longitude 213° 28′, the moſt advanced land bore from us South Weſt by Weſt half Weſt. At the ſame time, the Eaſt point of a large inlet bore Weſt North Weſt, three leagues diſtant. Tueſday 12.

From Comptroller's Bay to this point, which I name *Cape Hinchingbroke*, the direction of the coaſt is nearly Eaſt and Weſt. Beyond this, it ſeemed to incline to the Southward; a direction ſo contrary to the modern charts founded upon the late Ruſſian diſcoveries, that we had reaſon to expect that, by the inlet before us, we ſhould find a paſſage to the North; and that the land to the Weſt and South Weſt was nothing but a group of iſlands. Add to this, that the wind

1778. May. was now at South Eaſt, and we were threatened with a fog and a ſtorm; and I wanted to get into ſome place to ſtop the leak, before we encountered another gale. Theſe reaſons induced me to ſteer for the inlet, which we had no ſooner reached, than the weather became ſo foggy, that we could not ſee a mile before us, and it became neceſſary to ſecure the ſhips in ſome place, to wait for a clearer ſky. With this view, I hauled cloſe under Cape Hinchingbroke, and anchored before a ſmall cove, a little within the Cape, in eight fathoms water, a clayey bottom, and about a quarter of a mile from the ſhore.

The boats were then hoiſted out, ſome to ſound, and others to fiſh. The ſeine was drawn in the cove; but without ſucceſs, for it was torn. At ſome ſhort intervals, the fog cleared away, and gave us a ſight of the lands around us. The Cape bore South by Weſt half Weſt, one league diſtant; the Weſt point of the inlet South Weſt by Weſt, diſtant five leagues; and the land on that ſide extended as far as Weſt by North. Between this point and North Weſt by Weſt, we could ſee no land; and what was in the laſt direction ſeemed to be at a great diſtance. The Weſternmoſt point we had in ſight on the North ſhore, bore North North Weſt half Weſt, two leagues diſtant. Between this point, and the ſhore under which we were at anchor, is a bay about three leagues deep; on the South Eaſt ſide of which there are two or three coves, ſuch as that before which we had anchored; and in the middle ſome rocky iſlands.

To theſe iſlands Mr. Gore was ſent in a boat, in hopes of ſhooting ſome eatable birds. But he had hardly got to them, before about twenty natives made their appearance in two large canoes; on which he thought proper

to

to return to the ſhips, and they followed him. They would not venture along-ſide, but kept at ſome diſtance, hollowing aloud, and alternately claſping and extending their arms; and, in a ſhort time, began a kind of ſong exactly after the manner of thoſe at Nootka. Their heads were alſo powdered with feathers. One man held out a white garment, which we interpreted as a ſign of friendſhip; and another ſtood up in the canoe, quite naked, for almoſt a quarter of an hour, with his arms ſtretched out like a croſs, and motionleſs. The canoes were not conſtructed of wood, as at King George's or Nootka Sound. The frame only, being ſlender laths, was of that ſubſtance; the outſide conſiſting of the ſkins of ſeals, or of ſuch like animals. Though we returned all their ſigns of friendſhip, and, by every expreſſive geſture, tried to encourage them to come along-ſide, we could not prevail. Some of our people repeated ſeveral of the common words of the Nootka language, ſuch as *ſeekemaile*, and *mahook*; but they did not ſeem to underſtand them. After receiving ſome preſents, which were thrown to them, they retired toward that part of the ſhore from whence they came; giving us to underſtand by ſigns, that they would viſit us again the next morning. Two of them, however, each in a ſmall canoe, waited upon us in the night; probably with a deſign to pilfer ſomething, thinking we ſhould be all aſleep; for they retired as ſoon as they found themſelves diſcovered. 1778. May.

During the night, the wind was at South South Eaſt, blowing hard and in ſqualls, with rain, and very thick weather. At ten o'clock next morning, the wind became more moderate, and the weather being ſomewhat clearer, we got under ſail, in order to look out for ſome ſnug place, where Wedneſ. 13.

1778. May. we might ſearch for, and ſtop the leak; our preſent ſtation being too much expoſed for this purpoſe. At firſt, I propoſed to have gone up the bay, before which we had anchored; but the clearneſs of the weather tempted me to ſteer to the Northward, farther up the great inlet, as being all in our way. As ſoon as we had paſſed the North Weſt point of the bay above mentioned, we found the coaſt on that ſide to turn ſhort to the Eaſtward. I did not follow it, but continued our courſe to the North, for a point of land which we ſaw in that direction.

The natives who viſited us the preceding evening, came off again in the morning, in five or ſix canoes; but not till we were under ſail; and although they followed us for ſome time, they could not get up with us. Before two in the afternoon, the bad weather returned again, with ſo thick a haze, that we could ſee no other land beſides the point juſt mentioned, which we reached at half paſt four, and found it to be a ſmall iſland, lying about two miles from the adjacent coaſt, being a point of land, on the Eaſt ſide of which we diſcovered a fine bay, or rather harbour. To this we plied up, under reefed topſails and courſes. The wind blew ſtrong at South Eaſt, and in exceſſively hard ſqualls, with rain. At intervals, we could ſee land in every direction; but in general the weather was ſo foggy, that we could ſee none but the ſhores of the bay into which we were plying. In paſſing the iſland, the depth of water was twenty-ſix fathoms, with a muddy bottom. Soon after, the depth increaſed to ſixty and ſeventy fathoms, a rocky bottom; but in the entrance of the bay, the depth was from thirty to ſix fathoms; the laſt very near the ſhore. At length, at eight o'clock, the violence of the ſqualls obliged

us

us to anchor in thirteen fathoms, before we had got ſo far into the bay as I intended; but we thought ourſelves fortunate that we had already ſufficiently ſecured ourſelves at this hour; for the night was exceedingly ſtormy. 1778. May.

The weather, bad as it was, did not hinder three of the natives from paying us a viſit. They came off in two canoes; two men in one, and one in the other; being the number each could carry. For they were built and conſtructed in the ſame manner with thoſe of the Eſquimaux; only, in the one were two holes for two men to ſit in; and in the other but one. Each of theſe men had a ſtick, about three feet long, with the large feathers or wing of birds tied to it. Theſe they frequently held up to us; with a view, as we gueſſed, to expreſs their pacific diſpoſition*.

The treatment theſe men met with, induced many more to viſit us, between one and two the next morning, in both great and ſmall canoes. Some ventured on board the ſhip; but not till ſome of our people had ſtepped into their boats. Amongſt thoſe who came on board, was a good-looking middle-aged man, whom we afterward found to be the Chief. He was clothed in a dreſs made of the ſea-otter's ſkin; and had on his head ſuch a cap as is worn by the people of King George's Sound, ornamented with ſky-blue glaſs beads, about the ſize of a large pea. He ſeemed to ſet a much higher value upon theſe, than upon our white glaſs beads. Any ſort of beads, however, appeared to be in high eſtimation with theſe people; and they readily gave whatever they had in exchange for them; even their fine ſea- Thurſday 14.

* Exactly correſponding to this, was the manner of receiving Beering's people, at the Schumagin Iſlands, on this coaſt, in 1741. Muller's words are—"On ſait ce "que c'eſt que le *Calumet*, que les Americains ſeptentrionaux préſentent en ſigne de "paix. Ceux-ci en tenoient de pareils en main. C'étoint des bâtons avec *ailes de* "*faucon* attachées au boul." *Decouvertes*, p. 268.

1778. May. otter ſkins. But here I muſt obſerve, that they ſet no more value upon theſe than upon other ſkins, which was alſo the caſe at King George's Sound, till our people ſet a higher price upon them; and even after that, the natives of both places would ſooner part with a dreſs made of theſe, than with one made of the ſkins of wild-cats or of martins.

Theſe people were alſo deſirous of iron; but they wanted pieces eight or ten inches long at leaſt, and of the breadth of three or four fingers. For they abſolutely rejected ſmall pieces. Conſequently, they got but little from us; iron having, by this time, become rather a ſcarce article. The points of ſome of their ſpears or lances were of that metal; others were of copper; and a few of bone; of which the points of their darts, arrows, &c. were compoſed. I could not prevail upon the Chief to truſt himſelf below the upper deck; nor did he and his companions remain long on board. But while we had their company, it was neceſſary to watch them narrowly, as they ſoon betrayed a thieviſh diſpoſition. At length, after being about three or four hours along-ſide the Reſolution, they all left her, and went to the Diſcovery; none having been there before, except one man, who, at this time, came from her, and immediately returned thither in company with the reſt. When I obſerved this, I thought this man had met with ſomething there, which he knew would pleaſe his countrymen better than what they met with at our ſhip. But in this I was miſtaken, as will ſoon appear.

As ſoon as they were gone, I ſent a boat to ſound the head of the bay. For, as the wind was moderate, I had thoughts of laying the ſhip aſhore, if a convenient place could be found where I might begin our operations to ſtop the leak.

It

It was not long before all the Americans left the Diſcovery, and inſtead of returning to us, made their way toward our boat employed as above. The officer in her ſeeing this, returned to the ſhip, and was followed by all the canoes. The boat's crew had no ſooner come on board, leaving in her two of their number by way of a guard, than ſome of the Americans ſtepped into her. Some preſented their ſpears before the two men; others caſt looſe the rope which faſtened her to the ſhip; and the reſt attempted to tow her away. But the inſtant they ſaw us preparing to oppoſe them, they let her go, ſtepped out of her into their canoes, and made ſigns to us to lay down our arms, having the appearance of being as perfectly unconcerned as if they had done nothing amiſs. This, though rather a more daring attempt, was hardly equal to what they had meditated on board the Diſcovery. The man who came and carried all his countrymen from the Reſolution to the other ſhip, had firſt been on board of her; where, after looking down all the hatchways, and ſeeing nobody but the officer of the watch, and one or two more, he no doubt thought they might plunder her with eaſe; eſpecially as ſhe lay at ſome diſtance from us. It was unqueſtionably with this view, that they all repaired to her. Several of them, without any ceremony, went on board; drew their knives; made ſigns to the officer and people on deck to keep off; and began to look about them for plunder. The firſt thing they met with was the rudder of one of the boats, which they threw over-board to thoſe of their party who had remained in the canoes. Before they had time to find another object that pleaſed their fancy, the crew were alarmed, and began to come upon deck armed with cutlaſſes. On ſeeing this, the whole company of plunderers ſneaked off into their canoes, with as much deli-

1778. May.

1778. May. beration and indifference as they had given up the boat; and they were obſerved deſcribing to thoſe who had not been on board, how much longer the knives of the ſhip's crew were than their own. It was at this time, that my boat was on the ſounding duty; which they muſt have ſeen; for they proceeded directly for her, after their diſappointment at the Diſcovery. I have not the leaſt doubt, that their viſiting us ſo very early in the morning was with a view to plunder; on a ſuppoſition, that they ſhould find every body aſleep.

May we not, from theſe circumſtances, reaſonably infer, that theſe people are unacquainted with fire-arms. For certainly, if they had known any thing of their effect, they never would have dared to attempt taking a boat from under a ſhip's guns, in the face of above a hundred men; for moſt of my people were looking at them, at the very inſtant they made the attempt. However, after all theſe tricks, we had the good fortune to leave them as ignorant, in this reſpect, as we found them. For they neither heard nor ſaw a muſquet fired, unleſs at birds.

Juſt as we were going to weigh the anchor, to proceed farther up the bay, it began to blow and to rain as hard as before; ſo that we were obliged to bear away the cable again, and lay faſt. Toward the evening, finding that the gale did not moderate, and that it might be ſome time before an opportunity offered to get higher up, I came to a reſolution to heel the ſhip where we were; and, with this view, moored her with a kedge-anchor and hawſer. In heaving the anchor out of the boat, one of the ſeamen, either through ignorance or careleſſneſs, or both, was carried over board by the buoy-rope, and followed the anchor

to

to the bottom. It is remarkable, that, in this very critical ſituation, he had preſence of mind to diſengage himſelf, and come up to the ſurface of the water, where he was taken up, with one of his legs fractured in a dangerous manner. 1778. May.

Early the next morning, we gave the ſhip a good heel to port, in order to come at, and ſtop the leak. On ripping off the ſheathing, it was found to be in the ſeams, which were very open, both in and under the wale; and, in ſeveral places, not a bit of oakum in them. While the carpenters were making good theſe defects, we filled all our empty water-caſks, at a ſtream hard by the ſhip. The wind was now moderate, but the weather was thick and hazy, with rain. Friday 15.

The natives, who left us the preceding day, when the bad weather came on, paid us another viſit this morning. Thoſe who came firſt, were in ſmall canoes; others, afterward, arrived in large boats; in one of which were twenty women, and one man, beſides children.

In the evening of the 16th, the weather cleared up; and we then found ourſelves ſurrounded on every ſide by land. Our ſtation was on the Eaſt ſide of the Sound, in a place, which in the chart is diſtinguiſhed by the name of *Snug Corner Bay*. And a very ſnug place it is. I went, accompanied by ſome of the officers, to view the head of it; and we found that it was ſheltered from all winds; with a depth of water from ſeven to three fathoms over a muddy bottom. The land, near the ſhore, is low; part clear, and part wooded. The clear ground was covered, two or three feet thick, with ſnow; but very little lay in the woods. The very ſummits of the neighbouring hills were covered with Saturday 16.

1778. May. wood; but thoſe farther inland ſeemed to be naked rocks, buried in ſnow.

Sunday 17. The leak being ſtopped, and the ſheathing made good over it, at four o'clock in the morning of the 17th, we weighed, and ſteered to the North-weſtward, with a light breeze at Eaſt North Eaſt; thinking, if there ſhould be any paſſage to the North through this inlet, that it muſt be in that direction. Soon after we were under ſail, the natives, in both great and ſmall canoes, paid us another viſit, which gave us an additional opportunity of forming a more perfect idea of their perſons, dreſs, and other particulars, which ſhall be afterward deſcribed. Our viſiters ſeemed to have no other buſineſs, but to gratify their curioſity; for they entered into no ſort of traffic with us. After we had got over to the North Weſt point of the arm in which we had anchored, we found that the flood-tide came into the inlet, through the ſame channel by which we had entered. Although this circumſtance did not make wholly againſt a paſſage, it was, however, nothing in its favour. After paſſing the point above mentioned, we met with a good deal of foul ground, and many ſunken rocks, even out in the middle of the channel, which is here five or ſix leagues wide. At this time the wind failed us, and was ſucceeded by calms and light airs from every direction; ſo that we had ſome trouble to extricate ourſelves from the threatening danger. At length, about one o'clock, with the aſſiſtance of our boats, we got to an anchor, under the Eaſtern ſhore, in thirteen fathoms water, and about four leagues to the North of our laſt ſtation. In the morning, the weather had been very hazy; but it afterward cleared up, ſo as to give us a diſtinct view of all the land round us, particularly

larly to the Northward, where it ſeemed to cloſe. This left us but little hopes of finding a paſſage that way; or, indeed, in any other direction, without putting out again to ſea. 1778. April.

To enable me to form a better judgment, I diſpatched Mr. Gore, with two armed boats, to examine the Northern arm; and the maſter, with two other boats, to examine another arm that ſeemed to take an Eaſterly direction. Late in the evening, they both returned. The Maſter reported, that the arm he had been ſent to, communicated with that from which we had laſt come; and that one ſide of it was only formed by a group of iſlands. Mr. Gore informed me, that he had ſeen the entrance of an arm, which, he was of opinion, extended a long way to the North Eaſt; and that, probably by it, a paſſage might be found. On the other hand, Mr. Roberts, one of the mates, whom I had ſent with Mr. Gore to ſketch out the parts they had examined, was of opinion, that they ſaw the head of this arm. The diſagreement of theſe two opinions, and the circumſtance already mentioned of the flood-tide entering the Sound from the South, rendered the exiſtence of a paſſage this way very doubtful. And, as the wind in the morning had become favourable for getting out to ſea, I reſolved to ſpend no more time in ſearching for a paſſage in a place that promiſed ſo little ſucceſs. Beſides this, I conſidered, that, if the land on the Weſt ſhould prove to be iſlands, agreeably to the late Ruſſian Diſcoveries *, we could not fail of getting far enough to the North, and that in good time; provided we did not loſe the ſeaſon in ſearching places, where a paſſage was not only doubtful, but improbable. We were now

* Captain Cook ſeems to take his ideas of theſe from Mr. Stæhlin's map, prefixed to the Account of the Northern Archipelago; publiſhed by Dr. Maty, London, 1774.

1778. May. upward of five hundred and twenty leagues to the Weſtward of any part of Baffin's, or of Hudſon's Bay. And whatever paſſage there may be, it muſt be, or, at leaſt, part of it, muſt lie to the North of latitude 72°*. Who could expect to find a paſſage or ſtrait of ſuch extent?

Monday 18. Having thus taken my reſolution, next morning at three o'clock, we weighed, and with a gentle breeze at North, proceeded to the Southward down the inlet; and met with the ſame broken ground, as on the preceding day. However, we ſoon extricated ourſelves from it, and afterward never ſtruck ground with a line of forty fathoms. Another paſſage into this inlet was now diſcovered, to the South Weſt of that by which we came in, which enabled us to ſhorten our way out to ſea. It is ſeparated from the other by an iſland, extending eighteen leagues in the direction of North Eaſt and South Weſt; to which I gave the name of *Montagu Iſland*.

In this South Weſt channel are ſeveral iſlands. Thoſe that lie in the entrance, next the open ſea, are high and rocky. But thoſe within are low ones; and being entirely free from ſnow, and covered with wood and verdure, on this account they were called *Green Iſlands*.

At two in the afternoon, the wind veered to the South Weſt, and South Weſt by South, which reduced us to the neceſſity of plying. I firſt ſtretched over to within two miles of the Eaſtern ſhore, and tacked in fifty-three fathoms water. In ſtanding back to Montagu Iſland, we diſcovered a ledge of rocks; ſome above, and others under water, lying three miles within, or to the North of the Northern

* On what evidence Captain Cook formed his judgment as to this, will be mentioned in the Introduction.

point

point of Green Iſlands. Afterward, ſome others were ſeen in the middle of the channel farther out than the iſlands. Theſe rocks made unſafe plying in the night (though not very dark); and, for that reaſon, we ſpent it ſtanding off and on, under Montagu Iſland; for the depth of water was too great to come to an anchor. 1778. May.

At day-break, the next morning, the wind came more favourable, and we ſteered for the channel between Montagu Iſland and the Green Iſlands, which is between two and three leagues broad, and from thirty-four to ſeventeen fathoms deep. We had but little wind all the day; and, at eight o'clock in the evening, it was a dead calm; when we anchored in twenty-one fathoms water, over a muddy bottom; about two miles from the ſhore of Montagu's Iſland. Tueſday 19.

The calm continued till ten o'clock the next morning, when it was ſucceeded by a ſmall breeze from the North, with which we weighed; and, by ſix o'clock in the evening, we were again in the open ſea, and found the coaſt trending Weſt by South, as far as the eye could reach. Wedneſ. 20.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

The Inlet called Prince William's Sound.—Its Extent.—Perſons of the Inhabitants deſcribed.—Their Dreſs.—Inciſion of the Under-lip.—Various other Ornaments.—Their Boats.—Weapons, fiſhing, and hunting Inſtruments.—Utenſils.—Tools.—Uſes Iron is applied to.—Food.—Language, and a Specimen of it.—Animals.—Birds.—Fiſh.—Iron and Beads, whence received.

1778. May. TO the inlet, which we had now left, I gave the name of *Prince William's Sound.* To judge of this Sound from what we ſaw of it, it occupies, at leaſt, a degree and a half of latitude, and two of longitude, excluſive of the arms or branches, the extent of which is not known. The direction which they ſeemed to take, as alſo the ſituation and magnitude of the ſeveral iſlands in and about it, will be beſt ſeen in the ſketch, which is delineated with as much accuracy as the ſhort time and other circumſtances would allow.

The natives, who came to make us ſeveral viſits while we were in the Sound, were generally not above the common height; though many of them were under it. They were ſquare, or ſtrong cheſted; and the moſt diſproportioned part of their body ſeemed to be their heads, which were very large; with thick, ſhort necks; and large, broad or ſpreading faces; which, upon the whole, were flat. Their eyes, though not ſmall, ſcarcely bore a proportion to the

ſize

ſize of their faces; and their noſes had full, round points, hooked, or turned up at the tip. Their teeth were broad, white, equal in ſize, and evenly ſet. Their hair was black, thick, ſtraight and ſtrong; and their beards, in general, thin, or wanting; but the hairs about the lips of thoſe who have them, were ſtiff or briſtly, and frequently of a brown colour. And ſeveral of the elderly men had even large and thick, but ſtraight beards. 1778. May.

Though, in general, they agree in the make of their perſons, and largeneſs of their heads, there is a conſiderable variety in their features; but very few can be ſaid to be of the handſome ſort, though their countenance commonly indicates a conſiderable ſhare of vivacity, good-nature, and frankneſs. And yet ſome of them had an air of ſullenneſs and reſerve. Some of the women have agreeable faces; and many are eaſily diſtinguiſhable from the men by their features, which are more delicate; but this ſhould be underſtood chiefly of the youngeſt ſort, or middle-aged. The complexion of ſome of the women, and of the children, is white; but without any mixture of red. And ſome of the men, who were ſeen naked, had rather a browniſh or ſwarthy caſt, which could ſcarcely be the effect of any ſtain; for they do not paint their bodies.

Their common dreſs (for men, women, and children are clothed alike), is a kind of cloſe frock, or rather robe; reaching generally to the ankles, though ſometimes only to the knees. At the upper part is a hole juſt ſufficient to admit the head, with ſleeves that reach to the wriſt. Theſe frocks are made of the ſkins of different animals; the moſt common of which are thoſe of the ſea-otter, grey fox, racoon, and pine martin; with many of ſeal ſkins; and, in general, they

are

1778. May. are worn with the hairy ſide outward. Some alſo have theſe frocks made of the ſkins of fowls, with only the down remaining on them, which they glue on other ſubſtances. And we ſaw one or two woollen garments like thoſe of Nootka. At the ſeams, where the different ſkins are ſewed together, they are commonly ornamented with taſſels or fringes of narrow thongs, cut out of the ſame ſkins. A few have a kind of cape, or collar; and ſome a hood; but the other is the moſt common form, and ſeems to be their whole dreſs in good weather. When it rains, they put over this another frock, ingeniouſly made from the inteſtines of whales, or ſome other large animal, prepared ſo ſkilfully, as almoſt to reſemble our gold-beaters leaf. It is made to draw tight round the neck; its ſleeves reach as low as the wriſt, round which they are tied with a ſtring; and its ſkirts, when they are in their canoes, are drawn over the rim of the hole in which they ſit; ſo that no water can enter. At the ſame time, it keeps the men entirely dry upward. For no water can penetrate through it, any more than through a bladder. It muſt be kept continually moiſt or wet; otherwiſe it is apt to crack or break. This, as well as the common frock made of the ſkins, bears a great reſemblance to the dreſs of the Greenlanders, as deſcribed by Crantz*.

In general, they do not cover their legs, or feet; but a few have a kind of ſkin ſtockings, which reach half-way

* Crantz's Hiſtory of Greenland, Vol. i. p. 136—138. The reader will find in Crantz many very ſtriking inſtances, in which the Greenlanders, and Americans of Prince William's Sound, reſemble each other, beſides thoſe mentioned in this Chapter by Captain Cook. The dreſs of the people of Prince William's Sound, as deſcribed by Captain Cook, alſo agrees with that of the inhabitants of Schumagin's Iſlands, diſcovered by Beering in 1741. Muller's words are, "Leur habillement étoit de "boyaux de baleines pour le haut du corps, et de peaux de chiens-marins pour le bas." *Découvertes des Ruſſes*, p. 274.

up the thigh; and ſcarcely any of them are without mittens for the hands, made of the ſkins of bears paws. Thoſe who wear any thing on their heads, reſembled, in this reſpect, our friends at Nootka; having high truncated conic caps, made of ſtraw, and ſometimes of wood, reſembling a ſeal's head well painted. 1778. May.

The men commonly wear the hair cropt round the neck and forehead; but the women allow it to grow long; and moſt of them tie a ſmall lock of it on the crown; or a few club it behind, after our manner. Both ſexes have the ears perforated with ſeveral holes, about the outer and lower part of the edge, in which they hang little bunches of beads, made of the ſame tubuloſe ſhelly ſubſtance uſed for this purpoſe by thoſe of Nootka. The *ſeptum* of the noſe is alſo perforated; through which they frequently thruſt the quill-feathers of ſmall birds, or little bending ornaments, made of the above ſhelly ſubſtance, ſtrung on a ſtiff ſtring or cord, three or four inches long, which give them a truly groteſque appearance. But the moſt uncommon and unſightly ornamental faſhion, adopted by ſome of both ſexes, is their having the under-lip ſlit, or cut, quite through, in the direction of the mouth, a little below the ſwelling part. This inciſion, which is made even in the ſucking children, is often above two inches long; and either by its natural retraction, when the wound is freſh, or by the repetition of ſome artificial management, aſſumes the true ſhape of lips, and becomes ſo large as to admit the tongue through. This happened to be the caſe, when the firſt perſon having this inciſion was ſeen by one of the ſeamen, who called out, that the man had two mouths; and, indeed, it does not look unlike it. In this artificial mouth they ſtick a flat, narrow ornament, made chiefly out of a ſolid ſhell or bone, cut into

1778. May. little narrow pieces, like ſmall teeth, almoſt down to the baſe or thickeſt part, which has a ſmall projecting bit at each end that ſupports it when put into the divided lip; the cut part then appearing outward. Others have the lower lip only perforated into ſeparate holes; and then the ornament conſiſts of as many diſtinct ſhelly ſtuds, whoſe points are puſhed through theſe holes, and their heads appear within the lip, as another row of teeth immediately under their own.

Theſe are their native ornaments. But we found many beads of European manufacture among them, chiefly of a pale blue colour, which they hang in their ears; about their caps; or join to their lip-ornaments, which have a ſmall hole drilled in each point to which they are faſtened, and others to them, till they hang ſometimes as low as the point of the chin. But, in this laſt caſe, they cannot remove them ſo eaſily; for, as to their own lip-ornaments, they can take them out with their tongue, or ſuck within, at pleaſure. They alſo wear bracelets of the ſhelly beads, or others of a cylindrical ſhape, made of a ſubſtance like amber; with ſuch alſo as are uſed in their ears and noſes. And ſo fond are they, in general, of ornament, that they ſtick any thing in their perforated lip; one man appearing with two of our iron nails projecting from it like prongs; and another endeavouring to put a large braſs button into it.

The men frequently paint their faces of a bright red, and of a black colour, and ſometimes of a blue, or leaden colour; but not in any regular figure; and the women, in ſome meaſure, endeavoured to imitate them, by puncturing or ſtaining the chin with black, that comes to a point in each cheek; a practice very ſimilar to which is in faſhion amongſt

amongſt the females of Greenland, as we learn from Crantz *. Their bodies are not painted, which may be owing to the ſcarcity of proper materials; for all the colours which they brought to ſell in bladders, were in very ſmall quantities. Upon the whole, I have no where ſeen ſavages who take more pains than theſe people do, to ornament, or rather to disfigure their perſons. 1778. May.

Their boats or canoes are of two ſorts; the one being large and open, and the other ſmall and covered. I mentioned already, that in one of the large boats were twenty women, and one man, beſides children. I attentively examined and compared the conſtruction of this, with Crantz's deſcription of what he calls the great, or women's boat in Greenland, and found that they were built in the ſame manner, parts like parts, with no other difference than in the form of the head and ſtern; particularly of the firſt, which bears ſome reſemblance to the head of a whale. The framing is of ſlender pieces of wood, over which the ſkins of ſeals, or of other larger ſea-animals, are ſtretched, to compoſe the outſide. It appeared alſo, that the ſmall canoes of theſe people are made nearly of the ſame form, and of the ſame materials with thoſe uſed by the Greenlanders † and Eſquimaux; at leaſt the difference is not material. Some of theſe, as I have before obſerved, carry two men. They are broader in proportion to their length than thoſe of the Eſquimaux; and the head or fore-part curves ſomewhat like the head of a violin.

The weapons, and inſtruments for fiſhing and hunting, are the very ſame that are made uſe of by the Eſquimaux and Greenlanders; and it is unneceſſary to be particular in my

* Vol. i. p. 138.

† See Crantz, Vol. i. p. 150.

1778. May. account of them, as they are all very accurately deſcribed by Crantz*. I did not ſee a ſingle one with theſe people that he has not mentioned; nor has he mentioned one that they have not. For defenſive armour they have a kind of jacket, or coat of mail, made of thin laths, bound together with ſinews, which makes it quite flexible, though ſo cloſe as not to admit an arrow or dart. It only covers the trunk of the body, and may not be improperly compared to a man's ſtays.

As none of theſe people lived in the bay where we anchored, or where any of us landed, we ſaw none of their habitations; and I had not time to look after them. Of their domeſtic utenſils, they brought in their boats ſome round and oval ſhallow diſhes of wood; and others of a cylindical ſhape much deeper. The ſides were made of one piece, bent round, like our chip-boxes, though thick, neatly faſtened with thongs, and the bottoms fixed in with ſmall wooden pegs. Others were ſmaller, and of a more elegant ſhape, ſomewhat reſembling a large oval butter-boat, without a handle, but more ſhallow, made from a piece of wood, or horny ſubſtance. Theſe laſt were ſometimes neatly carved. They had many little ſquare bags, made of the ſame gut with their outer frocks, neatly ornamented with very minute red feathers interwoven with it, in which were contained ſome very fine ſinews, and bundles of ſmall cord, made from them, moſt ingeniouſly plaited. They alſo brought many chequered baſkets, ſo cloſely wrought as to hold water; ſome wooden models of their canoes; a good many little images, four or five inches long, either of wood, or ſtuffed; which were covered with

* Vol. i. p. 146. He has alſo given a repreſentation of them on a plate there inſerted.

a bit

a bit of fur, and ornamented with pieces of ſmall quill feathers, in imitation of their ſhelly beads, with hair fixed on their heads. Whether theſe might be mere toys for children, or held in veneration, as repreſenting their deceaſed friends, and applied to ſome ſuperſtitious purpoſe, we could not determine. But they have many inſtruments made of two or three hoops, or concentric pieces of wood, with a croſs-bar fixed in the middle, to hold them by. To theſe are fixed a great number of dried barnacle-ſhells, with threads, which ſerve as a rattle, and make a loud noiſe, when they ſhake them. This contrivance ſeems to be a ſubſtitute for the rattling-bird at Nootka; and perhaps both of them are employed on the ſame occaſions*. 1778. May.

With what tools they make their wooden utenſils, frames of boats, and other things, is uncertain; as the only one ſeen amongſt them was a kind of ſtone adze, made almoſt after the manner of thoſe of Otaheite, and the other iſlands of the South Sea. They have a great many iron knives; ſome of which are ſtraight; others a little curved; and ſome very ſmall ones, fixed in pretty long handles, with the blades bent upward, like ſome of our ſhoemakers inſtruments. But they have ſtill knives of another ſort, which are ſometimes near two feet long, ſhaped almoſt like a dagger, with a ridge in the middle. Theſe they wear in ſheaths of ſkins, hung by a thong round the neck, under their robe; and they are, probably, only uſed as weapons; the other knives being apparently applied to other purpoſes. Every thing they have, however, is as well and ingeniouſly made, as if they were furniſhed with the moſt complete tool-cheſt; and their ſewing, plaiting of ſinews, and ſmall

* The rattling-ball found by Steller, who attended Beering in 1741, at no great diſtance from this Sound, ſeems to be for a ſimilar uſe. See Muller, p. 256.

1778. May. work on their little bags, may be put in competition with the moſt delicate manufactures found in any part of the known world. In ſhort, conſidering the otherwiſe uncivilized or rude ſtate in which theſe people are, their Northern ſituation, amidſt a country perpetually covered with ſnow, and the wretched materials they have to work with, it appears, that their invention and dexterity, in all manual works, is at leaſt equal to that of any other nation.

The food which we ſaw them eat, was dried fiſh, and the fleſh of ſome animal, either broiled or roaſted. Some of the latter that was bought, ſeemed to be bear's fleſh, but with a fiſhy taſte. They alſo eat the larger ſort of fern-root, mentioned at Nootka, either baked, or dreſſed in ſome other way; and ſome of our people ſaw them eat freely of a ſubſtance which they ſuppoſed to be the inner part of the pine bark. Their drink is moſt probably water; for in their boats they brought ſnow in the wooden veſſels, which they ſwallowed by mouthfuls. Perhaps it could be carried with leſs trouble, in theſe open veſſels, than water itſelf. Their method of eating ſeems decent and cleanly; for they always took care to ſeparate any dirt that might adhere to their victuals. And though they ſometimes did eat the raw fat of ſome ſea animal, they cut it carefully into mouthfuls, with their ſmall knives. The ſame might be ſaid of their perſons, which, to appearance, were always clean and decent, without greaſe or dirt; and the wooden veſſels, in which their victuals are probably put, were kept in excellent order; as well as their boats, which were neat, and free from lumber.

Their language ſeems difficult to be underſtood at firſt; not from any indiſtinctneſs or confuſion in their words and ſounds, but from the various ſignifications they have. For they

they appeared to uſe the very ſame word, frequently, on very different occaſions; though doubtleſs this might, if our intercourſe had been of longer duration, have been found to be a miſtake on our ſide. The only words I could obtain, and for them I am indebted to Mr. Anderſon*, were thoſe that follow; the firſt of which was alſo uſed at Nootka, in the ſame ſenſe; though we could not trace an affinity between the two dialects in any other inſtance. 1778. May.

Akaſhou,	*What's the name of that?*
Namuk,	*An ornament for the ear.*
Lukluk,	*A brown ſhaggy ſkin, perhaps a bear's.*
Aa,	*Yes.*
Natooneſhuk,	*The ſkin of a ſea-otter.*
Keeta,	*Give me ſomething.*
Naema,	*Give me ſomething in exchange,* or *barter.*
Oonaka,	*Of,* or *belonging to me.—Will you barter for this that belongs to me?*
Manaka,	
Ahleu,	*A ſpear.*
Weena, *or* Veena,	*Stranger—calling to one.*
Keelaſhuk,	*Guts of which they make jackets.*
Tawuk,	*Keep it.*
Amilhtoo,	*A piece of white bear's ſkin,* or *perhaps the hair that covered it.*
Whaehai,	*Shall I keep it? do you give it me?*
Yaut,	*I'll go*; or *ſhall I go?*
Chilke,	*One.*
Taiha,	*Two.*
Tokke,	*Three.*

* We are alſo indebted to him for many remarks in this chapter, interwoven with thoſe of Captain Cook, as throwing conſiderable light on many parts of his journal.

1778. May.

(Tinke)	
Chukelo*,	*Four?*
Koeheene,	*Five?*
Takulai,	*Six?*
Keichilho,	*Seven?*
Klu, *or* Kliew,	*Eight?*

As to the animals of this part of the continent, the ſame muſt be underſtood as of thoſe at Nootka; that is, that the knowledge we have of them is entirely taken from the ſkins which the natives brought to ſell. Theſe were chiefly of ſeals; a few foxes; the whitiſh cat, or *lynx*; common and pine martins; ſmall ermines; bears; racoons; and ſea-otters. Of theſe, the moſt common were the martin, racoon, and ſea-otter ſkins, which compoſed the ordinary dreſs of the natives; but the ſkins of the firſt, which in general were of a much lighter brown than thoſe at Nootka, were far ſuperior to them in fineneſs; whereas the laſt, which, as well as the martins, were far more plentiful than at Nootka, ſeemed greatly inferior in the fineneſs and thickneſs of their fur, though they greatly exceeded them in ſize; and were almoſt all of the gloſſy black ſort, which is doubtleſs the colour moſt eſteemed in thoſe ſkins. Bear and ſeal ſkins were alſo pretty common; and the laſt were in general white, very beautifully ſpotted with black; or ſometimes ſimply white; and many of the bears here were of a brown, or ſooty colour.

Beſides theſe animals, which were all ſeen at Nootka, there are ſome others in this place which we did not find there; ſuch as, the white bear; of whoſe ſkins the natives

* With regard to theſe numerals, Mr. Anderſon obſerves, that the words correſponding to ours, are not certain after paſſing *three*; and therefore he marks thoſe, about whoſe poſition he is doubtful, with a point of interrogation.

brought

brought ſeveral pieces, and ſome entire ſkins of cubs; from which their ſize could not be determined. We alſo found the wolverene, or quickhatch, which had very bright colours; a larger ſort of ermine than the common one, which is the ſame as at Nootka, varied with a brown colour, and with ſcarcely any black on its tail. The natives alſo brought the ſkin of the head of ſome very large animal; but it could not be poſitively determined what it was; though, from the colour and ſhagginess of the hair, and its unlikeneſs to any land animal, we judged it might probably be that of the large male urſine ſeal, or ſea-bear. But one of the moſt beautiful ſkins, and which ſeems peculiar to this place, as we never ſaw it before, is that of a ſmall animal about ten inches long, of a brown or ruſty colour on the back, with a great number of obſcure whitiſh ſpecks; and the ſides of a blueiſh aſh colour, alſo with a few of theſe ſpecks. The tail is not above a third of the length of its body, and is covered with hair of a whitiſh colour at the edges. It is no doubt the ſame with thoſe called ſpotted field mice, by Mr. Stæhlin*, in his ſhort account of the New Northern Archipelago. But whether they be really of the mouſe kind, or a ſquirrel, we could not tell, for want of perfect ſkins; though Mr. Anderſon was inclined to think that it is the ſame animal deſcribed under the name of the *Caſan* marmot, by Mr. Pennant. The number of ſkins we found here, points out the great plenty of theſe ſeveral animals juſt mentioned; but it is remarkable, that we neither ſaw the ſkins of the mooſe nor of the common deer. 1778. May.

Of the birds mentioned at Nootka, we found here only the white-headed eagle; the ſhag; the *alcyon*, or great king-

* In his Account of Kodjak, p. 32 and 34.

1778. May.

fiſher, which had very fine bright colours; and the humming-bird, which came frequently and flew about the ſhip, while at anchor; though it can ſcarcely live here in the winter, which muſt be very ſevere. The water fowl were geeſe; a ſmall ſort of duck, almoſt like that mentioned at Kerguelen's Land; another ſort which none of us knew; and ſome of the black ſeapyes, with red bills, which we found at Van Diemen's Land, and New Zealand. Some of the people who went on ſhore, killed a grouſe, a ſnipe, and ſome plover. But though, upon the whole, the water fowl were pretty numerous, eſpecially the ducks and geeſe, which frequent the ſhores, they were ſo ſhy, that it was ſcarcely poſſible to get within ſhot; ſo that we obtained a very ſmall ſupply of them as refreſhment. The duck mentioned above, is as large as the common wild-duck, of a deep black colour, with a ſhort pointed tail, and red feet. The bill is white, tinged with red toward the point, and has a large black ſpot, almoſt ſquare, near its baſe, on each ſide, where it is alſo enlarged or diſtended. And on the forehead is a large triangular white ſpot; with one ſtill larger on the back part of the neck. The female has much duller colours, and none of the ornaments of the bill, except the two black ſpots, which are obſcure.

There is likewiſe a ſpecies of diver here, which ſeems peculiar to the place. It is about the ſize of a partridge; has a ſhort, black, compreſſed bill; with the head and upper part of the neck of a brown black; the reſt of a deep brown, obſcurely waved with black, except the under-part, which is entirely of a blackiſh caſt, very minutely varied with white; the other (perhaps the female) is blacker above, and whiter below. A ſmall land bird, of the finch kind, about the ſize of a yellow-hammer, was alſo found; but

but was ſuſpected to be one of thoſe which change their colour, with the ſeaſon, and with their migrations. At this time, it was of a duſky brown colour, with a reddiſh tail; and the ſuppoſed male had a large yellow ſpot on the crown of the head, with ſome varied black on the upper part of the neck; but the laſt was on the breaſt of the female. 1778. May.

The only fiſh we got, were ſome torſk and halibut, which were chiefly brought by the natives to ſell; and we caught a few ſculpins about the ſhip; with ſome purpliſh ſtar-fiſh, that had ſeventeen or eighteen rays. The rocks were obſerved to be almoſt deſtitute of ſhell fiſh; and the only other animal of this tribe ſeen, was a red crab, covered with ſpines of a very large ſize.

The metals we ſaw were copper and iron; both which, particularly the latter, were in ſuch plenty, as to conſtitute the points of moſt of the arrows and lances. The ores, with which they painted themſelves, were a red, brittle, unctuous ochre, or iron-ore, not much unlike cinnabar in colour; a bright blue pigment, which we did not procure; and black lead. Each of theſe ſeems to be very ſcarce, as they brought very ſmall quantities of the firſt and laſt, and ſeemed to keep them with great care.

Few vegetables of any kind were ſeen; and the trees which chiefly grew here, were the Canadian and ſpruce pine, and ſome of them tolerably large.

The beads and iron found amongſt theſe people, left no room to doubt, that they muſt have received them from ſome civilized nation. We were pretty certain, from circumſtances already mentioned, that we were the firſt Europeans with whom they had ever communicated directly;

1778. May. and it remains only to be decided, from what quarter they had got our manufactures, by intermediate conveyance. And there cannot be the leaſt doubt of their having received theſe articles, through the intervention of the more inland tribes, from Hudſon's Bay, or the ſettlements on the Canadian lakes; unleſs it can be ſuppoſed (which however is leſs likely) that the Ruſſian traders, from Kamtſchatkà, have already extended their traffic thus far; or at leaſt that the natives of their moſt Eaſterly Fox Iſlands communicate along the coaſt, with thoſe of Prince William's Sound*.

As to the copper, theſe people ſeem to procure it themſelves, or at moſt it paſſes through few hands to them; for they uſed to expreſs its being in a ſufficient quantity amongſt them, when they offered any to barter, by pointing to their weapons; as if to ſay, that having ſo much of this metal of their own, they wanted no more.

It is, however, remarkable, if the inhabitants of this Sound be ſupplied with European articles, by way of the intermediate traffic to the Eaſt coaſt, that they ſhould, in return, never have given to the more inland Indians any of

* There is a circumſtance mentioned by Muller, in his account of Beering's voyage to the coaſt of America in 1741, which ſeems to decide this queſtion. His people found iron at the Schumagin Iſlands, as may be fairly preſumed from the following quotation. "Un ſeul homme avoit un couteau pendu à ſa ceinture, qui parut "fort ſingulier à nos gens par ſa figure. Il étoit long de huit pouces, et fort épais, & "largè à l'endroit où devoit être la pointe. On ne peut ſavoir quel étoit l'uſage de "cet outil." *Découvertes des Ruſſes*, p. 274.

If there was iron amongſt the natives on this part of the American coaſt, prior to the diſcovery of it by the Ruſſians, and before there was any traffic with them carried on from Kamtſchatka, what reaſon can there be to make the leaſt doubt of the people of Prince William's Sound, as well as thoſe of Schumagin's Iſlands, having got this metal from the only probable ſource, the European ſettlements on the North Eaſt coaſt of this continent?

their

their ſea-otter ſkins; which would certainly have been ſeen, ſome time or other, about Hudſon's Bay. But, as far as I know, that is not the caſe; and the only method of accounting for this, muſt be by taking into conſideration the very great diſtance; which, though it might not prevent European goods coming ſo far, as being ſo uncommon, might prevent the ſkins, which are a common article, from paſſing through more than two or three different tribes, who might uſe them for their own clothing; and ſend others, which they eſteemed leſs valuable, as being of their own animals, Eaſtward, till they reach the traders from Europe. 1778. May.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

Progreſs along the Coaſt.—Cape Elizabeth.—Cape St. Hermogenes.—Accounts of Beering's Voyage very defective.—Point Banks.—Cape Douglas.—Cape Bede.—Mount St. Auguſtin.—Hopes of finding a Paſſage up an Inlet.—The Ships proceed up it.—Indubitable Marks of its being a River.—Named Cook's River.—The Ships return down it.—Various Viſits from the Natives.—Lieutenant King lands, and takes poſſeſſion of the Country.—His Report.—The Reſolution runs aground on a Shoal.—Reflections on the Diſcovery of Cook's River.—The conſiderable Tides in it accounted for.

1778. May. Wedneſ. 20. Thurſday 21. AFTER leaving Prince William's Sound, I ſteered to the South Weſt, with a gentle breeze at North North Eaſt; which, at four o'clock, the next morning, was ſucceeded by a calm; and ſoon after, the calm was ſucceeded by a breeze from South Weſt. This freſhening, and veering to North Weſt, we ſtill continued to ſtretch to the South Weſt, and paſſed a lofty promontory, ſituated in the latitude of 59° 10′, and the longitude of 207° 45′. As the diſcovery of it was connected with the Princeſs Elizabeth's birth-day, I named it *Cape Elizabeth*. Beyond it we could ſee no land; ſo that, at firſt, we were in hopes that it was the Weſtern extremity of the continent; but not long after, we ſaw our miſtake; for freſh land appeared in ſight, bearing Weſt South Weſt.

The

1778. May.

The wind, by this time, had increaſed to a very ſtrong gale, and forced us to a good diſtance from the coaſt. In the afternoon of the 22d, the gale abated; and we ſtood to the Northward for Cape Elizabeth; which at noon, the next day, bore Weſt, ten leagues diſtant. At the ſame time, a new land was ſeen, bearing South 77° Weſt, which was ſuppoſed to connect Cape Elizabeth with the land we had ſeen to the Weſtward. Friday 22. Saturday 23.

The wind continued at Weſt, and I ſtood to the Southward till noon the next day, when we were within three leagues of the coaſt which we had diſcovered on the 22d. It here formed a point that bore Weſt North Weſt. At the ſame time, more land was ſeen extending to the Southward, as far as South South Weſt; the whole being twelve or fifteen leagues diſtant. On it was ſeen a ridge of mountains covered with ſnow, extending to the North Weſt, behind the firſt land, which we judged to be an iſland, from the very inconſiderable quantity of ſnow that lay upon it. This point of land is ſituated in the latitude of 58° 15′, and in the longitude of 207° 42′; and by what I can gather from the account of Beering's voyage, and the chart that accompanies it in the Engliſh edition*, I conclude, that it muſt be what he called Cape St. Hermogenes. But the account of that voyage is ſo very much abridged, and the chart ſo extremely inaccurate, that it is hardly poſſible, either by the one or by the other, or by comparing both together, to find out any one place which that navigator either ſaw or touched at. Were I to form a judgment of Beering's proceedings on this coaſt, I ſhould ſuppoſe, that he fell in with the continent near Mount Fair-weather. But I am Sunday 24.

* Captain Cook means Muller's; of which a tranſlation had been publiſhed in London ſome time before he ſailed.

by

1778. May. by no means certain, that the bay to which I have given his name, is the place where he anchored. Nor do I know, that what I called Mount St. Elias, is the ſame conſpicuous mountain to which he gave that name. And as to his Cape St. Elias, I am entirely at a loſs to pronounce where it lies.

On the North Eaſt ſide of Cape St. Hermogenes, the coaſt turned toward the North Weſt, and appeared to be wholly unconnected with the land ſeen by us the preceding day. In the chart above mentioned, there is here a ſpace, where Beering is ſuppoſed to have ſeen no land. This alſo favoured the later account publiſhed by Mr. Stæhlin, who makes Cape St. Hermogenes, and all the land that Beering diſcovered to the South Weſt of it, to be a cluſter of iſlands; placing St. Hermogenes amongſt thoſe which are deſtitute of wood. What we now ſaw, ſeemed to confirm this; and every circumſtance inſpired us with hopes of finding here a paſſage Northward, without being obliged to proceed any farther to the South Weſt.

We were detained off the Cape, by variable light airs and Monday 25. calms, till two o'clock the next morning, when a breeze ſpringing up at North Eaſt, we ſteered North North Weſt along the coaſt; and ſoon found the land of Cape St. Hermogenes to be an iſland, about ſix leagues in circuit, ſeparated from the adjacent coaſt by a channel one league broad. A league and a half to the North of this iſland, lie ſome rocks, above water; on the North Eaſt ſide of which we had from thirty to twenty fathoms water.

At noon, the iſland of St. Hermogenes bore South half Eaſt, eight leagues diſtant; and the land to the North Weſt of it, extended from South half Weſt to near Weſt. In this

laſt direction it ended in a low point, now five leagues diſtant, which was called *Point Banks*. The latitude of the ſhip, at this time, was 58° 41′, and its longitude 207° 44′. In this ſituation, the land, which was ſuppoſed to connect Cape Elizabeth with this South Weſt land, was in ſight, bearing North Weſt half North. I ſteered directly for it; and, on a nearer approach, found it to be a group of high iſlands and rocks, entirely unconnected with any other land. They obtained the name of *Barren Iſles* from their very naked appearance. Their ſituation is in the latitude of 59°, and in a line with Cape Elizabeth and Point Banks; three leagues diſtant from the former, and five from the latter. 1778. May.

I intended going through one of the channels that divide theſe iſlands; but meeting with a ſtrong current ſetting againſt us, I bore up, and went to the leeward of them all. Toward the evening, the weather, which had been hazy all day, cleared up, and we got ſight of a very lofty promontory, whoſe elevated ſummit, forming two exceedingly high mountains, was ſeen above the clouds. This promontory I named *Cape Douglas*, in honour of my very good friend, Dr. Douglas, canon of Windſor. It is ſituated in the latitude of 58° 56′, and in the longitude of 206° 10′; ten leagues to the Weſtward of Barren Iſles; and twelve from Point Banks, in the direction of North Weſt by Weſt half Weſt.

Between this point and Cape Douglas, the coaſt ſeemed to form a large and deep bay; which, from ſome ſmoke that had been ſeen on Point Banks, obtained the name of *Smokey Bay*.

At day-break, the next morning, being the 26th, having got to the Northward of the Barren Iſles, we diſcovered more land, extending from Cape Douglas to the North. It form- Tueſday 26.

1778. May. ed a chain of mountains of vaſt height; one of which, far more conſpicuous than the reſt, was named *Mount St. Auguſtin.* The diſcovery of this land did not diſcourage us; as it was ſuppoſed to be wholly unconnected with the land of Cape Elizabeth. For, in a North North Eaſt direction, the ſight was unlimited by every thing but the horizon. We alſo thought, that there was a paſſage to the North Weſt, between Cape Douglas and Mount St. Auguſtin. In ſhort, it was imagined, that the land on our larboard, to the North of Cape Douglas, was compoſed of a group of iſlands, disjoined by ſo many channels, any one of which we might make uſe of according as the wind ſhould ſerve.

With theſe flattering ideas, having a freſh gale at North North Eaſt, we ſtood to the North Weſt, till eight o'clock, when we clearly ſaw that what we had taken for iſlands were ſummits of mountains, every where connected by lower land, which the hazineſs of the horizon had prevented us from ſeeing at a greater diſtance. This land was every where covered with ſnow, from the tops of the hills down to the very ſea-beach; and had every other appearance of being part of a great continent. I was now fully perſuaded that I ſhould find no paſſage by this inlet; and my perſevering in the ſearch of it here, was more to ſatisfy other people, than to confirm my own opinion.

At this time, Mount St. Auguſtin bore North, 40° Weſt, three or four leagues diſtant. This mountain is of a conical figure, and of very conſiderable height; but it remains undetermined whether it be an iſland, or part of the continent. Finding, that nothing could be done to the Weſt, we tacked, and ſtood over to Cape Elizabeth, under which we fetched at half paſt five in the afternoon. On the North ſide of Cape

Elizabeth, between it and a lofty promontory, named *Cape Bede* *, is a bay, in the bottom of which there appeared to be two ſnug harbours. We ſtood well into this bay, where we might have anchored in twenty-three fathoms water; but as I had no ſuch view, we tacked and ſtood to the Weſtward, with the wind at North, a very ſtrong gale, attended by rain, and thick hazy weather. 1778. May.

The next morning the gale abated; but the ſame weather continued till three o'clock in the afternoon, when it cleared up. Cape Douglas bore South Weſt by Weſt; Mount St. Auguſtin Weſt half South; and Cape Bede South, 15° Eaſt, five leagues diſtant. In this ſituation, the depth of water was forty fathoms, over a rocky bottom. From Cape Bede, the coaſt trended North Eaſt by Eaſt, with a chain of mountains inland, extending in the ſame direction. The land on the coaſt was woody; and there ſeemed to be no deficiency of harbours. But what was not much in our favour, we diſcovered low land in the middle of the inlet, extending from North North Eaſt, to North Eaſt by Eaſt half Eaſt. However, as this was ſuppoſed to be an iſland, it did not diſcourage us. About this time, we got a light breeze Southerly, and I ſteered to the Weſtward of this low land; nothing appearing to obſtruct us in that direction. Our ſoundings, during the night, were from thirty to twenty-five fathoms.

On the 28th in the morning, having but very little wind, and obſerving the ſhip to drive to the Southward, in order to ſtop her, I dropped a kedge-anchor, with an eight inch hawſer bent to it. But, in bringing the ſhip up, the hawſer Thurſday 28.

* In naming this, and Mount St. Auguſtin, Captain Cook was directed by our Calendar.

1778. May. parted near the inner end; and we loſt both it and the anchor. For although we brought the ſhip up with one of the bowers, and ſpent moſt of the day in ſweeping for them, it was to no effect. By an obſervation, we found our ſtation to be in the latitude of 59° 51′; the low land above mentioned extended from North .Eaſt to South, 75° Eaſt; the neareſt part two leagues diſtant. The land on the Weſtern ſhore was about ſeven leagues diſtant, and extended from South 35° Weſt, to North 7° Eaſt; ſo that the extent of the inlet was now reduced to three points and a half of the compaſs; that is, from North half Eaſt, to North Eaſt. Between theſe two points no land was to be ſeen. Here was a ſtrong tide ſetting to the Southward out of the inlet. It was the ebb, and ran between three and four knots in an hour; and it was low water at ten o'clock. A good deal of ſea-weed, and ſome drift-wood, were carried out with the tide. The water too had become thick like that in rivers; but we were encouraged to proceed by finding it as ſalt at low water as the ocean. The ſtrength of the flood-tide was three knots; and the ſtream ran up till four in the afternoon.

As it continued calm all day, I did not move till eight o'clock in the evening; when, with a light breeze at Eaſt, we weighed, and ſtood to the North, up the inlet. We had not been long under ſail, before the wind veered to the North, increaſing to a freſh gale, and blowing in ſqualls, with rain. This did not, however, hinder us from plying up as long as the flood continued; which was till near five o'clock the
Friday 29. next morning. We had ſoundings from thirty-five to twenty-four fathoms. In this laſt depth we anchored about two leagues from the Eaſtern ſhore, in the latitude of 60° 8′; ſome low land, that we judged to be an iſland, lying under

the Weſtern ſhore, extended from North half Weſt, to North Weſt by North, diſtant three or four leagues. 1778. May.

The weather had now become fair and tolerably clear; ſo that we could ſee any land that might lie within our horizon; and in a North North Eaſt direction no land, nor any thing to obſtruct our progreſs, was viſible. But, on each ſide was a ridge of mountains, riſing one behind another, without the leaſt ſeparation. I judged it to be low water, by the ſhore, about ten o'clock; but the ebb ran down till near noon. The ſtrength of it was four knots and a half; and it fell, upon a perpendicular, ten feet three inches, that is, while we lay an anchor; ſo that there is reaſon to believe this was not the greateſt fall. On the Eaſtern ſhore we now ſaw two columns of ſmoke, a ſure ſign that there were inhabitants.

At one in the afternoon we weighed, and plyed up under double-reefed top-ſails and courſes, having a very ſtrong gale at North North Eaſt, nearly right down the inlet. We ſtretched over to the Weſtern ſhore, and fetched within two leagues of the South end of the low land, or iſland before mentioned, under which I intended to have taken ſhelter till the gale ſhould ceaſe. But falling ſuddenly into twelve fathoms water, from upward of forty, and ſeeing the appearance of a ſhoal ahead, ſpitting out from the low land, I tacked, and ſtretched back to the Eaſtward; and anchored under that ſhore in nineteen fathoms water, over a bottom of ſmall pebble ſtones.

Between one and two in the morning of the 30th, we weighed again with the firſt of the flood, the gale having, by this time, quite abated, but ſtill continuing contrary; ſo that we plied up till near ſeven o'clock, when the tide being Saturday 30.

1778. May. being done, we anchored in nineteen fathoms, under the ſame ſhore as before. The North Weſt part of it, forming a bluff point, bore North, 20° Eaſt, two leagues diſtant; a point on the other ſhore oppoſite to it, and nearly of the ſame height, bore North, 36° Weſt; our latitude, by obſervation, 60° 37′.

About noon, two canoes, with a man in each, came off to the ſhip, from near the place where we had ſeen the ſmoke the preceding day. They laboured very hard in paddling acroſs the ſtrong tide; and heſitated a little before they would come quite cloſe; but upon ſigns being made to them, they approached One of them talked a great deal to no purpoſe; for we did not underſtand a word he ſaid. He kept pointing to the ſhore, which we interpreted to be an invitation to go thither. They accepted a few trifles from me, which I conveyed to them from the quarter-gallery. Theſe men, in every reſpect, reſembled the people we had met with in Prince William's Sound, as to their perſons and dreſs. Their canoes were alſo of the ſame conſtruction. One of our viſiters had his face painted jet black, and ſeemed to have no beard; but the other, who was more elderly, had no paint, and a conſiderable beard, with a viſage much like the common ſort of the Prince William's people. There was alſo ſmoke ſeen upon the flat Weſtern ſhore this day, from whence we may infer, that theſe lower ſpots, and iſlands, are the only inhabited places.

When the flood made we weighed, and then the canoes left us. I ſtood over to the Weſtern ſhore, with a freſh gale at North North Eaſt, and fetched under the point above mentioned. This, with the other on the oppoſite ſhore, contracted the channel to the breadth of four leagues. Through this

this channel ran a prodigious tide. It looked frightful to us, who could not tell whether the agitation of the water was occaſioned by the ſtream, or by the breaking of the waves againſt rocks or ſands. As we met with no ſhoal, it was concluded to be the former; but, in the end, we found ourſelves miſtaken. I now kept the Weſtern ſhore aboard, it appearing to be the ſafeſt. Near the ſhore we had a depth of thirteen fathoms; and two or three miles off, forty and upward. At eight in the evening, we anchored under a point of land which bore North Eaſt, three leagues diſtant, in fifteen fathoms water. Here we lay during the ebb, which run near five knots in the hour. 1778. May.

Until we got thus far, the water had retained the ſame degree of ſaltneſs at low, as at high-water; and, at both periods, was as ſalt as that in the ocean. But now the marks of a river diſplayed themſelves. The water taken up this ebb, when at the loweſt, was found to be very conſiderably freſher, than any we had hitherto taſted; inſomuch that I was convinced that we were in a large river, and not in a ſtrait, communicating with the Northern ſeas. But as we had proceeded thus far, I was deſirous of having ſtronger proofs; and, therefore, weighed with the next flood in the morning of the 31ſt, and plied higher up, or rather drove up with the tide; for we had but little wind. Sunday 31.

About eight o'clock, we were viſited by ſeveral of the natives, in one large, and ſeveral ſmall canoes. The latter carried only one perſon each; and ſome had a paddle with a blade at each end, after the manner of the Eſquimaux. In the large canoes were men, women, and children. Before they reached the ſhip, they diſplayed a leathern frock upon a long pole, as a ſign, as we underſtood it, of their peaceable intentions.

1778. May. intentions. This frock they conveyed into the ſhip, in return for ſome trifles which I gave them. I could obſerve no difference between the perſons, dreſs, ornaments, and boats of theſe people, and thoſe of Prince William's Sound, except that the ſmall canoes were rather of a leſs ſize, and carried only one man. We procured from them ſome of their fur dreſſes, made of the ſkins of ſea-otters, martins, hares, and other animals; a few of their darts; and a ſmall ſupply of ſalmon and halibut. In exchange for theſe they took old clothes, beads, and pieces of iron. We found that they were in poſſeſſion of large iron knives, and of ſky-blue glaſs beads, ſuch as we had found amongſt the natives of Prince William's Sound. Theſe latter they ſeemed to value much, and conſequently thoſe which we now gave them. But their inclination led them, eſpecially, to aſk for large pieces of iron; which metal, if I was not much miſtaken, they called by the name of *goone*; though, like their neighbours in Prince William's Sound, they ſeemed to have many ſignifications to one word. They evidently ſpoke the ſame language; as the words *keeta*, *naema*, *conaka*, and a few others of the moſt common we heard in that Sound, were alſo frequently uſed by this new tribe. After ſpending about two hours between the one ſhip and the other, they all retired to the Weſtern ſhore.

At nine o'clock, we came to an anchor, in ſixteen fathoms water, about two leagues from the Weſt ſhore, and found the ebb already begun. At its greateſt ſtrength, it ran only three knots in the hour, and fell, upon a perpendicular, after we had anchored, twenty-one feet. The weather was miſty, with drizling rain, and clear, by turns. At the clear intervals, we ſaw an opening between the mountains on the Eaſtern ſhore, bearing Eaſt from the ſtation of the ſhips, with

with low land, which we ſuppoſed to be iſlands lying between us and the main land. Low land was alſo ſeen to the Northward, that ſeemed to extend from the foot of the mountains on the one ſide, to thoſe on the other; and, at low water, we perceived large ſhoals ſtretching out from this low land; ſome of which were at no great diſtance from us. From theſe appearances, we were in ſome doubt whether the inlet did not take an Eaſterly direction, through the above opening; or whether that opening was only a branch of it, and the main channel continued its Northern direction through the low land now in ſight. The continuation and direction of the chain of mountains on each ſide of it, ſtrongly indicated the probability of the latter ſuppoſition. 1778. May.

To determine this point, and to examine the ſhoals, I diſpatched two boats, under the command of the maſter; and, as ſoon as the flood-tide made, followed with the ſhips: but, as it was a dead calm, and the tide ſtrong, I anchored, after driving about ten miles in an Eaſt direction. At the loweſt of the preceding ebb, the water at the ſurface, and for near a foot below it, was found to be perfectly freſh; retaining, however, a conſiderable degree of ſaltneſs at a greater depth. Beſides this, we had now many other, and but too evident, proofs of being in a great river. Such as low ſhores; very thick and muddy water; large trees, and all manner of dirt and rubbiſh, floating up and down with the tide. In the afternoon, the natives, in ſeveral canoes, paid us another viſit; and trafficked with our people for ſome time, without ever giving us reaſon to accuſe them of any act of diſhoneſty.

1778. June. Monday 1. At two o'clock next morning, being the 1ſt of June, the maſter returned, and reported that he found the inlet, or, rather, river, contracted to the breadth of one league, by low land on each ſide, through which it took a Northerly direction. He proceeded three leagues through this narrow part, which he found navigable for the largeſt ſhips, being from twenty to ſeventeen fathoms deep. The leaſt water, at a proper diſtance from the ſhore and ſhoals, was ten fathoms; and this was before he entered the narrow part. While the ebb or ſtream run down, the water was perfectly freſh; but, after the flood made, it became brackiſh; and, toward high water, very much ſo, even as high up as he went. He landed upon an iſland, which lies between this branch and the Eaſtern one; and upon it ſaw ſome currant buſhes, with the fruit already ſet; and ſome other fruit-trees and buſhes, unknown to him. The ſoil appeared to be clay, mixed with ſand. About three leagues beyond the extent of his ſearch, or to the Northward of it, he obſerved there was another ſeparation in the Eaſtern chain of mountains, through which he ſuppoſed the river took a North Eaſt direction; but it ſeemed rather more probable that this was only another branch, and that the main channel kept its Northern direction, between the two ridges or chains of mountains before mentioned. He found that theſe two ridges, as they extended to the North, inclined more and more to each other, but never appeared to cloſe; nor was any elevated land ſeen between them, only low land, part woody, and part clear.

All hopes of finding a paſſage were now given up. But as the ebb was almoſt ſpent, and we could not return againſt the flood, I thought I might as well take the advantage of the

the latter, to get a nearer view of the Eaſtern branch; and, by that means, finally to determine whether the low land on the Eaſt ſide of the river was an iſland, as we had ſuppoſed, or not. With this purpoſe in view, we weighed with the firſt of the flood, and, having a faint breeze at North Eaſt, ſtood over for the Eaſtern ſhore, with boats ahead, ſounding. Our depth was from twelve to five fathoms; the bottom a hard gravel, though the water was exceedingly muddy. At eight o'clock, a freſh breeze ſprung up at Eaſt, blowing in an oppoſite direction to our courſe; ſo that I deſpaired of reaching the entrance of the river, to which we were plying up, before high-water. But thinking that what the ſhips could not do, might be done by boats, I diſpatched two, under the command of Lieutenant King, to examine the tides, and to make ſuch other obſervations as might give us ſome inſight into the nature of the river. 1778. June.

At ten o'clock, finding the ebb begun, I anchored in nine fathoms water, over a gravelly bottom. Obſerving the tide to be too ſtrong for the boats to make head againſt it, I made a ſignal for them to return on board, before they had got half way to the entrance of the river they were ſent to examine, which bore from us South 80° Eaſt, three leagues diſtant. The principal information gained by this tide's work, was the determining that all the low land, which we had ſuppoſed to be an iſland or iſlands, was one continued tract, from the banks of the great river, to the foot of the mountains, to which it joined; and that it terminated at the South entrance of this Eaſtern branch, which I ſhall diſtinguiſh by the name of *River Turnagain*. On the North ſide of this river, the low land again begins, and ſtretches out from the foot of the mountains, down to the banks of the great river; ſo that, before the river Turnagain, it forms a

1778. June. large bay, on the South ſide of which we were now at anchor; and where we had from twelve to five fathoms, from half-flood to high-water.

After we had entered the bay, the flood ſet ſtrong into the river Turnagain; and ebb came out with ſtill greater force; the water falling, while we lay at anchor, twenty feet upon a perpendicular. Theſe circumſtances convinced me, that no paſſage was to be expected by this ſide river, any more than by the main branch. However, as the water during the ebb, though very conſiderably freſher, had ſtill a ſtrong degree of ſaltneſs, it is but reaſonable to ſuppoſe, that both theſe branches are navigable by ſhips, much farther than we examined them; and that by means of this river, and its ſeveral branches, a very extenſive inland communication lies open. We had traced it as high as the latitude of 61° 30′, and the longitude of 210°; which is ſeventy leagues, or more, from its entrance, without ſeeing the leaſt appearance of its ſource.

If the diſcovery of this great river *, which promiſes to vie with the moſt conſiderable ones already known to be capable of extenſive inland navigation, ſhould prove of uſe either to the preſent, or to any future age, the time we ſpent in it ought to be the leſs regretted. But to us, who had a much greater object in view, the delay thus occaſioned was an eſſential loſs. The ſeaſon was advancing apace. We knew not how far we might have to proceed to the South; and we were now convinced, that the continent of North America extended farther to the Weſt, than, from the mo-

* Captain Cook having here left a blank which he had not filled up with any particular name, Lord Sandwich directed, with the greateſt propriety, that it ſhould be called *Cook's River*.

dern

dern moſt reputable charts, we had reaſon to expect. This made the exiſtence of a paſſage into Baffin's or Hudſon's Bays leſs probable; or, at leaſt, ſhewed it to be of greater extent. It was a ſatisfaction to me, however, to reflect, that, if I had not examined this very conſiderable inlet, it would have been aſſumed, by ſpeculative fabricators of geography, as a fact, that it communicated with the ſea to the North, or with Baffin's or Hudſon's Bay to the Eaſt; and been marked, perhaps, on future maps of the world, with greater preciſion, and more certain ſigns of reality, than the inviſible, becauſe imaginary, Straits of de Fuca, and de Fonte. 1778. June.

In the afternoon, I ſent Mr. King again, with two armed boats, with orders to land, on the Northern point of the low land, on the South Eaſt ſide of the river; there to diſplay the flag; to take poſſeſſion of the country and river, in his Majeſty's name; and to bury in the ground a bottle, containing ſome pieces of Engliſh coin, of the year 1772, and a paper, on which was inſcribed the names of our ſhips, and the date of our diſcovery. In the mean time, the ſhips were got under ſail, in order to proceed down the river. The wind ſtill blue freſh, Eaſterly; but a calm enſued, not long after we were under way; and the flood-tide meeting us off the point where Mr. King landed (and which thence got the name of *Point Poſſeſſion*), we were obliged to drop anchor in ſix fathoms water, with the point bearing South, two miles diſtant.

When Mr. King returned, he informed me, that as he approached the ſhore, about twenty of the natives made their appearance, with their arms extended; probably, to expreſs thus their peaceable diſpoſition, and to ſhew that they were

1778. June. without weapons. On Mr. King's, and the gentlemen with him, landing, with muſquets in their hands, they ſeemed alarmed, and made ſigns expreſſive of their requeſt to lay them down. This was accordingly done; and then they ſuffered the gentlemen to walk up to them, and appeared to be cheerful and ſociable. They had with them a few pieces of freſh ſalmon, and ſeveral dogs. Mr. Law, ſurgeon of the Diſcovery, who was one of the party, having bought one of the latter, took it down toward the boat, and ſhot it dead, in their ſight. This ſeemed to ſurprize them exceedingly; and, as if they did not think themſelves ſafe in ſuch company, they walked away; but it was ſoon after diſcovered, that their ſpears, and other weapons, were hid in the buſhes cloſe behind them. Mr. King alſo informed me, that the ground was ſwampy, and the ſoil poor, light, and black. It produced a few trees and ſhrubs; ſuch as pines, alders, birch, and willows; roſe and currant buſhes; and a little graſs; but they ſaw not a ſingle plant in flower.

We weighed anchor, as ſoon as it was high water; and, with a faint breeze Southerly, ſtood over to the Weſt ſhore, where the return of the flood obliged us to anchor early next Tueſday 2. morning. Soon after, ſeveral large, and ſome ſmall canoes, with natives, came off, who bartered their ſkins; after which they ſold their garments, till many of them were quite naked. Amongſt others, they brought a number of white hair or rabbit ſkins; and very beautiful reddiſh ones of foxes; but there were only two or three ſkins of otters. They alſo ſold us ſome pieces of ſalmon and halibut. They preferred iron to every thing elſe offered to them in exchange. The lip-ornaments did not ſeem ſo frequent amongſt them, as at Prince William's Sound; but they had more of thoſe which paſs through the noſe, and, in general,

theſe

theſe were alſo much longer. They had, however, a greater quantity of a kind of white and red embroidered work on ſome parts of their garments, and on other things, ſuch as their quivers, and knife-caſes. 1778. June.

At half paſt ten, we weighed with the firſt of the ebb, and having a gentle breeze at South, plied down the river; in the doing of which, by the inattention and neglect of the man at the lead, the Reſolution ſtruck, and ſtuck faſt on a bank, that lies nearly in the middle of the river, and about two miles above the two projecting bluff points before mentioned. This bank was, no doubt, the occaſion of that very ſtrong rippling, or agitation of the ſtream, which we had obſerved when turning up the river. There was not leſs than twelve feet depth of water about the ſhip, at the loweſt of the ebb; but other parts of the bank were dry. As ſoon as the ſhip came aground, I made a ſignal for the Diſcovery to anchor. She, as I afterward underſtood, had been near aſhore on the Weſt ſide of the bank. As the flood-tide came in, the ſhip floated off, ſoon after five o'clock in the afternoon, without receiving the leaſt damage, or giving us any trouble; and, after ſtanding over to the Weſt ſhore, into deep water, we anchored to wait for the ebb, as the wind was ſtill contrary.

We weighed again with the ebb, at ten o'clock at night; and, between four and five next morning, when the tide was finiſhed, once more caſt anchor about two miles below the bluff point, on the Weſt ſhore, in nineteen fathoms water. A good many of the natives came off, when we were in this ſtation, and attended upon us all the morning. Their company was very acceptable; for they brought with them a large quantity of very fine ſalmon, which they exchanged for Wedneſ. 3.

1778. June. ſuch trifles as we had to give them. Moſt of it was ſplit ready for drying; and ſeveral hundred weight of it was procured for the two ſhips.

In the afternoon, the mountains, for the firſt time ſince our entering the river, were clear of clouds; and we diſcovered a volcano in one of thoſe on the Weſt ſide. It is in the latitude of 60° 23′; and is the firſt high mountain to the North of Mount St. Auguſtine. The volcano is on that ſide of it that is next the river, and not far from the ſummit. It did not now make any ſtriking appearance, emitting only a white ſmoke, but no fire.

Friday 5. The wind remaining Southerly, we continued to tide it down the river; and, on the 5th, in the morning, coming to the place where we had loſt our kedge-anchor, made an attempt to recover it, but without ſucceſs. Before we left this place, ſix canoes came off from the Eaſt ſhore; ſome conducted by one, and others by two men. They remained at a little diſtance from the ſhips, viewing them, with a kind of ſilent ſurprize, at leaſt half an hour, without exchanging a ſingle word with us, or with one another. At length, they took courage, and came along ſide; began to barter with our people; and did not leave us till they had parted with every thing they brought with them, conſiſting of a few ſkins and ſome ſalmon. And here it may not be improper to remark, that all the people we had met with in this river, ſeemed, by every ſtriking inſtance of reſemblance, to be of the ſame nation with thoſe who inhabit Prince William's Sound, but differing eſſentially from thoſe of Nootka, or King George's Sound, both in their perſons and language. The language of theſe is rather more gut-

tural;

tural; but, like the others, they ſpeak ſtrongly and diſtinct, in words which ſeem ſentences. 1778. June.

I have before obſerved, that they are in poſſeſſion of iron; that is, they have the points of their ſpears and knives of this metal; and ſome of the former are alſo made of copper. Their ſpears are like our ſpontoons; and their knives, which they keep in ſheaths, are of a conſiderable length. Theſe, with a few glaſs beads, are the only things we ſaw amongſt them that were not of their own manufacture. I have already offered my conjectures from whence they derive their foreign articles; and ſhall only add here, that, if it were probable that they found their way to them from ſuch of their neighbours with whom the Ruſſians may have eſtabliſhed a trade, I will be bold to ſay, the Ruſſians themſelves have never been amongſt them: for if that had been the caſe, we ſhould hardly have found them clothed in ſuch valuable ſkins as thoſe of the ſea-otter.

There is not the leaſt doubt, that a very beneficial fur trade might be carried on with the inhabitants of this vaſt coaſt. But unleſs a Northern paſſage ſhould be found practicable, it ſeems rather too remote for Great Britain to receive any emolument from it. It muſt, however, be obſerved, that the moſt valuable, or rather the only valuable ſkins, I ſaw on this Weſt ſide of America, were thoſe of the ſea-otter. All their other ſkins ſeemed to be of an inferior quality; particularly thoſe of their foxes and martins. It muſt alſo be obſerved, that moſt of the ſkins, which we purchaſed, were made up into garments. However, ſome of theſe were in good condition; but others were old and ragged enough; and all of them very louſy. But as theſe poor people make no other uſe of ſkins but for clothing themſelves,

1778. June. ſelves, it cannot be ſuppoſed that they are at the trouble of dreſſing more of them than are neceſſary for this purpoſe. And, perhaps, this is the chief uſe for which they kill the animals; for the ſea and the rivers ſeem to ſupply them with their principal articles of food. It would, probably, be much otherwiſe, were they once habituated to a conſtant trade with foreigners. This intercourſe would increaſe their wants, by introducing them to an acquaintance with new luxuries; and, in order to be enabled to purchaſe theſe, they would be more aſſiduous in procuring ſkins, which they would ſoon diſcover to be the commodity moſt ſought for; and a plentiful ſupply of which, I make no doubt, would be had in the country.

It will appear, from what has been ſaid occaſionally of the tide, that it is conſiderable in this river, and contributes very much to facilitate the navigation of it. It is high-water in the ſtream, on the days of the new and full moon, between two and three o'clock; and the tide riſes, upon a perpendicular, between three and four fathoms. The reaſon of the tide's being greater here, than at other parts of this coaſt, is eaſily accounted for. The mouth of the river being ſituated in a corner of the coaſt, the flood that comes from the ocean is forced into it by both ſhores, and by that means ſwells the tide to a great height. A view of the chart will illuſtrate this.

The variation of the compaſs was 25° 40′ Eaſt.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

Diſcoveries after leaving Cook's River.—Iſland of St. Hermogenes.—Cape Whitſunday.—Cape Greville.—Cape Barnabas.—Two-headed Point.—Trinity Iſland.—Beering's Foggy Iſland.—A beautiful bird deſcribed.—Kodiak and the Schumagin Iſlands.—A Ruſſian Letter brought on board by a Native.—Conjectures about it.—Rock Point.—Halibut Iſland.—A Volcano Mountain.—Providential Eſcape.—Arrival of the Ships at Oonalaſchka.—Intercourſe with the Natives there.—Another Ruſſian Letter.—Samganoodha Harbour deſcribed.

AS ſoon as the ebb tide made in our favour, we weighed, and, with a light breeze, between Weſt South Weſt, and South South Weſt, plied down the river, till the flood obliged us to anchor again. At length, about one o'clock, next morning, a freſh breeze ſprung up at Weſt, with which we got under ſail, and, at eight, paſſed the Barren Iſlands, and ſtretched away for Cape St. Hermogenes. At noon, this Cape bore South South Eaſt, eight leagues diſtant; and the paſſage between the iſland of that name, and the main land, bore South. For this paſſage I ſteered, intending to go through it. But ſoon after the wind failed us; and we had baffling light airs from the Eaſtward; ſo that I gave up my deſign of carrying the ſhips between the Iſland and the main.

1778. June. Friday 5. Saturday 6.

1778. June. At this time, we ſaw ſeveral columns of ſmoke, on the coaſt of the continent, to the Northward of the paſſage; and, moſt probably, they were meant as ſignals to attract us thither. Here the land forms a bay, or perhaps a harbour; off the North Weſt point of which lies a low, rocky iſland. There are alſo ſome other iſlands of the ſame appearance, ſcattered along the coaſt, between this place and Point Banks.

At eight in the evening, the iſland of St. Hermogenes extended from South half Eaſt, to South South Eaſt, a quarter Eaſt; and the rocks that lie on the North ſide of it bore South Eaſt, three miles diſtant. In this ſituation, we had forty fathoms water over a bottom of ſand and ſhells. Soon after, on putting over hooks and lines, we caught ſeveral halibut.

Sunday 7. At midnight, being paſt the rocks, we bore up to the Southward; and, at noon, St. Hermogenes bore North, four leagues diſtant. At this time, the Southernmoſt point of the main land, within or to the Weſtward of St. Hermogenes, lay North half Weſt, diſtant five leagues. This promontory, which is ſituated in the latitude of 58° 15′, and in the longitude of 207° 24′, was named, after the day, *Cape Whitſunday*. A large bay, which lies to the Weſt of it, obtained the name of *Whitſuntide Bay*. The land on the Eaſt ſide of this bay, of which Cape Whitſunday is the Southern point, and Point Banks the Northern one, is, in all reſpects, like the iſland of St. Hermogenes; ſeemingly deſtitute of wood, and partly free from ſnow. It was ſuppoſed to be covered with a moſſy ſubſtance, that gave it a browniſh caſt. There were ſome reaſons to think it was an iſland. If this be ſo, the laſt mentioned bay is only

the ſtrait or paſſage that ſeparates it from the main land. 1778. June.

Between one and two in the afternoon, the wind, which had been at North Eaſt, ſhifted at once to the Southward. It was unſettled till ſix, when it fixed at South, which was the very direction of our courſe; ſo that we were obliged to ply up the coaſt. The weather was gloomy, and the air dry, but cold. We ſtood to the Eaſtward till midnight; then tacked, and ſtood in for the land; and, between ſeven and eight in the morning of the 8th, we were within four miles of it, and not more than half a league from ſome ſunken rocks, which bore Weſt South Weſt. In this ſituation we tacked in thirty-five fathoms water, the iſland of St. Hermogenes bearing North, 20° Eaſt, and the Southernmoſt land in ſight, South. Monday 8.

In ſtanding in for this coaſt, we croſſed the mouth of Whitſuntide Bay, and ſaw land all round the bottom of it; ſo that either the land is connected, or elſe the points lock in, one behind another. I am more inclined to think, that the former is the caſe; and that the land, Eaſt of the bay, is a part of the continent. Some ſmall iſlands lie on the Weſt of the bay. The ſea-coaſt to the Southward of it is rather low, with projecting rocky points, between which are ſmall bays or inlets. There was no wood, and but little ſnow upon the coaſt; but the mountains, which lie at ſome diſtance inland, were wholly covered with the latter. We ſtood off till noon; then tacked, and ſtood in for the land. The latitude, at this time, was 57° 52½′; Cape St. Hermogenes bore North, 30° Weſt, eight leagues diſtant; and the Southernmoſt part of the coaſt in ſight, the ſame that was ſeen before, bore South Weſt, ten leagues diſtant. The land here forms a point, which was named *Cape Greville*. It lies in the

1778. June. the latitude of 57° 33′, and in the longitude of 207° 15′; and is diſtant fifteen leagues from Cape St. Hermogenes, in the direction of South, 17° Weſt.

Tueſday 9. Wedneſ. 10. Thurſday 11. The three following days we had almoſt conſtant miſty weather, with drizzling rain; ſo that we ſeldom had a ſight of the coaſt. The wind was South Eaſt by South, and South South Eaſt, a gentle breeze, and the air raw and cold. With this wind and weather, we continued to ply up the coaſt, making boards of ſix or eight leagues each. The depth of water was from thirty to fifty-five fathoms, over a coarſe, black ſandy bottom.

Friday 12. The fog clearing up, with the change of the wind to South Weſt, in the evening of the 12th, we had a ſight of the land bearing Weſt, twelve leagues diſtant. We ſtood in for it early next morning. At noon we were not above three miles from it; an elevated point, which obtained the name of *Cape Barnabas*, lying in the latitude of 57° 13′ bore North North Eaſt half Eaſt, ten miles diſtant; and the coaſt extended from North, 42° Eaſt, to Weſt South Weſt. The North Eaſt extreme was loſt in a haze; but the point to the South Weſt, whoſe elevated ſummit terminated in two round hills; on that account was called *Two headed Point*. This part of the coaſt, in which are ſeveral ſmall bays, is compoſed of high hills and deep vallies; and in ſome places we could ſee the tops of other hills, beyond thoſe that form the coaſt; which was but little incumbered with ſnow, but had a very barren appearance. Not a tree or buſh was to be ſeen upon it; and, in general, it had a browniſh hue, probably the effect of a moſſy covering.

I continued to ply to the South Weſt by Weſt, as the coaſt trended; and, at ſix in the evening, being midway between

Cape Barnabas and Two-headed Point, and two leagues from the ſhore, the depth of water was ſixty-two fathoms. From this ſtation, a low point of land made its appearance beyond Two-headed Point, bearing South, 69° Weſt; and, without it, other land that had the appearance of an iſland, bore South, 59° Weſt. 1778. June.

At noon, on the 13th, being in latitude 56° 49′, Cape St. Barnabas bore North, 52° Eaſt; Two-headed Point North, 14° Weſt, ſeven or eight miles diſtant; and the coaſt of the continent extended as far as South, 72½° Weſt; and the land ſeen the preceding evening, and ſuppoſed to be an iſland, now appeared like two iſlands. From whatever quarter Two-headed Point was viewed, it had the appearance of being an iſland; or elſe it is a peninſula, on each ſide of which the ſhore forms a bay. The wind ſtill continued Weſterly, a gentle breeze; the weather rather dull and cloudy, and the air ſharp and dry. Saturday 13.

We were well up with the Southernmoſt land next morning, and found it to be an iſland, which was named *Trinity Iſland*. Its greateſt extent is ſix leagues in the direction of Eaſt and Weſt. Each end is elevated naked land, and in the middle it is low; ſo that, at a diſtance, from ſome points of view, it aſſumes the appearance of two iſlands. It lies in the latitude of 56° 36′ and in the longitude of 205°; and between two and three leagues from the continent; which ſpace is interſperſed with ſmall iſlands and rocks; but there ſeemed to be good paſſage enough, and alſo ſafe anchorage. At firſt, we were inclined to think, that this was Beering's *Foggy Iſland**; but its ſituation ſo near the main does not ſuit his chart. Sunday 14.

* *Tumannoi-oſtrow*, c'eſt-à-dire, *L'iſle Nebuleuſe*. Muller, p. 261.

At

1778. June. At eight in the evening, we ſtood in for the land, till we were within a league of the above-mentioned ſmall iſlands. The Weſternmoſt part of the continent now in ſight, being a low point facing Trinity Iſland, and which we called *Cape Trinity*, now bore Weſt North Weſt. In this ſituation, having tacked in fifty-four fathoms water, over a bottom of black ſand, we ſtood over for the iſland, intending to work up between it and the main. The land to the Weſtward of Two-headed Point, is not ſo mountainous as it is to the North Eaſt of it, nor does ſo much ſnow lie upon it. There are, however, a good many hills conſiderably elevated; but they are diſjoined by large tracts of flat land that appeared to be perfectly deſtitute of wood, and very barren.

As we were ſtanding over toward the iſland, we met two men in a ſmall canoe, paddling from it to the main. Far from approaching us, they ſeemed rather to avoid it. The wind now began to incline to the South; and we had reaſon to expect, that it would ſoon be at South Eaſt. Experience having taught us, that a South Eaſterly wind was here generally, if not always, accompanied by a thick fog, I was afraid to venture through between the iſland and the continent, leſt the paſſage ſhould not be accompliſhed before night, or before the thick weather came on; when we ſhould be obliged to anchor, and, by that means, loſe the advantage of a fair wind. Theſe reaſons induced me to ſtretch out to ſea; and we paſſed two or three rocky iſlots that lie near the Eaſt end of Trinity Iſland. At four in the afternoon, having weathered the iſland, we tacked, and ſteered Weſt, Southerly, with a freſh gale at South South Eaſt; which, before midnight, veered to the South Eaſt; and was, as uſual, attended with miſty, drizzling, rainy weather.

By

By the courſe we ſteered all night, I was in hopes of falling in with the continent in the morning. And, doubtleſs, we ſhould have ſeen it, had the weather been, in the leaſt, clear; but the fog prevented. Seeing no land at noon, and the gale increaſing, with a thick fog and rain, I ſteered Weſt North Weſt, under ſuch ſail as we could eaſily haul the wind with; being fully ſenſible of the danger of running before a ſtrong gale in a thick fog, in the vicinity of an unknown coaſt. It was, however, neceſſary to run ſome riſk when the wind favoured us; for clear weather, we had found, was generally accompanied with winds from the Weſt. 1778. June. Monday 15.

Between two and three in the afternoon, land was ſeen through the fog, bearing North Weſt, not more than three or four miles diſtant. Upon this, we immediately hauled up South, cloſe to the wind. Soon after, the two courſes were ſplit, ſo that we had others to bring to the yards; and ſeveral others of our ſails received conſiderable damage. At nine, the gale abated; the weather cleared up; and we got ſight of the coaſt again, extending from Weſt by South to North Weſt, about four or five leagues diſtant. On ſounding, we found a hundred fathoms water, over a muddy bottom. Soon after, the fog returned, and we ſaw no more of the land all night.

At four next morning, the fog being now diſperſed, we found ourſelves in a manner ſurrounded by land; the continent, or what was ſuppoſed to be the continent, extending from Weſt South Weſt to North Eaſt by North; and ſome elevated land bearing South Eaſt half South; by eſtimation eight or nine leagues diſtant. The North Eaſt extreme of the main was the ſame point of land that we had fallen in Tueſday 16.

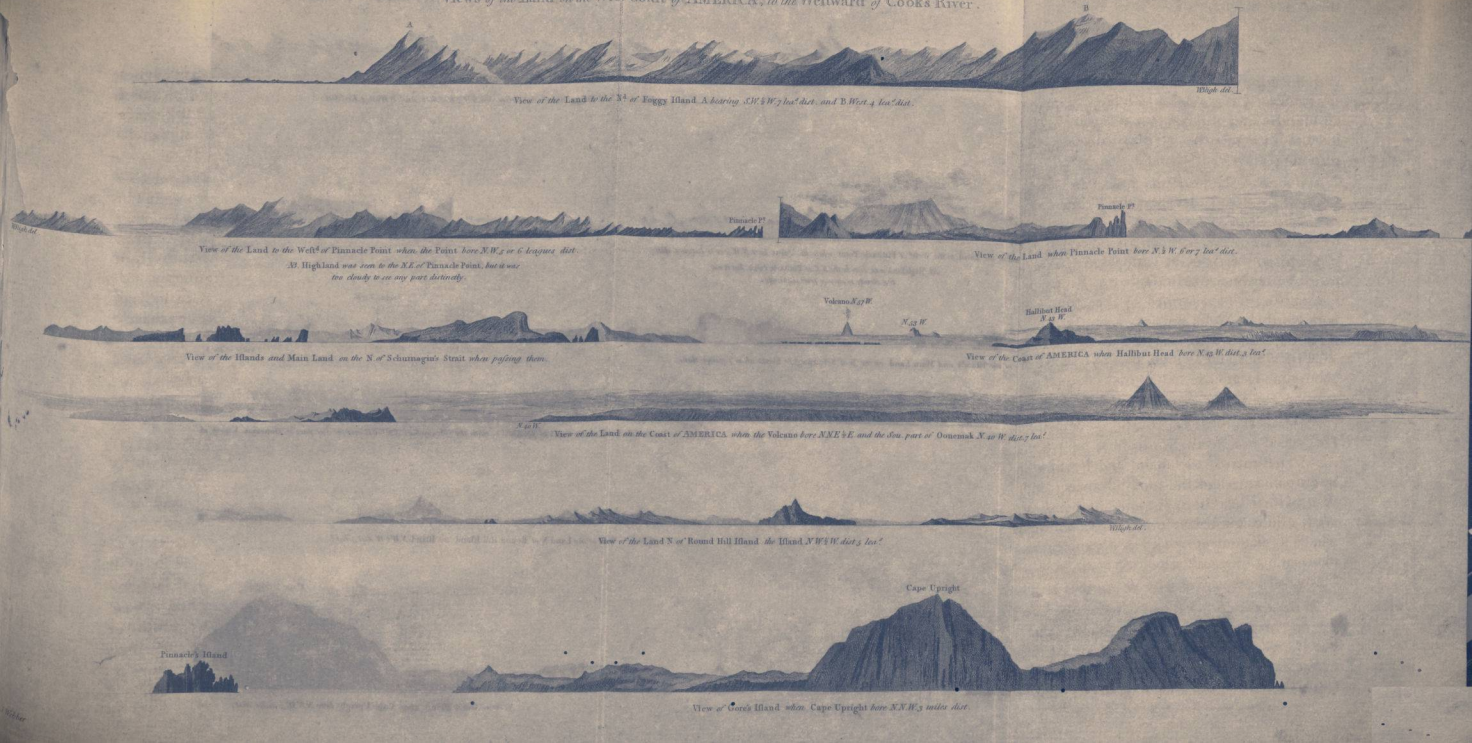
1778. June. with during the fog; and we named it *Foggy Cape*. It lies in latitude 56° 31′. At this time, having had but little wind all night, a breeze ſprung up at North Weſt. With this we ſtood to the Southward, to make the land, ſeen in that direction, plainer.

At nine o'clock, we found it to be an iſland of about nine leagues in compaſs; lying in the latitude of 56° 10′, and in the longitude of 202° 45′; and it is diſtinguiſhed in our chart by the name of *Foggy Iſland*; having reaſon to believe, from its ſituation, that it is the ſame which had that name given to it by Beering. At the ſame time, three or four iſlands, lying before a bay, formed by the coaſt of the main land, bore North by Weſt; a point, with three or four pinnacle rocks upon it, which was called *Pinnacle Point*, bore North Weſt by Weſt; and a cluſter of ſmall iſlots, or rocks, lying about nine leagues from the coaſt, South South Eaſt.

At noon, when our latitude was 56° 9′, and our longitude 201° 45′, theſe rocks bore South, 58° Eaſt, ten miles diſtant; Pinnacle Point, North North Weſt, diſtant ſeven leagues; the neareſt part of the main land North Weſt by Weſt, ſix leagues diſtant; and the moſt advanced land to the South Weſt, which had the appearance of being an iſland, bore Weſt, a little Southerly. In the afternoon, we had little or no wind; ſo that our progreſs was inconſiderable. At eight in the evening, the coaſt extended from South Weſt to North North Eaſt; the neareſt part about eight leagues diſtant.

Wedneſ. 17. On the 17th, the wind was between Weſt and North Weſt, a gentle breeze, and ſometimes almoſt calm. The weather was clear, and the air ſharp and dry. At noon, the continent extended from South Weſt to North by Eaſt; the neareſt part ſeven leagues diſtant. A large group of iſlands lying

Views of the Land on the West Coast of AMERICA, to the Westward of Cook's River.



View of the Land to the Nd of Foggy Island A bearing S.W.½W.7 leaf dist. and B West 4 leaf dist.

View of the Land to the Westd of Pinnacle Point when the Point bore N.W.5 or 6 leagues dist.

N.B. Highland was seen to the N.E. of Pinnacle Point, but it was too cloudy to see any part distinctly.

View of the Land when Pinnacle Point bore N.½W. 6 or 7 leaf dist.

View of the Islands and Main Land on the N. of Schumagin's Strait when passing them.

View of the Coast of AMERICA when Hallibut Head bore N.43 W. dist. 3 leaf.

View of the Land on the Coast of AMERICA when the Volcano bore N.N.E.½E. and the Sou. part of Oonemak N.40 W. dist. 7 leaf.

View of the Land N. of Round Hill Island the Island N.W.½W. dist. 5 leaf.

View of Gore's Island when Cape Upright bore N.N.W. 3 miles dist.

about the ſame diſtance from the continent, extended from South 26° Weſt, to South 52° Weſt. 1778. June.

It was calm great part of the 18th; and the weather was clear and pleaſant. We availed ourſelves of this, by making obſervations for the longitude and variation. The latter was found to be 21° 27′ Eaſt. There can be no doubt that there is a continuation of the continent between Trinity Iſland and Foggy Cape, which the thick weather prevented us from ſeeing. For ſome diſtance to the South Weſt of that Cape, this country is more broken or rugged than any part we had yet ſeen, both with reſpect to the hills themſelves, and to the coaſt, which ſeemed full of creeks, or ſmall inlets, none of which appeared to be of any great depth. Perhaps, upon a cloſer examination, ſome of the projecting points between theſe inlets will be found to be iſlands. Every part had a very barren aſpect; and was covered with ſnow, from the ſummits of the higheſt hills, down to a very ſmall diſtance from the ſea-coaſt. Thurſday 18.

Having occaſion to ſend a boat on board the Diſcovery, one of the people in her ſhot a very beautiful bird of the awk kind. It is ſomewhat leſs than a duck, and of a black colour, except the fore-part of the head, which is white; and from above and behind each eye ariſes an elegant yellowiſh-white creſt, revolved backward as a ram's horn. The bill and feet are red. It is, perhaps, the *alca monochroa* of Steller, mentioned in the Hiſtory of Kamtſchatka *. I think the firſt of theſe birds was ſeen by us, a little to the Southward of Cape St. Hermogenes. From that time, we generally ſaw ſome of them every day; and ſometimes in large

* P. 153. Eng. Tranſ.

1778. June. flocks. Beſides theſe, we daily ſaw moſt of the other ſea-birds, that are commonly found in other Northern oceans; ſuch as gulls, ſhags, puffins, ſheerwaters; and ſometimes ducks, geeſe, and ſwans. And ſeldom a day paſſed without ſeeing ſeals, whales, and other large fiſh.

In the afternoon, we got a light breeze of wind Southerly, which enabled us to ſteer Weſt, for the channel that appeared between the iſlands and the continent; and, at day break next morning, we were at no great diſtance from it, and found ſeveral other iſlands, within thoſe already ſeen by us, of various extent both in height and circuit. But between theſe laſt iſlands, and thoſe before ſeen, there ſeemed to be a clear channel, for which I ſteered, being afraid to keep the coaſt of the continent aboard; leſt we ſhould miſtake ſome point of it for an iſland, and, by that means, be drawn into ſome inlet, and loſe the advantage of the fair wind, which at this time blew.

Friday 19.

I therefore kept along the Southernmoſt chain of iſlands; and at noon we were in the latitude of 55° 18′, and in the narroweſt part of the channel, formed by them and thoſe which lie along the continent, where it is about a league and a half, or two leagues over. The largeſt iſland in this group was now on our left, and is diſtinguiſhed by the name of *Kodiak* *, according to the information we afterward received. I left the reſt of them without names. I believe them to be the ſame that Beering calls Schumagin's Iſlands †; or thoſe iſlands which he called by that name, to be a part of them; for this group is pretty extenſive. We

* See an Account of Kodiak, in Stæhlin's New Northern Archipelago, p. 30—39.

† See Muller's *Decouvertes dss Ruſſes*, p. 262—277.

ſaw

ſaw iſlands as far to the Southward as an iſland could be ſeen. They commence in the longitude of 200° 15′ Eaſt, and extend a degree and a half, or two degrees, to the Weſtward. I cannot be particular; as we could not diſtinguiſh all the iſlands from the coaſt of the continent. Moſt of theſe iſlands are of a good height, very barren and rugged; abounding with rocks and ſteep cliffs, and exhibiting other romantic appearances. There are ſeveral ſnug bays and coves about them; ſtreams of freſh water run from their elevated parts; ſome drift wood was floating around; but not a tree or buſh was to be ſeen growing on the land. A good deal of ſnow ſtill lay on many of them; and the parts of the continent, which ſhewed themſelves between the innermoſt iſlands, were quite covered with it. 1778. June.

At four in the afternoon, we had paſſed all the iſlands that lay to the Southward of us; the Southernmoſt, at this time, bearing South 3° Eaſt, and the Weſternmoſt point of land now in ſight, South 82° Weſt. For this point we ſteered, and paſſed between it and two or three elevated rocks that lie about a league to the Eaſt of it.

Some time after we had got through this channel, in which we found forty fathoms water, the Diſcovery, now two miles aſtern, fired three guns, and brought to, and made the ſignal to ſpeak with us. This alarmed me not a little; and as no apparent danger had been remarked in the paſſage through the channel, it was apprehended that ſome accident, ſuch as ſpringing a leak, muſt have happened. A boat was immediately ſent to her; and in a ſhort time returned with Captain Clerke. I now learned from him, that ſome natives, in three or four canoes, who had been following the ſhip for ſome time, at length got under his ſtern.

One

1778. June. One of them then made many ſigns, taking off his cap, and bowing, after the manner of Europeans. A rope being handed down from the ſhip, to this he faſtened a ſmall thin wooden caſe or box; and having delivered this ſafe, and ſpoken ſomething, and made ſome more ſigns, the canoes dropped aſtern, and left the Diſcovery. No one on board her had any ſuſpicion that the box contained any thing till after the departure of the canoes, when it was accidentally opened, and a piece of paper was found, folded up carefully, upon which ſomething was written in the Ruſſian language, as was ſuppoſed. The date 1778 was prefixed to it; and, in the body of the written note, there was a reference to the year 1776. Not learned enough to decypher the alphabet of the writer, his numerals marked ſufficiently that others had preceded us in viſiting this dreary part of the globe, who were united to us by other ties beſides thoſe of our common nature; and the hopes of ſoon meeting with ſome of the Ruſſian traders, could not but give a ſenſible ſatisfaction to thoſe who had, for ſuch a length of time, been converſant with the ſavages of the Pacific Ocean, and of the continent of North America.

Captain Clerke was, at firſt, of opinion, that ſome Ruſſians had been ſhipwrecked here; and that theſe unfortunate perſons, ſeeing our ſhips paſs, had taken this method to inform us of their ſituation. Impreſſed with humane ſentiments, on ſuch an occaſion, he was deſirous of our ſtopping till they might have time to join us. But no ſuch idea occurred to me. It ſeemed obvious, that if this had been the caſe, it would have been the firſt ſtep taken by ſuch ſhipwrecked perſons, in order to ſecure to themſelves, and to their companions, the relief they could not but be ſolicitous about, to ſend ſome of their body off to the ſhips in the canoes.

noes. For this reaſon, I rather thought that the paper contained a note of information, left by ſome Ruſſian trader, who had lately been amongſt theſe iſlands, to be delivered to the next of their countrymen who ſhould arrive; and that the natives, ſeeing our ſhips paſs, and ſuppoſing us to be Ruſſians, had reſolved to bring off the note, thinking it might induce us to ſtop. Fully convinced of this, I did not ſtay to inquire any farther into the matter; but made ſail, and ſtood away to the Weſtward, along the coaſt: perhaps I ſhould ſay along the iſlands; for we could not pronounce, with certainty, whether the neareſt land, within us, was continent or iſlands. If not the latter, the coaſt here forms ſome tolerably large and deep bays. 1778. June.

We continued to run all night with a gentle breeze at North Eaſt; and, at two o'clock next morning, ſome breakers were ſeen within us, at the diſtance of two miles. Two hours after, others were ſeen ahead; and, on our larboard bow, and between us and the land, they were innumerable. We did but juſt clear them, by holding a South courſe. Theſe breakers were occaſioned by rocks; ſome of which were above water. They extend ſeven leagues from the land; and are very dangerous, eſpecially in thick weather, to which this coaſt ſeems much ſubject. At noon, we had juſt got on their outſide; and, by obſervation, we were in the latitude of 54° 44′, and in the longitude of 198°. The neareſt land, being an elevated bluff point, which was called *Rock Point*, bore North, ſeven or eight leagues diſtant; the Weſternmoſt part of the main, or what was ſuppoſed to be the main, bore North 80° Weſt; and a round hill, without, which was found to be an iſland, and was called *Halibut-head*, bore South 65° Weſt, thirteen leagues diſtant. Saturday 20.

On

1778. June. On the 21ſt at noon, having made but little progreſs, on account of faint winds and calms, Halibut-head, which lies in the latitude of 54° 27′, and in the longitude of 197°, bore North 24° Weſt; and the iſland on which it is, and called *Halibut Iſland*, extended from North by Eaſt, to North Weſt by Weſt, two leagues diſtant. This iſland is ſeven or eight leagues in circuit; and, except the head, the land of it is low and very barren. There are ſeveral ſmall iſlands near it, all of the ſame appearance; but there ſeemed to be a paſſage between them and the main, two or three leagues broad.

The rocks and breakers, before mentioned, forced us ſo far from the continent, that we had but a diſtant view of the coaſt between Rock Point and Halibut Iſland. Over this and the adjoining iſlands we could ſee the main land covered with ſnow; but, particularly, ſome hills, whoſe elevated tops were ſeen, towering above the clouds, to a moſt ſtupendous height. The moſt South Weſterly of theſe hills was diſcovered to have a *volcano*, which continually threw up vaſt columns of black ſmoke. It ſtands not far from the coaſt; and in the latitude of 54° 48′, and the longitude of 195° 45′. It is alſo remarkable, from its figure, which is a complete cone; and the *volcano* is at the very ſummit. We ſeldom ſaw this (or indeed any other of theſe mountains) wholly clear of clouds. At times, both baſe and ſummit would be clear; when a narrow cloud, ſometimes two or three, one above another, would embrace the middle, like a girdle; which, with the column of ſmoke, riſing perpendicular to a great height out of its top, and ſpreading before the wind into a tail of vaſt length, made a very pictureſque appearance. It may be worth remarking, that the wind, at the height to which the ſmoke of this

volcano reached, moved ſometimes in a direction contrary to what it did at ſea, even when it blew a freſh gale. 1778. June.

In the afternoon, having three hours calm, our people caught upward of a hundred halibuts, ſome of which weighed a hundred pounds, and none leſs than twenty pounds. This was a very ſeaſonable refreſhment to us. In the height of our fiſhing, which was in thirty-five fathoms water, and three or four miles from the ſhore, a ſmall canoe, conducted by one man, came to us from the large iſland. On approaching the ſhip, he took off his cap, and bowed, as the other had done, who viſited the Diſcovery the preceding day. It was evident, that the Ruſſians muſt have a communication and traffic with theſe people; not only from their acquired politeneſs, but from the note before mentioned. But we had now a freſh proof of it; for our preſent viſiter wore a pair of green cloth breeches, and a jacket of black cloth, or ſtuff, under the gut-ſhirt or frock of his own country. He had nothing to barter, except a grey fox ſkin, and ſome fiſhing implements or harpoons; the heads of the ſhafts of which, for the length of a foot, or more, were neatly made of bone, as thick as a walking-cane, and carved. He had with him a bladder, full of ſomething, which we ſuppoſed to be oil; for he opened it, took a mouthful, and then faſtened it again.

His canoe was of the ſame make with thoſe we had ſeen before; but rather ſmaller. He uſed the double-bladed paddle, as did alſo thoſe who had viſited the Diſcovery In his ſize and features, he exactly reſembled thoſe we ſaw in Prince William's Sound, and in the Great River; but he was quite free from paint of any kind; and had the perforation of his lip made in an oblique direction, without any orna-

1778. June. ment in it. He did not ſeem to underſtand any of the words commonly uſed by our viſiters in the Sound, when repeated to him. But, perhaps, our faulty pronunciation, rather than his ignorance of the dialect, may be inferred from this.

The weather was cloudy and hazy, with, now and then,
Monday 22. ſunſhine, till the afternoon of the 22d, when the wind came round to the South Eaſt, and, as uſual, brought thick rainy weather. Before the fog came on, no part of the main land was in ſight, except the *volcano*, and another mountain cloſe by it. I continued to ſteer Weſt till ſeven in the evening, when, being apprehenſive of falling in with the land in thick weather, we hauled the wind to the Southward, till
Tueſday 23. two o'clock next morning, and then bore away again Weſt. We made but little progreſs, having the wind variable, and but little of it, till at laſt it fixed in the Weſtern board, and at five in the afternoon, having a gleam of ſunſhine, we ſaw land bearing North 59° Weſt, appearing in hillocks like iſlands.

Wedneſ. 24. At ſix in the morning of the 24th, we got a ſight of the continent; and at nine it was ſeen extending from North Eaſt by Eaſt, to South Weſt by Weſt, half Weſt; the neareſt part about four leagues diſtant. The land to the South Weſt proved to be iſlands; the ſame that had been ſeen the preceding evening. But the other was a continuation of the continent, without any iſlands to obſtruct our view of it. In the evening, being about four leagues from the ſhore, in forty-two fathoms water, having little or no wind, we had recourſe to our hooks and lines; but only two or three ſmall cod were caught.

The

The next morning we got a breeze Eaſterly; and, what was uncommon, with this wind, clear weather; ſo that we not only ſaw the *volcano*, but other mountains, both to the Eaſt and Weſt of it, and all the coaſt of the main land under them, much plainer than at any time before. It extended from North Eaſt by North, to North Weſt half Weſt, where it ſeemed to terminate. Between this point and the iſlands without it, there appeared a large opening, for which I ſteered, till we raiſed land beyond it. This land, although we did not perceive that it joined the continent, made a paſſage through the opening very doubtful. It alſo made it doubtful, whether the land which we ſaw to the South Weſt, was inſular or continental; and, if the latter, it was obvious that the opening would be a deep bay or inlet, from which, if once we entered it with an Eaſterly wind, it would not be ſo eaſy to get out. Not caring, therefore, to truſt too much to appearances, I ſteered to the Southward. Having thus got without all the land in ſight, I then ſteered Weſt, in which direction the iſlands lay; for ſuch we found this land to be. 1778. June. Thurſday 25.

By eight o'clock we had paſſed three of them, all of a good height. More of them were now ſeen to the Weſtward; the South Weſternmoſt part of them bearing Weſt North Weſt. The weather, in the afternoon, became gloomy, and at length turned to a miſt; and the wind blew freſh at Eaſt. I therefore, at ten at night, hauled the wind to the Southward till day-break, when we reſumed our courſe to the Weſt. Friday 26.

Day-light availed us little; for the weather was ſo thick, that we could not ſee a hundred yards before us; but as the wind was now moderate, I ventured to run. At half

1778. June. paſt four, we were alarmed at hearing the ſound of breakers on our larboard bow. On heaving the lead, we found twenty-eight fathoms water; and the next caſt, twenty-five. I immediately brought the ſhip to, with her head to the Northward, and anchored in this laſt depth, over a bottom of coarſe ſand; calling, the Diſcovery, ſhe being cloſe by us, to anchor alſo.

A few hours after, the fog having cleared away a little, it appeared that we had eſcaped very imminent danger. We found ourſelves three quarters of a mile from the North Eaſt ſide of an iſland, which extended from South by Weſt half Weſt, to North by Eaſt half Eaſt, each extreme about a league diſtant. Two elevated rocks, the one bearing South by Eaſt, and the other Eaſt by South, were about half a league each from us, and about the ſame diſtance from each other. There were ſeveral breakers about them; and yet Providence had, in the dark, conducted the ſhips through, between theſe rocks, which I ſhould not have ventured in a clear day, and to ſuch an anchoring-place, that I could not have choſen a better.

Finding ourſelves ſo near land, I ſent a boat to examine what it produced. In the afternoon ſhe returned; and the officer, who commanded her, reported, that it produced ſome tolerably good graſs, and ſeveral other ſmall plants; one of which was like purſlain, and eat very well, either in ſoups, or as a ſallad. There was no appearance of ſhrubs or trees; but on the beach were a few pieces of drift-wood. It was judged to be low-water between ten and eleven o'clock; and we found, where we lay at anchor, that the flood-tide came from the Eaſt or South Eaſt.

In

In the night, the wind blew freſh at South; but was more moderate toward the morning, and the fog partly diſperſed. Having weighed at ſeven o'clock, we ſteered to the Northward, between the iſland under which we had anchored, and another ſmall one near it. The channel is not above a mile broad; and before we were through it, the wind failed, and we were obliged to anchor in thirty-four fathoms water. We had now land in every direction. That to the South, extended to the South Weſt, in a ridge of mountains; but our ſight could not determine whether it compoſed one or more iſlands. We afterward found it to be only one iſland, and known by the name of *Oonalaſhka*. Between it, and the land to the North, which had the appearance of being a group of iſlands, there ſeemed to be a channel, in the direction of North Weſt by North. On a point, which bore Weſt from the ſhip, three quarters of a mile diſtant, were ſeveral natives, and their habitations. To this place we ſaw them tow in two whales, which we ſuppoſed they had juſt killed. A few of them, now and then, came off to the ſhips, and bartered a few trifling things with our people; but never remained above a quarter of an hour at a time. On the contrary, they rather ſeemed ſhy; and yet, we could judge that they were no ſtrangers to veſſels, in ſome degree, like ours. They behaved with a degree of politeneſs uncommon to ſavage tribes.

1778. June. Saturday 27.

At one o'clock in the afternoon, having a light breeze at North Eaſt, and the tide of flood in our favour, we weighed, and ſteered for the channel above mentioned, in hopes, after we were through, of finding the land trend away to the Northward, or, at leaſt, a paſſage out to ſea, to the Weſt. For we ſuppoſed ourſelves, as it really happened, to be amongſt iſlands, and not in an inlet of the continent.

We

1778. June. We had not been long under ſail, before the wind veered to the North, which obliged us to ply. The ſoundings were from forty to twenty-ſeven fathoms, over a bottom of ſand and mud. In the evening, the ebb making againſt us, we anchored about three leagues from our laſt ſtation, with the paſſage bearing North Weſt.

Sunday 28. At day-break, the next morning, we weighed, with a light breeze at South, which carried us up to the paſſage, when it was ſucceeded by variable light airs from all directions. But as there run a rapid tide in our favour, the Reſolution got through before the ebb made. The Diſcovery was not ſo fortunate. She was carried back, got into the race; and had ſome trouble to get clear of it. As ſoon as we were through, the land, on one ſide, was found to trend Weſt and South Weſt; and that on the other ſide to trend North. This gave us great reaſon to hope, that the continent had here taken a new direction, which was much in our favour. Being in want of water, and perceiving that we run ſome riſk of driving about in a rapid tide, without wind to govern the ſhip, I ſtood for a harbour, lying on the South ſide of the paſſage; but we were very ſoon driven paſt it; and, to prevent being forced back through the paſſage, came to an anchor in twenty eight fathoms water, pretty near the Southern ſhore, out of the reach of the ſtrong tide. And yet, even here, we found it to run full five knots and an half in the hour.

While we lay here, ſeveral of the natives came off to us, each in a canoe; and bartered a few fiſhing implements for tobacco. One of them, a young man, overſet his canoe, while along-ſide of one of our boats. Our people caught

caught hold of him; but the canoe went adrift, and, being picked up by another, was carried aſhore. The youth, by this accident, was obliged to come into the ſhip; and he went down into my cabin, upon the firſt invitation, without expreſſing the leaſt reluctance, or uneaſineſs. His dreſs was an upper garment, like a ſhirt, made of the large gut of ſome ſea-animal, probably the whale; and an under garment of the ſame ſhape, made of the ſkins of birds, dreſſed with the feathers on, and neatly ſewed together; the feathered ſide being worn next his ſkin. It was mended, or patched, with pieces of ſilk-ſtuff; and his cap was ornamented with two or three ſorts of glaſs beads. His own clothes being wet, I gave him others, in which he dreſſed himſelf, with as much eaſe as I could have done. From his behaviour, and that of ſome others, we were convinced that theſe people were no ſtrangers to Europeans, and to ſome of their cuſtoms. But there was ſomething in our ſhips that greatly excited their curioſity; for ſuch as could not come off in canoes, aſſembled on the neighbouring hills to look at them. 1778. June.

At low water, having weighed and towed the ſhip into the harbour, we anchored there in nine fathoms water, over a bottom of ſand and mud. The Diſcovery got in ſoon after. A launch was now ſent for water; and a boat to draw the ſeine; but we caught only four trout, and a few other ſmall fiſh.

Soon after we anchored, a native of the iſland brought on board ſuch another note as had been given to Captain Clerke. He preſented it to me; but it was written in the Ruſſian language, which, as already obſerv-

1778. June. ed, none of us could read. As it could be of no uſe to me, and might be of conſequence to others, I returned it to the bearer, and diſmiſſed him with a few preſents; for which he expreſſed his thanks, by making ſeveral low bows as he retired.

Monday 29. In walking, next day, along the ſhore, I met with a group of natives of both ſexes, ſeated on the graſs, at a repaſt, conſiſting of raw fiſh, which they ſeemed to eat with as much reliſh as we ſhould a turbot, ſerved up with the richeſt ſauce. By the evening we had completed our water, and made ſuch obſervations as the time and weather would permit. I have taken notice of the rapidity of the tide without the harbour; but it was inconſiderable within. It was low water at noon; and high water at half paſt ſix in the evening; and the water roſe, upon a perpendicular, three feet four inches; but there were marks of its ſometimes riſing a foot higher.

July. Thurſday 2. Thick fogs, and a contrary wind, detained us till the 2d of July; which afforded an opportunity of acquiring ſome knowledge of the country, and of its inhabitants. The reſult of our obſervations will be mentioned in another place. At preſent, I ſhall only deſcribe the harbour.

It is called, by the natives, *Samganoodha*; and is ſituated on the North ſide of Oonalaſhka, in the latitude of 53° 55′, in the longitude of 193° 30′; and in the ſtrait, or paſſage, that ſeparates this iſland from thoſe that lie to the North of it, and whoſe poſition before the harbour ſhelters it from the winds that blow from that quarter. It runs in, South by Weſt, about four miles, and is about a

LIBRARY OF THE BOMBAY BRANCH OF THE ASIATIC SOCIETY

mile broad at the entrance; narrowing toward the head, where its breadth is not above a quarter of a mile, and where ſhips can lie land-locked, in ſeven, ſix, and four fathoms water. Great plenty of good water may be eaſily got; but not a ſingle ſtick of wood of any ſize. 1778. July.

CHAP. VIII.

Progreſs Northward, after leaving Oonalaſhka.—The Iſlands Oonella and Acootan.—Ooneemak.—Shallowneſs of the Water along the Coaſt.—Briſtol Bay.—Round Iſland.—Calm Point.—Cape Newenham.—Lieutenant Williamſon lands, and his Report.—Briſtol Bay, and its Extent.—The Ships obliged to return, on account of Shoals.—Natives come off to the Ships.—Death of Mr. Anderſon; his Character; and Iſland named after him.—Point Rodney.—Sledge Iſland, and Remarks on landing there.—King's Iſland.—Cape Prince of Wales, the Weſtern Extreme of America.—Courſe Weſtward.—Anchor in a Bay on the Coaſt of Aſia.

1778. July. Thurſday 2. HAVING put to ſea with a light breeze, at South South Eaſt, we ſteered to the North, meeting with nothing to obſtruct us in this courſe. For, as I obſerved before, the Iſland of Oonalaſhka, on the one ſide, trended South Weſt; and, on the other, no land was to be ſeen in a direction more Northerly than North Eaſt; the whole of which land was a continuation of the ſame group of iſlands which we had fallen in with on the 25th of June. That which lies before Samganoodha, and forms the North Eaſt ſide of the paſſage through which we came, is called *Oonella*, and is about ſeven leagues in circumference. Another iſland, to the North Eaſt of it, is called *Acootan*, which is conſiderably larger than Oonella, and hath in it ſome very high moun-

tains, which were covered with ſnow. It appeared, that we might have gone very ſafely between theſe two iſlands and the continent, the South Weſt point of which opened off the North Eaſt point of Acootan, in the direction of North, 60° Eaſt; and which proved to be the ſame point of land we had ſeen when we quitted the coaſt of the continent, on the 25th of June, to go without the iſlands. It is called by the people of theſe parts *Oonemak*, and lies in the latitude of 54° 30′, and in the longitude of 192° 30′. Over the cape, which, of itſelf, is high land, is a round elevated mountain, at this time entirely covered with ſnow. 1778. July.

At ſix in the evening, this mountain bore Eaſt, 2° North; and at eight we had no land in ſight. Concluding, therefore, that the coaſt of the continent had now taken a North Eaſterly direction, I ventured to ſteer the ſame courſe, till one o'clock next morning, when the watch on deck thought they ſaw land ahead. Upon this we wore, and ſtood to the South Weſt for two hours, and then reſumed our courſe to the Eaſt North Eaſt. Friday 3.

At ſix o'clock, land was ſeen ahead, bearing South Eaſt, about five leagues diſtant. As we advanced, we raiſed more and more land, all connected, and ſeemingly in the direction of our courſe. At noon, it extended from South South Weſt to Eaſt; the neareſt part five or ſix leagues diſtant. Our latitude, at this time, was 55° 21′, and our longitude 195° 18′. This coaſt is on the North Weſt ſide of the *volcano* mountain; ſo that we muſt have ſeen it, if the weather had been tolerably clear.

At ſix in the evening, after having run eight leagues upon an Eaſt by North courſe from noon, we ſounded, and

1778. July. found forty-eight fathoms, over a bottom of black ſand. Being at this time four leagues from the land, the Eaſtern part in ſight bore Eaſt South Eaſt, and appeared as a high round hummock, ſeemingly detached from the main.

Having continued to ſteer Eaſt North Eaſt all night, at Saturday 4. eight in the morning of the 4th, the coaſt was ſeen from South South Weſt, and Eaſt by South; and at times we could ſee high land, covered with ſnow, behind it. Soon after, it fell calm, and being in thirty fathoms water, we put over hooks and lines, and caught a good number of fine cod-fiſh. At noon, having now a breeze from the Eaſt, and the weather being clear, we found ourſelves ſix leagues from the land, which extended from South by Weſt to Eaſt by South. The hummock, ſeen the preceding evening, bore South Weſt by South, ten leagues diſtant. Our latitude was now 55° 50′, and our longitude 197° 3′. A great hollow ſwell from Weſt South Weſt, aſſured us, that there was no main land near, in that direction. I ſtood to the North till ſix in the afternoon, when the wind having veered to South Eaſt, enabled us to ſteer Eaſt North Eaſt. The coaſt lay in this Sunday 5. direction, and, at noon the next day, was about four leagues diſtant.

Monday 6. Tueſday 7. On the 6th and 7th, the wind being Northerly, we made but little progreſs. At eight in the evening of the latter, we were in nineteen fathoms water, and about three or four Wedneſ. 8. leagues from the coaſt, which, on the 8th, extended from South South Weſt to Eaſt by North, and was all low land, with a ridge of mountains behind it, covered with ſnow. It is probable, that this low coaſt extends, ſome diſtance, to the South Weſt; and that ſuch places as we ſometimes took for inlets or bays, are only vallies between the mountains.

On the morning of the 9th, with a breeze at North Weſt, we ſteered Eaſt by North, to get nearer the coaſt. At noon, we were in the latitude of 57° 49′, and in the longitude of 201° 33′, and about two leagues from the land, which extended from South by Eaſt to Eaſt North Eaſt; being all a low coaſt, with points ſhooting out in ſome places, which, from the deck, appeared like iſlands; but, from the maſt-head, low land was ſeen to connect them. In this ſituation, the depth of water was fifteen fathoms, the bottom a fine black ſand. 1778. July. Thurſday 9.

As we had advanced to the North Eaſt, we had found the depth of water gradually decreaſing, and the coaſt trending more and more Northerly. But the ridge of mountains behind it, continued to lie in the ſame direction as thoſe more Weſterly; ſo that the extent of the low land, between the foot of the mountains and the ſea coaſt, inſenſibly increaſed. Both high and low grounds were perfectly deſtitute of wood; but ſeemed to be covered with a green turf, except the mountains, which were covered with ſnow. Continuing to ſteer along the coaſt, with a gentle breeze Weſterly, the water gradually ſhoaled from fifteen to ten fathoms, though we were at the diſtance of eight or ten miles from the ſhore. At eight in the evening, an elevated mountain, which had been in ſight for ſome time, bore South Eaſt by Eaſt, twenty-one leagues diſtant. Some other mountains, belonging to the ſame chain, and much farther diſtant, bore Eaſt 3° North. The coaſt extended as far as North Eaſt half North, where it ſeemed to terminate in a point, beyond which we hoped and expected, that it would take a more Eaſterly direction. But ſoon after, we diſcovered low land, extending from behind this point, as far as North

Weſt

1778. July. Weſt by Weſt, where it was loſt in the horizon; and behind it was high land, that appeared in detached hills.

Thus the fine proſpect we had of getting to the North vaniſhed in a moment. I ſtood on till nine o'clock, for ſo long it was light, and then the point above mentioned, bore North Eaſt half Eaſt, about three miles diſtant. Behind this point is a river, the entrance of which ſeemed to be a mile broad; but I can ſay nothing as to its depth. The water appeared diſcoloured, as upon ſhoals, but a calm would have given it the ſame aſpect. It ſeemed to have a winding direction, through the great flat that lies between the chain of mountains to the South Eaſt, and the hills to the North Weſt. It muſt abound with ſalmon, as we ſaw many leaping in the ſea before the entrance; and ſome were found in the maws of cod which we had caught. The entrance of this river, diſtinguiſhed by the name of *Briſtol River*, lies in the latitude of 58° 27′, and in the longitude of 201° 55′.

Friday 10. Having ſpent the night in making ſhort boards; at day-break on the morning of the 10th, we made ſail to the Weſt South Weſt, with a gentle breeze at North Eaſt. At eleven o'clock, we thought the coaſt to the North Weſt terminated in a point, bearing North Weſt by Weſt; and as we had now deepened the water from nine to fourteen fathoms, I ſteered for the point, ordering the Diſcovery to keep ahead. But before ſhe had run a mile, ſhe made a ſignal for ſhoal water. At that inſtant, we had the depth of ſeven fathoms; and before we could get the ſhip's head the other way, had leſs than five; but the Diſcovery had leſs than four.

We ſtood back to the North Eaſt, three or four miles; but finding there was a ſtrong tide or current ſetting to the Weſt South Weſt, that is toward the ſhoal, we anchored in ten fathoms,

fathoms, over a bottom of fine ſand. Two hours after we had anchored, the water had fallen two feet and upward; which proved, that it was the tide of ebb that came from the river above mentioned. We alſo examined ſome of the water which we had taken up, and found that it was not half ſo ſalt as common ſea water. This furniſhed another proof, that we were before a large river. 1778. July.

At four in the afternoon, the wind ſhifting to South Weſt, we weighed and ſtood to the Southward, with boats ahead ſounding; and paſſed over the South end of the ſhoal, in ſix fathoms water. We then got into thirteen and fifteen; in which laſt depth we anchored, at half paſt eight; ſome part of the chain of mountains, on the South Eaſt ſhore, in ſight, bearing South Eaſt half South; and the Weſternmoſt land on the other ſhore, North Weſt. We had, in the courſe of the day, ſeen high land, bearing North, 60° Weſt, by eſtimation twelve leagues diſtant.

Having weighed next morning, at two o'clock, with a light breeze at South Weſt by Weſt, we plied to windward till nine; when judging the flood tide to be now made againſt us, we came to an anchor in twenty-four fathoms. We lay here till one, when the fog, which had prevailed this morning, diſperſing, and the tide making in our favour, we weighed and plied to the South Weſt. In the evening, the wind was very variable, and we had ſome thunder. We had heard none before, ſince our arrival upon the coaſt; and this was at a great diſtance. Saturday 11.

The wind having ſettled again in the South Weſt quarter, in the morning of the 12th, we ſtood to the North Weſt, and at ten ſaw the continent. At noon, it extended from North Eaſt by North, to North North Weſt a quarter Weſt; and an elevated Sunday 12.

1778. July. elevated hill bore North North Weſt, ten leagues diſtant This proved to be an iſland, which, from its figure, obtained the name of *Round Iſland*. It lies in the latitude of 58° 37′, and in the longitude of 200° 6′, and ſeven miles from the continent. In the evening at nine, having ſtood to the Northward to within three leagues of the ſhore, we tacked in fourteen fathoms water; the extremes of the coaſt bearing Eaſt South Eaſt half Eaſt, and Weſt. The wind veering to the North Weſt, enabled us to make a good ſtretch along
Monday 13. ſhore, till two o'clock in the morning, when we got all at once into ſix fathoms water, being at this time two leagues from the ſhore. After edging off a little, our depth gradually increaſed, and at noon we had twenty fathoms, when the latitude was 58° 13′, and the longitude 199°. Round Iſland bore North, 5° Eaſt; and the Weſt extreme of the coaſt North, 16° Weſt, ſeven leagues diſtant. It is an elevated point, which obtained the name of *Calm Point*, from our having calm weather when off it. To the North Weſt of Round Iſland are two or three hillocks, that appeared like iſlands; and it is poſſible they may be ſuch; for we had but a diſtant view of the coaſt in this place.

Tueſday 14. Wedneſ. 15. During the 14th and 15th, our progreſs was ſlow, having little wind, and ſometimes ſo thick a fog, that we could not ſee the length of the ſhip. The ſoundings were from fourteen to twenty-ſix fathoms; and we had tolerable ſucceſs in fiſhing, catching cod, and now and then a few
Thurſday 16. flat fiſh. At five in the morning of the 16th, the fog having cleared up, we found ourſelves nearer the land than we expected. Calm Point bore North, 72° Eaſt, and a point eight leagues from it, in the direction of Weſt, bore North, 3° Eaſt, three miles diſtant. Between theſe two points, the coaſt forms a bay, in ſome parts of which the land was hardly

hardly viſible from the maſt head. There is alſo a bay on the North Weſt ſide of this laſt point, between it and an elevated promontory, which, at this time, bore North, 36° Weſt, ſixteen miles diſtant. At nine, I ſent Lieutenant Williamſon to this promontory, with orders to land, and ſee what direction the coaſt took beyond it, and what the country produced; for, from the ſhips, it had but a barren appearance. We found here the flood-tide ſetting ſtrongly to the North Weſt along the coaſt. At noon it was high-water, and we anchored in twenty-four fathoms, four leagues diſtant from the ſhore. At five in the afternoon, the tide making in our favour, we weighed, and drove with it; for there was no wind. 1778. July.

Soon after Mr. Williamſon returned, and reported, that he had landed on the point, and, having climbed the higheſt hill, found, that the fartheſt part of the coaſt in ſight bore nearly North. He took poſſeſſion of the country in his Majeſty's name, and left on the hill a bottle, in which was inſcribed, on a piece of paper, the names of the ſhips, and the date of the diſcovery. The promontory, to which he gave the name of *Cape Newenham*, is a rocky point, of tolerable height, ſituated in the latitude of 58° 42′, and in the longitude of 197° 36′. Over, or within it, are two elevated hills, riſing one behind the other. The innermoſt, or Eaſternmoſt, is the higheſt. The country, as far as Mr. Williamſon could ſee, produces neither tree nor ſhrub. The hills are naked; but on the lower grounds grew graſs, and other plants, very few of which were in flower. He ſaw no other animal but a doe and her fawn; and a dead ſea-horſe, or cow, upon the beach. Of theſe animals we had lately ſeen a great many.

1778. July. As the coaſt takes a Northerly direction from Cape Newenham, that Cape fixes the Northern limit of the great bay and gulph, lying before the river Briſtol, which, in honour of the admiral Earl of Briſtol, was named *Briſtol Bay*. Cape *Ooneemak* is the South limit of this bay; and is diſtant eighty-two leagues from Cape Newenham, in the direction of South South Weſt.

About eight in the evening, a light breeze ſpringing up, which fixed at South South Eaſt, we ſteered North Weſt, and North North Weſt, round Cape Newenham, which, at
Friday 17. noon next day, bore South by Eaſt, diſtant four leagues. At this time the moſt advanced land to the Northward bore North, 30° Eaſt; our depth of water was ſeventeen fathoms; and the neareſt ſhore $3\frac{1}{2}$ leagues diſtant. We had but little wind all the afternoon; ſo that, at ten at night, we had only made three leagues upon a North courſe.

Saturday 18. We ſteered North by Weſt till eight the next morning, when, our depth of water decreaſing ſuddenly to five and ſeven fathoms, we brought to, till a boat from each ſhip was ſent ahead to ſound, and then ſteered North Eaſt after them; and at noon we had deepened the water to ſeventeen fathoms. At this time, Cape Newenham bore South, 9° Eaſt, diſtant eleven or twelve leagues; the North Eaſt extreme of the land in ſight North, 66° Eaſt; and the neareſt ſhore about four or five leagues diſtant. Our latitude, by obſervation, was 59° 16′.

Between this latitude and Cape Newenham, the coaſt is compoſed of hills, and low land, and appeared to form ſeveral bays. A little before one o'clock, the boats ahead made the ſignal for meeting with ſhoal water. It ſeems they had only two fathoms; and, at the ſame time, the

ſhips were in ſix fathoms. By hauling a little more to the Northward, we continued in much the ſame depth till between five and ſix o'clock, when the boats meeting with leſs and leſs water, I made the ſignal to the Diſcovery, ſhe being then ahead, to anchor, which we did ſoon after. In bringing our ſhip up, the cable parted at the clinch, which obliged us to come to with the other anchor. We rode in ſix fathoms water, a ſandy bottom, and about four or five leagues from the main-land; Cape Newenham bearing South, ſeventeen leagues diſtant. The fartheſt hills we could ſee to the North, bore North Eaſt by Eaſt; but there was low land ſtretching out from the high land, as far as North by Eaſt. Without this, was a ſhoal of ſand and ſtones, that was dry at half ebb. 1778. July.

I had ſent the two Maſters, each in a boat, to ſound between this ſhoal and the coaſt. On their return, they reported, that there was a channel, in which they found ſix and ſeven fathoms water; but that it was narrow and intricate. At low water, we made an attempt to get a hawſer round the loſt anchor; but did not ſucceed then. However, being determined not to leave it behind me, as long as there was a probability of recovering it, I perſevered in my endeavours; and at laſt ſucceeded in the evening of the 20th. Monday 20.

While we were thus employed, I ordered Captain Clerke to ſend his Maſter in a boat to look for a paſſage in the South Weſt quarter. He did ſo; but no channel was to be found in that direction; nor did there appear to be any way to get clear of theſe ſhoals, but to return by the track which had brought us in. For, although by following the channel we were in, we might probably have got farther down the coaſt; and though poſſibly this channel might have led us

1778. July. at laſt to the North, clear of the ſhoals, ſtill the attempt would have been attended with vaſt riſk; and if we ſhould not have ſucceeded, there would have been a conſiderable loſs of time that could ill be ſpared. Theſe reaſons induced me to return by the way in which we came; and ſo get without the ſhoals.

A number of lunar obſervations made by Mr. King and myſelf, on this, and the four preceding days, and all reduced to the ſhip's preſent ſtation, gave the longitude, 197° 45′ 48″

By the time-keeper it was - 197° 26′ 48″

Our latitude was - - - 59° 37′ 30″

Variation by the mean of three compaſſes, { A.M. 23° 34′ 3″ / P.M. 22° 19′ 40″ } mean 22° 56′ 51″ Eaſt.

The Northernmoſt part of the coaſt that we could ſee from this ſtation, I judged to lie in the latitude of 60°. It ſeemed to form a low point, which obtained the name of *Shoal Neſs*.

The tide of flood ſets to the North, and the ebb to the South. It riſes and falls, upon a perpendicular, five or ſix feet; and I reckon it to be high-water, on the full and change days, at eight o'clock.

Tueſday 21. Having weighed at three in the morning on the 21ſt, with a light breeze at North North Weſt, we ſteered back to the Southward, having three boats ahead to direct us. But, notwithſtanding this precaution, we found more difficulty in returning than we had in advancing; and at laſt were obliged to anchor, to avoid running upon a ſhoal, which had only a depth of five feet. While we lay here, twenty-ſeven men of the country, each in a canoe, came off to the ſhips, which they approached with great caution; hollowing

hollowing and opening their arms as they advanced. This, we underſtood, was to expreſs their pacific intentions. At length ſome approached near enough to receive a few trifles that were thown to them. This encouraged the reſt to venture along-ſide; and a traffic preſently commenced between them and our people; who got dreſſes of ſkins, bows, arrows, darts, wooden veſſels, &c.; our viſiters taking in exchange for theſe whatever was offered them. They ſeemed to be the ſame ſort of people that we had of late met with all along this coaſt; wore the ſame kind of ornaments in their lips and noſes; but were far more dirty, and not ſo well clothed. They appeared to be wholly unacquainted with people like us; they knew not the uſe of tobacco; nor was any foreign article ſeen in their poſſeſſion, unleſs a knife may be looked upon as ſuch. This, indeed, was only a piece of common iron fitted in a wooden handle, ſo as to anſwer the purpoſe of a knife. They, however, knew the value and uſe of this inſtrument ſo well, that it ſeemed to be the only article they wiſhed for. Moſt of them had their hair ſhaved, or cut ſhort off, leaving only a few locks behind, or on one ſide. For a covering for the head they wore a hood of ſkins, and a bonnet which appeared to be of wood. One part of their dreſs, which we got from them, was a kind of girdle, very neatly made of ſkin, with trappings depending from it, and paſſing between the legs, ſo as to conceal the adjoining parts. By the uſe of ſuch a girdle, it ſhould ſeem that they ſometimes go naked, even in this high latitude; for they hardly wear it under their other clothing. 1778. July.

The canoes were made of ſkins, like all the others we had lately ſeen; only with this difference, that theſe were broader, and the hole in which the man ſits, was wider.

1778. July. than in any I had before met with. Our boats returning from ſounding ſeemed to alarm them; ſo that they all left us ſooner than probably they would otherwiſe have done.

Wedneſ. 22. It was the 22d in the evening before we got clear of theſe ſhoals, and then I durſt not venture to ſteer to the Weſtward in the night, but ſpent it off Cape Newenham; and at day-

Thurſday 23. break, next morning, ſteered to the North Weſt, ordering the Diſcovery to lead. Before we had run two leagues, our depth of water decreaſed to ſix fathoms. Fearing if we continued this courſe, that we ſhould find leſs and leſs water, I hauled to the Southward; the wind being at Eaſt, a freſh breeze. This courſe brought us gradually into eighteen fathoms, and, having that depth, I ventured to ſteer a little Weſterly; and afterward Weſt, when we at laſt found twenty-ſix fathoms water.

Friday 24. On the 24th at noon we were, by obſervation, in the latitude of 58° 7′, and in the longitude of 194° 22′. Three leagues to the Weſtward of this ſtation we had twenty-eight fathoms water, and then ſteered Weſt North Weſt, the water gradually deepening to thirty-four fathoms. I would have ſteered more Northerly, but the wind having veered in that direction, I could not.

Saturday 25. The 25th in the evening, having a very thick fog, and but little wind, we dropped anchor in thirty fathoms water. Our latitude was now 58° 29′, and our longitude 191° 37′.

Sunday 26. At ſix, the next morning, the weather clearing up a little, we weighed, and, with a ſmall breeze at Eaſt, ſteered North; our ſoundings being from twenty-eight to twenty-five fathoms. After running nine leagues upon this courſe, the wind returned back to the North, which obliged us to ſteer more Weſterly.

The

The weather continued, for the moſt part, foggy, till toward noon on the 28th, when we had a few hours clear ſun-ſhine; during which we made ſeveral lunar obſervations. The mean reſult of them, reduced to noon, when the latitude was 59° 55′, gave 190° 6′ longitude; and the time-keeper gave 189° 59′. The variation of the compaſs was 18° 40′ Eaſt. Continuing our Weſterly courſe, the water having now deepened to thirty-ſix fathoms, at four o'clock next morning, we diſcovered land, bearing North Weſt by Weſt, ſix leagues diſtant. We ſtood toward it till half paſt ten, when we tacked in twenty-four fathoms water; being, at this time, a league from the land, which bore North North Weſt. It was the South Eaſt extremity, and formed a perpendicular cliff of conſiderable height; on which account it was called *Point Upright*, and lies in the latitude of 60° 17′, and in the longitude of 187° 30′. More land was ſeen to the Weſtward of the Point; and, at a clear interval, we ſaw another elevated portion of land, in the direction of Weſt by South; and this ſeemed to be entirely ſeparated from the other. Here we met with an incredible number of birds, all as the awk kind before deſcribed.

1778. July. Tueſday 28. Wedneſ. 29.

We had baffling light winds all the afternoon, ſo that we made but little progreſs; and the weather was not clear enough to enable us to determine the extent of the land before us. We ſuppoſed it to be one of the many iſlands laid down by Mr. Stæhlin in his map of the New Northern Archipelago; and we expected every moment to ſee more of them.

At four in the afternoon of the 30th, Point Upright bore North Weſt by North, ſix leagues diſtant. About this time, a light breeze ſpringing up at North North Weſt, we ſtood to the North Eaſt till four o'clock next morning, when the wind

Thurſday 30.

1778. July. wind veering to the Eaſtward, we tacked, and ſtood to the North Weſt. Soon after the wind came to South Eaſt; and we ſteered North Eaſt by North; which courſe we continued, with ſoundings from thirty-five to twenty fathoms, till next day at noon. At this time we were in the latitude of 60° 5′, and in the longitude of 191°. The wind now veering to North Eaſt, I firſt made a ſtretch of ten leagues to the North Weſt; and then, ſeeing no land in that direction, I ſtood back to the Eaſtward about fifteen leagues, and met with nothing but pieces of drift-wood. The ſoundings were from twenty-two to nineteen fathoms.

Auguſt. Saturday 1.

Variable, light winds, with ſhowers of rain, prevailed all the 2d; but fixing in the South Eaſt quarter, in the morning of the 3d, we reſumed our courſe to the Northward. At noon we were, by obſervation, in the latitude of 62° 34′, our longitude was 192°; and our depth of water ſixteen fathoms.

Sunday 2.

Monday 3.

Mr. Anderſon, my ſurgeon, who had been lingering under a conſumption for more than twelve months, expired between three and four this afternoon. He was a ſenſible young man, an agreeable companion, well ſkilled in his own profeſſion; and had acquired conſiderable knowledge in other branches of ſcience. The reader of this Journal will have obſerved how uſeful an aſſiſtant I had found him in the courſe of the voyage; and had it pleaſed God to have ſpared his life, the Public, I make no doubt, might have received from him ſuch communications, on various parts of the natural hiſtory of the ſeveral places we viſited, as would have abundantly ſhewn, that he was not unworthy of this commendation *. Soon after he had breathed his laſt, land

* Mr. Anderſon's Journal ſeems to have been diſcontinued for about two months before his death; the laſt date in his MSS. being of the 3d of June.

was

was ſeen to the Weſtward, twelve leagues diſtant. It was ſuppoſed to be an iſland; and, to perpetuate the memory of the deceaſed, for whom I had a very great regard, I named it *Anderſon's Iſland.* The next day, I removed Mr. Law, the ſurgeon of the Diſcovery, into the Reſolution, and appointed Mr. Samuel, the Surgeon's firſt mate of the Reſolution, to be Surgeon of the Diſcovery. 1778. Auguſt.

On the 4th, at three in the afternoon, land was ſeen, extending from North North Eaſt to North Weſt. We ſtood on toward it till four o'clock, when, being four or five miles from it, we tacked; and, ſoon after, the wind falling, we anchored in thirteen fathoms water, over a ſandy bottom; being about two leagues from the land, and, by our reckoning, in the latitude of 64° 27′, and in the longitude of 194° 18′. At intervals, we could ſee the coaſt extending from Eaſt to North Weſt, and a pretty high iſland, bearing Weſt by North, three leagues diſtant. Tueſday 4.

The land before us, which we ſuppoſed to be the continent of America, appeared low next the ſea; but, inland, it ſwelled into hills, which riſe, one behind another, to a conſiderable height. It had a greeniſh hue, but ſeemed deſtitute of wood, and free from ſnow. While we lay at anchor, we found that the flood-tide came from the Eaſt, and ſet to the Weſt, till between ten and eleven o'clock. From that time, till two the next morning, the ſtream ſet to the Eaſtward, and the water fell three feet. The flood ran both ſtronger and longer than the ebb; from which I concluded, that, beſides the tide, there was a Weſterly current.

At ten in the morning of the 5th, with the wind at South Weſt, we ran down, and anchored between the iſland and the continent, in ſeven fathoms water. Soon after, I landed Wedneſ. 5.

1778. August. upon the iſland, accompanied by Mr. King and ſome others of the officers. I hoped to have had from it a view of the coaſt and ſea to the Weſtward; but the fog was ſo thick in that direction, that the proſpect was not more extenſive than from the ſhip. The coaſt of the continent ſeemed to take a turn to the Northward, at a low point named *Point Rodney*, which bore from the iſland North Weſt half Weſt, three or four leagues diſtant; but the high land, which took a more Northerly direction, was ſeen a great way farther.

This iſland, which was named *Sledge Iſland*, and lies in the latitude of 64° 30′, and in the longitude of 193° 57′, is about four leagues in circuit. The ſurface of the ground is compoſed chiefly of large looſe ſtones, that are, in many places, covered with moſs and other vegetables, of which there were above twenty or thirty different ſorts, and moſt of them in flower. But I ſaw neither ſhrub nor tree, either upon the iſland, or on the continent. On a ſmall low ſpot, near the beach where we landed, was a good deal of wild purſlain, peaſe, long-wort, *&c.*; ſome of which we took on board for the pot. We ſaw one fox; a few plovers, and ſome other ſmall birds; and we met with ſome decayed huts that were partly built below ground. People had lately been on the iſland; and it is pretty clear, that they frequently viſit it for ſome purpoſe or other, as there was a beaten path from the one end to the other. We found, a little way from the ſhore where we landed, a ſledge, which occaſioned this name being given to the iſland. It ſeemed to be ſuch a one as the Ruſſians in Kamtſchatka make uſe of to convey goods from place to place, over the ice or ſnow. It was ten feet long, twenty inches broad; and had a kind of rail-work on each ſide, and was ſhod with bone. The conſtruction of it was admirable, and all the parts neatly put together; ſome with

with wooden pins, but moſtly with thongs or laſhings of whale-bone, which made me think it was entirely the workmanſhip of the natives. 1778. Auguſt.

At three o'clock, the next morning, we weighed, and proceeded to the North Weſtward, with a light Southerly breeze. We had an opportunity to obſerve the ſun's meridian altitude for the latitude; and to get altitude, both in the forenoon and afternoon, to obtain the longitude by the time-keeper. As we had but little wind, and variable withal, we advanced but ſlowly; and, at eight in the evening, finding the ſhips ſettle faſt toward the land into ſhoal water, I anchored in ſeven fathoms, about two leagues from the coaſt. Sledge Iſland bore South, 51° Eaſt, ten leagues diſtant; and was ſeen over the South point of the main land. Thurſday 6.

Soon after we had anchored, the weather, which had been miſty, clearing up, we ſaw high land extending from North, 40° Eaſt, to North, 30° Weſt, apparently disjoined from the coaſt, under which we were at anchor, which ſeemed to trend away North Eaſt. At the ſame time, an iſland was ſeen bearing North 81° Weſt, eight or nine leagues diſtant. It appeared to have no great extent, and was named *King's Iſland*. We rode here till eight o'clock, next morning, when we weighed, and ſtood to the North Weſt. The weather clearing up toward the evening, we got ſight of the North Weſt land, extending from North by Weſt, to North Weſt by North, diſtant about three leagues. We ſpent the night making ſhort boards, the weather being miſty and rainy, with little wind; and, between four and five of the morning of the 8th, we had again a ſight of the North Weſt land; and, ſoon after, on account of a calm, and a current driving us toward the ſhore, we found Friday 7. Saturday 8.

1778. August. it neceſſary to anchor in twelve fathoms water, about two miles from the coaſt. Over the Weſtern extreme is an elevated peaked hill, ſituated in latitude 65° 36′, and in longitude 192° 18′. A breeze at North Eaſt ſpringing up at eight o'clock, we weighed, and ſtood to the South Eaſt, in hopes of finding a paſſage between the coaſt on which we had anchored on the 6th in the evening, and this North Weſt land. But we ſoon got into ſeven fathoms water, and diſcovered low land connecting the two coaſts, and the high land behind it.

Being now ſatisfied that the whole was a continued coaſt, I tacked, and ſtood away for its North Weſt part, and came to an anchor under it in ſeventeen fathoms water. The weather, at this time, was very thick with rain; but, at Sunday 9. four next morning, it cleared up, ſo that we could ſee the land about us. A high ſteep rock or iſland bore Weſt by South; another iſland to the North of it, and much larger, bore Weſt by North; the peaked hill above mentioned, South Eaſt by Eaſt; and the point under it, South, 32° Eaſt. Under this hill lies ſome low land, ſtretching out toward the North Weſt, the extreme point of which, bore North Eaſt by Eaſt, about three miles diſtant. Over, and beyond it, ſome high land was ſeen, ſuppoſed to be a continuation of the continent.

This point of land, which I named *Cape Prince of Wales*, is the more remarkable, by being the Weſtern extremity of all America hitherto known. It is ſituated in the latitude of 65° 46′, and in the longitude of 191° 45′. The obſervations by which both were determined, though made in ſight of it, were liable to ſome ſmall error, on account of the hazineſs of the weather. We thought we ſaw

ſome

ſome people upon the coaſt; and probably we were not miſtaken, as ſome elevations, like ſtages, and others like huts, were ſeen at the ſame place. We ſaw the ſame things on the continent within Sledge Iſland, and on ſome other parts of the Coaſt. 1778. Auguſt.

It was calm till eight o'clock in the morning, when a faint breeze at North ſpringing up, we weighed. But we had ſcarcely got our ſails ſet, when it began to blow and rain very hard, with miſty weather. The wind and current, being in contrary directions, raiſed ſuch a ſea, that it frequently broke into the ſhip. We had a few minutes ſunſhine at noon; and from the obſervation then obtained, we fixed the above-mentioned latitude.

Having plied to windward till two in the afternoon, with little effect, I bore up for the iſland we had ſeen to the Weſtward, propoſing to come to an anchor under it till the gale ſhould ceaſe. But on getting to this land, we found it compoſed of two ſmall iſlands, each not above three or four leagues in circuit; and conſequently they could afford us little ſhelter. Inſtead of anchoring, therefore, we continued to ſtretch to the Weſtward; and, at eight o'clock, land was ſeen in that direction, extending from North North Weſt, to Weſt by South, the neareſt part ſix leagues diſtant. I ſtood on till ten, and then made a board to the Eaſtward, in order to ſpend the night.

At day-break in the morning of the 10th, we reſumed our courſe to the Weſt for the land we had ſeen the preceding evening. At eleven minutes after ſeven, when the longitude, by the time-keeper, was 189° 24′, it extended from South, 72° Weſt, to North, 41° Eaſt. Between the South Weſt extreme, and a point which bore Weſt, two leagues diſ- Monday 10.

1778. August. tant, the ſhore forms a large bay, in which we anchored at ten o'clock in the forenoon, about two miles from the North ſhore, in ten fathoms water, over a gravelly bottom. The South point of the bay bore South, 58° Weſt; the North point North, 43° Eaſt; the bottom of the bay North, 60° Weſt, two or three leagues diſtant; and the two iſlands we had paſſed the preceding day, North, 72° Eaſt, diſtant fourteen leagues.

CHAP. IX.

Behaviour of the Natives, the Tſchutſki, on ſeeing the Ships.—Interview with ſome of them.—Their Weapons.—Perſons.—Ornaments.—Clothing.—Winter and Summer Habitations.—The Ships croſs the Strait, to the Coaſt of America.—Progreſs Northward.—Cape Mulgrave.—Appearance of Fields of Ice.—Situation of Icy Cape.—The Sea blocked up with Ice.—Sea-horſes killed, and uſed as Proviſions.—Theſe Animals deſcribed.—Dimenſions of one of them.—Cape Liſburne.—Fruitleſs Attempts to get through the Ice, at a Diſtance from the Coaſt.—Obſervations on the Formation of this Ice.—Arrival on the Coaſt of Aſia.—Cape North.—The Proſecution of the Voyage deferred to the enſuing Year.

AS we were ſtanding into this bay, we perceived on the North ſhore a village, and ſome people, whom the ſight of the ſhips ſeemed to have thrown into confuſion, or fear. We could plainly ſee perſons running up the country with burdens upon their backs. At theſe habitations I propoſed to land; and, accordingly, went with three armed boats, accompanied by ſome of the officers. About thirty or forty men, each armed with a ſpontoon, a bow, and arrows, ſtood drawn up on a riſing ground cloſe by the village. As we drew near, three of them came down toward the ſhore, and were ſo polite as to take off their caps, and to make us low bows. We returned the civility; but this did not

1778. Auguſt. Monday 1.

1778. August. inſpire them with ſufficient confidence to wait for our landing; for the moment we put the boats aſhore, they retired. I followed them alone, without any thing in my hand; and by ſigns and geſtures prevailed on them to ſtop, and to receive ſome trifling preſents. In return for theſe they gave me two fox-ſkins, and a couple of ſea-horſe teeth. I cannot ſay whether they or I made the firſt preſent; for it appeared to me, that they had brought down with them theſe things for this very purpoſe; and that they would have given them to me, even though I had made no return.

They ſeemed very fearful and cautious; expreſſing their deſire, by ſigns, that no more of our people ſhould be permitted to come up. On my laying my hand on the ſhoulder of one of them, he ſtarted back ſeveral paces. In proportion as I advanced, they retreated backward; always in the attitude of being ready to make uſe of their ſpears; while thoſe on the riſing ground ſtood ready to ſupport them with their arrows. Inſenſibly, myſelf, and two or three of my companions, got in amongſt them. A few beads diſtributed to thoſe about us, ſoon created a kind of confidence; ſo that they were not alarmed when a few more of our people joined us; and, by degrees, a ſort of traffic between us commenced. In exchange for knives, beads, tobacco, and other articles, they gave us ſome of their clothing, and a few arrows. But nothing that we had to offer could induce them to part with a ſpear, or a bow. Theſe they held in conſtant readineſs, never once quitting them, except at one time, when four or five perſons laid theirs down, while they gave us a ſong and a dance. And even then, they placed them in ſuch a manner, that they could lay hold of them in an inſtant; and, for their ſecurity, they deſired us to ſit down.

The

The arrows were pointed either with bone or ſtone; but very few of them had barbs; and ſome had a round blunt point. What uſe theſe may be applied to, I cannot ſay; unleſs it be to kill ſmall animals, without damaging the ſkin. The bows were ſuch as we had ſeen on the American coaſt, and like thoſe uſed by the Eſquimaux. The ſpears, or ſpontoons, were of iron or ſteel, and of European or Aſiatic workmanſhip; in which no little pains had been taken to ornament them with carving, and inlayings of braſs, and of a white metal. Thoſe who ſtood ready with bows and arrows in their hands, had the ſpear ſlung over their right ſhoulder by a leathern ſtrap. A leathern quiver, ſlung over their left ſhoulder, contained arrows; and ſome of theſe quivers were extremely beautiful; being made of red leather, on which was very neat embroidery, and other ornaments. 1778. Auguſt.

Several other things, and, in particular, their clothing, ſhewed that they were poſſeſſed of a degree of ingenuity, far ſurpaſſing what one could expect to find amongſt ſo Northern a people. All the Americans we had ſeen, ſince our arrival on that coaſt, were rather low of ſtature, with round chubby faces, and high cheek-bones. The people we now were amongſt, far from reſembling them, had long viſages, and were ſtout and well made. In ſhort, they appeared to be a quite different nation. We ſaw neither women, nor children, of either ſex; nor any aged, except one man, who was bald-headed; and he was the only one who carried no arms. The others ſeemed to be picked men, and rather under than above the middle age. The old man had a black mark acroſs his face, which I did not ſee in any others. All of them had their ears bored; and ſome had glaſs beads hanging to them. Theſe were the only fixed ornaments we

1778. Auguſt. ſaw about them; for they wear none to the lips. This is another thing in which they differ from the Americans we had lately ſeen.

Their clothing conſiſted of a cap, a frock, a pair of breeches, a pair of boots, and a pair of gloves, all made of leather, or of the ſkins of deer, dogs, ſeals, &c. and extremely well dreſſed; ſome with the hair or fur on; but others without it. The caps were made to fit the head very cloſe; and beſides theſe caps, which moſt of them wore, we got from them ſome hoods, made of ſkins of dogs, that were large enough to cover both head and ſhoulders. Their hair ſeemed to be black; but their heads were either ſhaved, or the hair cut cloſe off; and none of them wore any beard. Of the few articles which they got from us, knives and tobacco were what they valued moſt.

We found the village compoſed both of their ſummer and their winter habitations. The latter are exactly like a vault, the floor of which is ſunk a little below the ſurface of the earth. One of them, which I examined, was of an oval form, about twenty feet long, and twelve or more high. The framing was compoſed of wood, and the ribs of whales, diſpoſed in a judicious manner, and bound together with ſmaller materials of the ſame ſort. Over this framing is laid a covering of ſtrong coarſe graſs; and that again is covered with earth; ſo that, on the outſide, the houſe looks like a little hillock, ſupported by a wall of ſtone, three or four feet high, which is built round the two ſides, and one end. At the other end, the earth is raiſed ſloping, to walk up to the entrance, which is by a hole in the top of the roof over that end. The floor was boarded, and under it a kind of cellar, in which I ſaw nothing but water. And at the end of each houſe

houſe was a vaulted room, which I took to be a ſtore-room. Theſe ſtore-rooms communicated with the houſe, by a dark paſſage; and with the open air, by a hole in the roof, which was even with the ground one walked upon; but they cannot be ſaid to be wholly under ground; for one end reached to the edge of the hill, along which they were made, and which was built up with ſtone. Over it ſtood a kind of ſentry-box, or tower, compoſed of the large bones of large fiſh. 1778. Auguſt.

The ſummer huts were pretty large and circular, being brought to a point at the top. The framing was of ſlight poles, and bones, covered with the ſkins of ſea-animals. I examined the inſide of one. There was a fire-place, juſt within the door, where lay a few wooden veſſels, all very dirty. Their bed-places were cloſe to the ſide, and took up about half the circuit. Some privacy ſeemed to be obſerved; for there were ſeveral partitions made with ſkins. The bed and bedding were of deer-ſkins; and moſt of them were dry and clean.

About the habitations were erected ſeveral ſtages, ten or twelve feet high; ſuch as we had obſerved on ſome parts of the American coaſt. They were wholly compoſed of bones; and ſeemed intended for drying their fiſh and ſkins, which were thus placed beyond the reach of their dogs, of which they had a great many. Theſe dogs are of the fox kind, rather large, and of different colours, with long ſoft hair like wool. They are, probably, uſed in drawing their ſledges in winter. For ſledges they have, as I ſaw a good many laid up in one of the winter huts. It is alſo not improbable, that dogs may conſtitute a part of their food. Several lay dead, that had been killed that morning.

1778. Auguſt. The canoes of theſe people are of the ſame ſort with thoſe of the Northern Americans; ſome, both of the large and of the ſmall ones, being ſeen lying in a creek under the village.

By the large fiſh-bones, and of other ſea-animals, it appeared that the ſea ſupplied them with the greateſt part of their ſubſiſtence. The country appeared to be exceedingly barren; yielding neither tree nor ſhrub, that we could ſee. At ſome diſtance Weſtward, we obſerved a ridge of mountains covered with ſnow, that had lately fallen.

At firſt, we ſuppoſed this land to be a part of the iſland of Alaſchka, laid down in Mr. Stæhlin's map, before mentioned. But from the figure of the coaſt, the ſituation of the oppoſite ſhore of America, and from the longitude, we ſoon began to think that it was, more probably, the country of the Tſchutſki, or the Eaſtern extremity of Aſia, explored by Beering in 1728. But to have admitted this, without farther examination, I muſt have pronounced Mr. Stæhlin's map, and his account of the new Northern Archipelago, to be either exceedingly erroneous, even in latitude, or elſe to be a mere fiction; a judgment which I had no right to paſs upon a publication ſo reſpectably vouched, without producing the cleareſt proofs.

After a ſtay of between two and three hours, with theſe people, we returned to our ſhips; and, ſoon after, the wind veering to the South, we weighed anchor, ſtood out of the bay, and ſteered to the North Eaſt, between the coaſt and the
Tueſday 11. two iſlands. The next day, at noon, the former extended from South 80° Weſt, to North 84° Weſt; the latter bore South 40° Weſt; and the peaked mountain, over Cape Prince of Wales, bore South 36° Eaſt; with land extending from it

as

as far as South 75° East. The latitude of the ſhip was 66° 5½′; the longitude 191° 19′; our depth of water twenty-eight fathoms; and our poſition nearly in the middle of the channel between the two coaſts, each being ſeven leagues diſtant. 1778. Auguſt.

From this ſtation we ſteered East, in order to get nearer the American coaſt. In this courſe the water ſhoaled gradually, and there being little wind, and all our endeavours to increaſe our depth failing, I was obliged at laſt to drop anchor in ſix fathoms; the only remedy we had left to prevent the ſhips driving into leſs. The neareſt part of the Weſtern land bore Weſt, twelve leagues diſtant; the peaked hill over Cape Prince of Wales, South 16° Weſt; and the Northernmoſt part of the American continent in ſight, East South East, the neareſt part about four leagues diſtant. After we had anchored, I ſent a boat to ſound, and the water was found to ſhoal gradually toward the land. While we lay at anchor, which was from ſix to nine in the evening, we found little or no current; nor could we perceive that the water either roſe or fell.

A breeze of wind ſpringing up at North, we weighed, and ſtood to the Weſtward, which courſe ſoon brought us into deep water; and, during the 12th, we plied to the North, both coaſts being in ſight; but we kept neareſt to that of America. Wedneſ. 12.

At four in the afternoon of the 13th, a breeze ſpringing up at South, I ſteered North East by North, till four o'clock next morning, when, ſeeing no land, we directed our courſe East by North; and between nine and ten, land, ſuppoſed to be a continuation of the continent, appeared. It extended from East by South to East by North; and, ſoon after, we Thurſday 13. Friday 14.

ſaw

1778. August. saw more land, bearing North by East. Coming pretty suddenly into thirteen fathoms water, at two in the afternoon, we made a trip off till four, when we stood in again for the land; which was seen, soon after, extending from North to South East; the neareſt part three or four leagues distant. The coast here forms a point, named *Point Mulgrave*, which lies in the latitude of 67° 45′; and in the longitude of 194° 51′. The land appeared very low next the sea; but, a little back, it rises into hills of a moderate height. The whole was free from snow; and, to appearance, destitute of wood. I now tacked, and bore away North West by West; but, soon after, thick weather with rain coming on, and the wind increasing, I hauled more to the West.

Saturday 15. Next morning, at two o'clock, the wind veered to South. West by South, and blew a strong gale, which abated at noon; and the sun shining out, we found ourselves, by observation, in the latitude of 68° 18′. I now steered North

Sunday 16. East, till six o'clock the next morning, when I steered two points more Easterly. In this run we met with several sea-horses, and flights of birds; some like sand-larks, and others no bigger than hedge-sparrows. Some shags were also seen; so that we judged ourselves to be not far from land. But as we had a thick fog, we could not expect to see any; and, as the wind blew strong, it was not prudent to continue a course which was most likely to bring us to it. From the noon of this day, to six o'clock in the morning of the

Monday 17. following, I steered East by North; which course brought us into sixteen fathoms water. I now steered North East by East, thinking, by this course, to deepen our water. But, in the space of six leagues, it shoaled to eleven fathoms; which made me think it proper to haul close to the wind, that now blew at West. Toward noon, both sun and moon

were ſeen clearly at intervals, and we got ſome flying obſervations for the longitude; which, reduced to noon, when the latitude was 70° 33′, gave 197° 41′. The time-keeper, for the ſame time, gave 198°; and the variation was 35° 1′ 22″ Eaſt. We had, afterward, reaſon to believe, that the obſerved longitude was within a very few miles of the truth. 1778. Auguſt.

Some time before noon, we perceived a brightneſs in the Northern horizon, like that reflected from ice, commonly called the blink. It was little noticed, from a ſuppoſition that it was improbable we ſhould meet with ice ſo ſoon. And yet, the ſharpneſs of the air, and gloomineſs of the weather, for two or three days paſt, ſeemed to indicate ſome ſudden change. About an hour after, the ſight of a large field of ice, left us no longer in doubt about the cauſe of the brightneſs of the horizon. At half paſt two, we tacked, cloſe to the edge of the ice, in twenty-two fathoms water, being then in the latitude of 70° 41′; not being able to ſtand on any farther. For the ice was quite impenetrable, and extended from Weſt by South, to Eaſt by North, as far as the eye could reach. Here were abundance of ſea-horſes; ſome in the water; but far more upon the ice. I had thoughts of hoiſting out the boats to kill ſome; but the wind freſhening, I gave up the deſign; and continued to ply to the Southward, or rather to the Weſtward; for the wind came from that quarter.

We gained nothing; for, on the 18th at noon, our latitude was 70° 44′; and we were near five leagues farther to the Eaſtward. We were, at this time, cloſe to the edge of the ice, which was as compact as a wall; and ſeemed to be ten or twelve feet high at leaſt. But, farther North, it appeared Tueſday 18.

much

1778. August. much higher. Its ſurface was extremely rugged; and, here and there, we ſaw upon it pools of water.

We now ſtood to the Southward; and, after running ſix leagues, ſhoaled the water to ſeven fathoms; but it ſoon deepened to nine fathoms. At this time, the weather, which had been hazy, clearing up a little, we ſaw land extending from South to South Eaſt by Eaſt, about three or four miles diſtant. The Eaſtern extreme forms a point, which was much incumbered with ice; for which reaſon it obtained the name of *Icy Cape*. Its latitude is 70° 29′, and its longitude 198° 20′. The other extreme of the land was loſt in the horizon; ſo that there can be no doubt of its being a continuation of the American continent. The Diſcovery being about a mile aſtern, and to leeward, found leſs water than we did; and tacking on that account, I was obliged to tack alſo, to prevent ſeparation.

Our ſituation was now more and more critical. We were in ſhoal water, upon a lee ſhore; and the main body of the ice to windward, driving down upon us. It was evident, that, if we remained much longer between it and the land, it would force us aſhore; unleſs it ſhould happen to take the ground before us. It ſeemed nearly to join the land to leeward; and the only direction that was open, was to the South Weſt. After making a ſhort board to the Northward, I made the ſignal for the Diſcovery to tack, and tacked myſelf at the ſame time. The wind proved rather favourable; ſo that we lay up South Weſt, and South Weſt by Weſt.

Wedneſ. 19. At eight in the morning of the 19th, the wind veering back to Weſt, I tacked to the Northward; and, at noon, the latitude was 70° 6′, and the longitude 196° 42′. In this ſituation, we had a good deal of drift-ice about us; and the main

main ice was about two leagues to the North. At half paſt one, we got in with the edge of it. It was not ſo compact as that which we had ſeen to the Northward; but it was too cloſe, and in too large pieces, to attempt forcing the ſhips through it. On the ice lay a prodigious number of ſea-horſes; and, as we were in want of freſh proviſions, the boats from each ſhip were ſent to get ſome. 1778. Auguſt.

By ſeven o'clock in the evening, we had received, on board the Reſolution, nine of theſe animals; which, till now, we had ſuppoſed to be ſea-cows; ſo that we were not a little diſappointed, eſpecially ſome of the ſeamen, who, for the novelty of the thing, had been feaſting their eyes for ſome days paſt. Nor would they have been diſappointed now, nor have known the difference, if we had not happened to have one or two on board, who had been in Greenland, and declared what animals theſe were, and that no one ever eat of them. But, notwithſtanding this, we lived upon them as long as they laſted; and there were few on board who did not prefer them to our ſalt meat.

The fat, at firſt, is as ſweet as marrow; but in a few days it grows rancid, unleſs it be ſalted; in which ſtate, it will keep much longer. The lean fleſh is coarſe, black, and has rather a ſtrong taſte; and the heart is nearly as well taſted as that of a bullock. The fat, when melted, yields a good deal of oil, which burns very well in lamps; and their hides, which are very thick, were very uſeful about our rigging. The teeth, or tuſks, of moſt of them were, at this time, very ſmall; even ſome of the largeſt and oldeſt of theſe animals, had them not exceeding ſix inches in length. From this we concluded, that they had lately ſhed their old teeth.

1778. August.

They lie, in herds of many hundreds, upon the ice; huddling one over the other like ſwine; and roar or bray very loud; ſo that, in the night, or in foggy weather, they gave us notice of the vicinity of the ice, before we could ſee it. We never found the whole herd aſleep; ſome being always upon the watch. Theſe, on the approach of the boat, would wake thoſe next to them; and the alarm being thus gradually communicated, the whole herd would be awake preſently. But they were ſeldom in a hurry to get away, till after they had been once fired at. Then they would tumble one over the other, into the ſea, in the utmoſt confuſion. And, if we did not, at the firſt diſcharge, kill thoſe we fired at, we generally loſt them, though mortally wounded. They did not appear to us to be that dangerous animal ſome authors have deſcribed; not even when attacked. They are rather more ſo, to appearance, than in reality. Vaſt numbers of them would follow, and come cloſe up to the boats. But the flaſh of a muſquet in the pan, or even the bare pointing of one at them, would ſend them down in an inſtant. The female will defend the young one to the very laſt, and at the expence of her own life, whether in the water, or upon the ice. Nor will the young one quit the dam, though ſhe be dead; ſo that, if you kill one, you are ſure of the other. The dam, when in the water, holds the young one between her fore-fins.

Mr. Pennant, in his *Synopſis Quadr.* p. 335 *, has given a very good deſcription of this animal under the name of *Arctic Walrus*; but I have no where ſeen a good drawing

* Mr. Pennant, ſince Captain Cook wrote this, has deſcribed this animal in a new work, which he calls *Arctic Zoology*, now ready for publication. We have been favoured with his obliging communications on this, and other particulars; and, therefore, refer the reader to the *Arctic Zoology*, N° 72.

of

1778. Auguſt.

of one. Why they ſhould be called ſea-horſes, is hard to ſay; unleſs the word be a corruption of the Ruſſian name *Morſe*; for they have not the leaſt reſemblance of a horſe. This is, without doubt, the ſame animal that is found in the Gulph of St. Lawrence, and there called Sea-cow. It is certainly more like a cow than a horſe; but this likeneſs conſiſts in nothing but the ſnout. In ſhort, it is an animal like a ſeal; but incomparably larger. The dimenſions and weight of one, which was none of the largeſt, were as follows:

	Feet.	Inches.
Length from the ſnout to the tail - -	9	4
Length of the neck, from the ſnout to the ſhoulder-bone - - -	2	6
Height of the ſhoulder - - -	5	0
Length of the fins Fore - - - -	2	4
Length of the fins Hind - - -	2	6
Breadth of the fins Fore - - -	1	2½
Breadth of the fins Hind - - -	2	0
Snout Breadth - - - -	0	5½
Snout Depth - - - -	1	3
Circumference of the neck cloſe to the ears -	2	7
Circumference of the body at the ſhoulder -	7	10
Circumference near the hind fins - -	5	6
From the ſnout to the eyes - -	0	7

	lb.
Weight of the carcaſe, without the head, ſkin, or entrails -	854
Head - - - - - -	41½
Skin - - - -	205

I could not find out what theſe animals feed upon. There was nothing in the maws of thoſe we killed.

1778. Auguſt. It is worth obſerving, that for ſome days before this date, we had frequently ſeen flocks of ducks flying to the Southward. They were of two ſorts, the one much larger than the other. The largeſt were of a brown colour; and, of the ſmall ſort, either the duck or drake was black and white, and the other brown. Some ſaid they ſaw geeſe alſo. Does not this indicate that there muſt be land to the North; where theſe birds find ſhelter, in the proper ſeaſon, to breed, and from whence they were now returning to a warmer climate?

By the time that we had got our ſea-horſes on board, we were, in a manner, ſurrounded with the ice; and had no way left to clear it, but by ſtanding to the Southward; Thurſday 20. which was done till three o'clock next morning, with a gentle breeze weſterly; and, for the moſt part, thick, foggy weather. The ſoundings were from twelve to fifteen fathoms. We then tacked, and ſtood to the North till ten o'clock; when the wind veering to the Northward, we directed our courſe to the Weſt South Weſt and Weſt. At two in the afternoon, we fell in with the main ice; along the edge of which we kept; being partly directed by the roaring of the ſea-horſes; for we had a very thick fog. Thus we continued ſailing till near midnight, when we got in amongſt the looſe ice, and heard the ſurge of the ſea upon the main ice.

The fog being very thick, and the wind Eaſterly, I now Friday 21. hauled to the Southward; and, at ten o'clock the next morning, the fog clearing away, we ſaw the continent of America, extending from South by Eaſt, to Eaſt by South; and at noon, from South Weſt half South, to Eaſt; the neareſt part five leagues diſtant. At this time we were in the latitude

of 69° 32′, and in the longitude of 195° 48′; and as the main ice was at no great diſtance from us, it is evident, that it now covered a part of the ſea, which, but a few days before, had been clear; and that it extended farther to the South, than where we firſt fell in with it. It muſt not be underſtood, that I ſuppoſed any part of this ice which we had ſeen, to be fixed; on the contrary, I am well aſſured, that the whole was a moveable maſs. 1778. Auguſt.

Having but little wind, in the afternoon, I ſent the Maſter in a boat, to try if there was any current; but he found none. I continued to ſteer in for the American land, until eight o'clock, in order to get a nearer view of it, and to look for a harbour; but ſeeing nothing like one, I ſtood again to the North, with a light breeze Weſterly. At this time, the coaſt extended from South Weſt to Eaſt; the neareſt part four or five leagues diſtant. The Southern extreme ſeemed to form a point, which was named *Cape Liſburne*. It lies in the latitude of 69° 5′, and in the longitude of 194° 42′, and appeared to be pretty high land, even down to the ſea. But there may be low land under it, which we might not ſee, being not leſs than ten leagues from it. Every where elſe, as we advanced Northward, we had found a low coaſt, from which the land riſes to a middle height. The coaſt now before us was without ſnow, except in one or two places; and had a greeniſh hue. But we could not perceive any wood upon it.

On the 22d, the wind was Southerly, and the weather moſtly foggy, with ſome intervals of ſunſhine. At eight in the evening it fell calm, which continued till midnight, when we heard the ſurge of the ſea againſt the ice, and had Saturday 22.

ſeveral

1778. Auguſt. ſeveral looſe pieces about us. A light breeze now ſprung up at North Eaſt; and, as the fog was very thick, I ſteered to the Southward, to clear the ice. At eight o'clock next Sunday 23. morning, the fog diſperſed, and I hauled to the Weſtward. For finding that I could not get to the North near the coaſt, on account of the ice, I reſolved to try what could be done at a diſtance from it; and as the wind ſeemed to be ſettled at North, I thought it a good opportunity.

Monday 24. Tueſday 25. As we advanced to the Weſt, the water deepened gradually to twenty-eight fathoms, which was the moſt we had. With the Northerly wind the air was raw, ſharp, and cold; and we had fogs, ſunſhine, ſhowers of ſnow and ſleet, by turns. Wedneſ. 26. At ten in the morning of the 26th, we fell in with the ice. At noon, it extended from North Weſt to Eaſt by North, and appeared to be thick and compact. At this time, we were, by obſervation, in the latitude 69° 36′, and in the longitude of 184°; ſo that it now appeared we had no better proſpect of getting to the North here, than nearer the ſhore.

I continued to ſtand to the Weſtward, till five in the afternoon, when we were in a manner embayed by the ice, which appeared high, and very cloſe in the North Weſt and North Eaſt quarters, with a great deal of looſe ice about the edge of the main field. At this time, we had baffling light winds; but it ſoon fixed at South, and increaſed to a freſh gale, with ſhowers of rain. We got the tack aboard, and ſtretched to the Eaſtward; this being the only direction in which the ſea was clear of ice.

Thurſday 27. At four in the morning of the 27th, we tacked and ſtood to the Weſt, and at ſeven in the evening we were cloſe in with the edge of the ice, which lay Eaſt North Eaſt, and

Weſt

Weſt South Weſt, as far each way as the eye could reach. Having but little wind, I went with the boats, to examine the ſtate of the ice. I found it conſiſting of looſe pieces, of various extent, and ſo cloſe together, that I could hardly enter the outer edge with a boat; and it was as impoſſible for the ſhips to enter it, as if it had been ſo many rocks. I took particular notice, that it was all pure tranſparent ice, except the upper ſurface, which was a little porous. It appeared to be entirely compoſed of frozen ſnow, and to have been all formed at ſea. For, ſetting aſide the improbability, or rather impoſſibility, of ſuch huge maſſes floating out of rivers, in which there is hardly water for a boat, none of the productions of the land were found incorporated, or fixed in it; which muſt have unavoidably been the caſe, had it been formed in rivers, either great or ſmall. The pieces of ice that formed the outer edge of the field, were from forty or fifty yards in extent, to four or five; and I judged, that the larger pieces reached thirty feet, or more, under the ſurface of the water. It alſo appeared to me very improbable, that this ice could have been the production of the preceding winter alone. I ſhould ſuppoſe it rather to have been the production of a great many winters. Nor was it leſs improbable, according to my judgment, that the little that remained of the ſummer, could deſtroy the tenth part of what now ſubſiſted of this maſs; for the ſun had already exerted upon it the full influence of his rays. Indeed I am of opinion, that the ſun contributes very little toward reducing theſe great maſſes. For although that luminary is a conſiderable while above the horizon, it ſeldom ſhines out for more than a few hours at a time; and often is not ſeen for ſeveral days in ſucceſſion. It is the wind, or rather the

1778. Auguſt.

1778. August. waves raiſed by the wind, that brings down the bulk of theſe enormous maſſes, by grinding one piece againſt another, and by undermining and waſhing away thoſe parts that lie expoſed to the ſurge of the ſea. This was evident, from our obſerving, that the upper ſurface of many pieces had been partly waſhed away, while the baſe or under part remained firm for ſeveral fathoms round that which appeared above water, exactly like a ſhoal round an elevated rock. We meaſured the depth of water upon one, and found it to be fifteen feet; ſo that the ſhips might have ſailed over it. If I had not meaſured this depth, I would not have believed, that there was a ſufficient weight of ice above the ſurface, to have ſunk the other ſo much below it. Thus it may happen, that more ice is deſtroyed in one ſtormy ſeaſon, than is formed in ſeveral winters, and an endleſs accumulation is prevented. But that there is always a remaining ſtore, every one who has been upon the ſpot will conclude, and none but cloſet-ſtudying philoſophers will diſpute.

A thick fog, which came on while I was thus employed with the boats, haſtened me aboard, rather ſooner than I could have wiſhed, with one ſea-horſe to each ſhip. We had killed more, but could not wait to bring them with us. The number of theſe animals, on all the ice that we had ſeen, is almoſt incredible. We ſpent the night ſtanding off and on, amongſt the drift ice; and at nine o'clock the next
Friday 29. morning, the fog having partly diſperſed, boats from each ſhip were ſent for ſea-horſes. For, by this time, our people began to reliſh them, and thoſe we had procured before were all conſumed. At noon, our latitude was 69° 17′, our longitude 183°; the variation, by the morning azimuths,

25°

25° 56′ Eaſt; and the depth of water twenty-five fathoms. At two o'clock, having got on board as much marine beef as was thought neceſſary, and the wind freſhening at South South Eaſt, we took on board the boats, and ſtretched to the South Weſt. But not being able to weather the ice upon this tack, or to go through it, we made a board to the Eaſt, till eight o'clock, then reſumed our courſe to the South Weſt, and before midnight were obliged to tack again, on account of the ice. Soon after, the wind ſhifted to the North Weſt, blowing a ſtiff gale, and we ſtretched to the South Weſt, cloſe hauled. 1778. Auguſt.

In the morning of the 29th, we ſaw the main ice to the Northward, and not long after, land bearing South Weſt by Weſt. Preſently after this, more land ſhewed itſelf, bearing Weſt. It ſhewed itſelf in two hills like iſlands, but afterward the whole appeared connected. As we approached the land, the depth of water decreaſed very faſt; ſo that at noon, when we tacked, we had only eight fathoms; being three miles from the coaſt, which extended from South, 30° Eaſt, to North, 60° Weſt. This laſt extreme terminated in a bluff point, being one of the hills above mentioned. Saturday 29.

The weather at this time was very hazy, with drizzling rain; but ſoon after, it cleared; eſpecially to the Southward, Weſtward, and Northward. This enabled us to have a pretty good view of the coaſt; which, in every reſpect, is like the oppoſite one of America; that is, low land next the ſea, with elevated land farther back. It was perfectly deſtitute of wood, and even ſnow; but was, probably, covered with a moſſy ſubſtance, that gave it a browniſh caſt. In the low ground lying between the high land and the ſea, was a lake, extending to the South Eaſt, farther than we could

1778, Auguſt. ſee. As we ſtood off, the Weſternmoſt of the two hills before mentioned came open off the bluff point, in the direction of North Weſt. It had the appearance of being an iſland; but it might be joined to the other by low land, though we did not ſee it. And if ſo, there is a two-fold point, with a bay between them. This point, which is ſteep and rocky, was named *Cape North*. Its ſituation is nearly in the latitude of 68° 56′, and in the longitude of 180° 51′. The coaſt beyond it muſt take a very Weſterly direction; for we could ſee no land to the Northward of it, though the horizon was there pretty clear. Being deſirous of ſeeing more of the coaſt to the Weſtward, we tacked again, at two o'clock in the afternoon, thinking we could weather Cape North. But finding we could not, the wind freſhening, a thick fog coming on, with much ſnow, and being fearful of the ice coming down upon us, I gave up the deſign I had formed of plying to the Weſtward, and ſtood off ſhore again.

The ſeaſon was now ſo far advanced, and the time when the froſt is expected to ſet in ſo near at hand, that I did not think it conſiſtent with prudence, to make any farther attempts to find a paſſage into the Atlantic this year, in any direction; ſo little was the proſpect of ſucceeding. My attention was now directed toward finding out ſome place where we might ſupply ourſelves with wood and water; and the object uppermoſt in my thoughts was, how I ſhould ſpend the winter, ſo as to make ſome improvements in geography and navigation, and, at the ſame time, be in a condition to return to the North, in farther ſearch of a paſſage, the enſuing ſummer.

CHART of NORTON SOUND
and of
BHERINGS STRAIT
made by the
East Cape of ASIA and the West Point
of
AMERICA.
PART of ASIA
PART of AMERICA
NORTON SOUND
Cape Serdze Kamen
East Cape
Bay of St. Lawrence
Prince Wales
Kings I.
Sledge I.
Bald Head
Chacktoole Bay
Besborough I.
Cape Stephens
Tschukotskoi Nos
I. St. Lawrence
CLERKE'S ISLANDS
Andersons I.
July 28th 1779
July 6th 1779
Aug. 1st 1779
July 3 1779

CHAP. X.

Return from Cape North, along the Coaſt of Aſia.—Views of the Country.—Burney's Iſland.—Cape Serdze Kamen, the Northern Limit of Beering's Voyage.—Paſs the Eaſt Cape of Aſia.—Deſcription and Situation of it.—Obſervations on Muller.—The Tſchutſki.—Bay of Saint Lawrence.—Two other Bays, and Habitations of the Natives.—Beering's Cape Tſchukotſkoi.—Beering's Poſition of this Coaſt accurate.—Iſland of Saint Lawrence.—Paſs to the American Coaſt.—Cape Darby.—Bald Head.—Cape Denbigh, on a Peninſula.—Beſborough Iſland.—Wood and Water procured.—Viſits from the Natives.—Their Perſons and Habitations.—Produce of the Country.—Marks that the Peninſula had formerly been ſurrounded by the Sea.—Lieutenant King's Report.—Norton Sound.—Lunar Obſervations there.—Stæhlin's Map proved to be erroneous.—Plan of future Operations.

AFTER having ſtood off till we got into eighteen fathoms water, I bore up to the Eaſtward, along the coaſt, which, by this time, it was pretty certain, could only be the continent of Aſia. As the wind blew freſh, with a very heavy fall of ſnow, and a thick miſt, it was neceſſary to proceed with great caution. I therefore brought to, for a few hours in the night. 1778. Auguſt. Saturday 29.

1778. August. Sunday 30. At day-break, on the 30th, we made ſail, and ſteered ſuch a courſe as I thought would bring us in with the land; being in a great meaſure guided by the lead. For the weather was as thick as ever, and it ſnowed inceſſantly. At ten, we got ſight of the coaſt, bearing South Weſt, four miles diſtant; and preſently after, having ſhoaled the water to ſeven fathoms, we hauled off. At this time, a very low point, or ſpit, bore South South Weſt, two or three miles diſtant; to the Eaſt of which there appeared to be a narrow channel, leading into ſome water that we ſaw over the point. Probably, the lake before mentioned communicates here with the ſea.

At noon, the miſt diſperſing for a ſhort interval, we had a tolerably good view of the coaſt, which extended from South Eaſt to North Weſt by Weſt. Some parts appeared higher than others; but in general it was very low, with high land farther up the country. The whole was now covered with ſnow, which had lately fallen, quite down to the ſea. I continued to range along the coaſt, at two leagues diſtance, till ten at night, when we hauled off; but we reſumed our Monday 31. courſe next morning, ſoon after day-break, when we got ſight of the coaſt again, extending from Weſt to South Eaſt by South. At eight, the Eaſtern part bore South, and proved to be an iſland; which at noon bore South Weſt half South, four or five miles diſtant. It is about four or five miles in circuit, of a middling height, with a ſteep, rocky coaſt, ſituated about three leagues from the main, in the latitude of 67° 45′, and diſtinguiſhed in the chart by the name of *Burney's Iſland.*

The inland country hereabout is full of hills; ſome of which are of a conſiderable height. The land was covered with

with ſnow, except a few ſpots upon the ſea-coaſt, which ſtill continued low, but leſs ſo than farther Weſtward. For the two preceding days, the mean height of the mercury in the thermometer had been very little above the freezing point, and often below it; ſo that the water, in the veſſels upon the deck, was frequently covered with a ſheet of ice. 1778. Auguſt.

I continued to ſteer South South Eaſt, nearly in the direction of the coaſt, till five in the afternoon, when land was ſeen bearing South, 50° Eaſt, which we preſently found to be a continuation of the coaſt, and hauled up for it. Being abreaſt of the Eaſtern land, at ten at night, and in doubts of weathering it, we tacked, and made a board to the Weſtward, till paſt one the next morning, when we ſtood again to the Eaſt, and found that it was as much as we could do to keep our diſtance from the coaſt, the wind being exceedingly unſettled, varying continually from North to North Eaſt. At half an hour paſt eight, the Eaſtern extreme above mentioned bore South by Eaſt, ſix or ſeven miles diſtant. At the ſame time, a head-land appeared in ſight, bearing Eaſt by South, half South; and, ſoon after, we could trace the whole coaſt lying between them, and a ſmall iſland at ſome diſtance from it. September. Tueſday 1.

The coaſt ſeemed to form ſeveral rocky points, connected by a low ſhore, without the leaſt appearance of a harbour. At ſome diſtance from the ſea, the low land appeared to ſwell into a number of hills. The higheſt of theſe were covered with ſnow; and, in other reſpects, the whole country ſeemed naked. At ſeven in the evening, two points of land, at ſome diſtance beyond the Eaſtern head, opened off it in the direction of South, 37° Eaſt. I was now well aſſured, of what I had believed before, that this was the

country

1778. September. country of the Tſchutſki, or the North Eaſt coaſt of Aſia; and that thus far Beering proceeded in 1728; that is, to this head which Muller ſays is called *Serdze Kamen*, on account of a rock upon it, ſhaped like a heart. But I conceive, that Mr. Muller's knowledge of the geography of theſe parts is very imperfect. There are many elevated rocks upon this Cape, and poſſibly ſome one or other of them may have the ſhape of a heart. It is a pretty lofty promontory, with a ſteep rocky cliff facing the ſea; and lies in the latitude of 67° 3′, and in the longitude of 188° 11′. To the Eaſtward of it, the coaſt is high and bold; but to the Weſtward it is low, and trends North North Weſt, and North Weſt by Weſt; which is nearly its direction all the way to Cape North. The ſoundings are every where the ſame at the ſame diſtance from the ſhore, which is alſo the caſe on the oppoſite ſhore of America. The greateſt depth we found in ranging along it was twenty-three fathoms. And, in the night, or in foggy weather, the ſoundings are no bad guide in ſailing along either of theſe ſhores.

Wedneſ. 2. At eight o'clock in the morning of the 2d, the moſt advanced land to the South Eaſt, bore South, 25° Eaſt; and from this point of view had the appearance of being an iſland. But the thick ſnow ſhowers, which ſucceeded one another pretty faſt, and ſettled upon the land, hid great part of the coaſt at this time from our ſight. Soon after, the ſun, whoſe face we had not ſeen for near five days, broke out at the intervals between the ſhowers; and, in ſome meaſure, freed the coaſt from the fog, ſo that we had a ſight of it, and found the whole to be connected. The wind ſtill continued at North, the air was cold, and the mercury in the thermometer never roſe above 35°, and was ſometimes as low as 30°. At noon the obſerved latitude was 66° 37′,

Cape

This appears Cape Serdze Kamen *bearing S.50°E. dist 4 lea.*

View *of* Cape Serdze Kamen *bearing S.° dist. 6 miles*

View *of the* Coast *of* ASIA *when the N.E.* part *of the EAST CAPE bears E.S.E. distant 3¾ lea.*

View *of the* Coast *of* KAMTSCHATKA, Cheepoonskoi Nofs *bearing W.S.W. dist 8 or 10 lea.*

Thus appeared Cheepoonskoi Nofs *bearing S.59°W. dist 7 lea.*

View *of the* Coast *of* KAMTSCHATKA *when* Paratoonka Mount *bears S.W.b.W and the* North Head *of the* Entrance *into* AWATSKA Bay *N.N.W. 2 miles distant.*

Cape Serdze Kamen bore North, 52° Weſt, thirteen leagues diſtant; the Southernmoſt point of land in ſight South, 41° Eaſt; the neareſt part of the coaſt two leagues diſtant; and our depth of water twenty-two fathoms. 1778. September.

We had now fair weather and ſunſhine; and as we ranged along the coaſt, at the diſtance of four miles, we ſaw ſeveral of the inhabitants, and ſome of their habitations, which looked like little hillocks of earth. In the evening we paſſed the *Eaſtern Cape*, or the point above mentioned; from which the coaſt changes its direction, and trends South Weſt. It is the ſame point of land which we had paſſed on the 11th of Auguſt. They who believed implicitly in Mr. Stæhlin's map, then thought it the Eaſt point of his iſland Alaſchka; but we had, by this time, ſatisfied ourſelves, that it is no other than the Eaſtern promontory of Aſia; and probably the proper *Tſchukotſkoi Noſs*, though the promontory, to which Beering gave that name, is farther to the South Weſt.

Though Mr. Muller, in his map of the Ruſſian Diſcoveries, places the Tſchukotſkoi Noſs nearly in 75° of latitude, and extends it ſomewhat to the Eaſtward of this Cape, it appears to me, that he had no good authority for ſo doing. Indeed his own accounts, or rather Deſhneff's *, of the diſtance between the Noſs, and the river Anadir, cannot be reconciled with this very Northerly poſition. But as I hope to viſit theſe parts again, I ſhall leave the diſcuſſion of this point till then. In the mean time, I muſt conclude, as Beering did before me, that this is the moſt Eaſtern point of Aſia.

* Avec le vent le plus favorable, on peut aller par mer de cette pointe (des Tſchuktſchis), juſqu'à l'Anadir en trois fois 24 heures; & par terre le chemin ne peut guère être plus long. Muller, p. 13.

1778. September. It is a peninſula of conſiderable height, joined to the continent by a very low, and, to appearance, narrow neck of land. It ſhews a ſteep rocky cliff next the ſea; and off the very point are ſome rocks like ſpires. It is ſituated in the latitude of 66° 6′, and in the longitude of 190° 22′; and is diſtant, from Cape Prince of Wales, on the American coaſt, thirteen leagues, in the direction of North, 53° Weſt. The land about this promontory is compoſed of hills and vallies. The former terminate at the ſea in ſteep rocky points, and the latter in low ſhores. The hills ſeemed to be naked rocks; but the vallies had a greeniſh hue, but deſtitute of tree or ſhrub.

After paſſing the Cape, I ſteered South Weſt half Weſt, for the Northern point of St. Lawrence Bay, in which we had anchored on the 10th of laſt month. We reached it by eight Thurſday 3. o'clock next morning, and ſaw ſome of the inhabitants at the place where I had ſeen them before, as well as ſeveral others on the oppoſite ſide of the bay. None of them, however, attempted to come off to us; which ſeemed a little extraordinary, as the weather was favourable enough; and thoſe whom we had lately viſited had no reaſon, that I know of, to diſlike our company. Theſe people muſt be the Tſchutſki; a nation that, at the time Mr. Muller wrote, the Ruſſians had not been able to conquer. And, from the whole of their conduct with us, it appears that they have not, as yet, brought them under ſubjection; though it is obvious that they muſt have a trade with the Ruſſians, either directly, or by means of ſome neighbouring nation; as we cannot otherwiſe account for their being in poſſeſſion of the ſpontoons, in particular, of which we took notice.

This

This Bay of *St. Laurence* * is, at leaſt, five leagues broad at the entrance, and four leagues deep, narrowing toward the bottom, where it appeared to be tolerably well ſheltered from the ſea-winds, provided there be ſufficient depth of water for ſhips. I did not wait to examine it, although I was very deſirous of finding an harbour in thoſe parts, to which I might reſort next ſpring. But I wanted one where wood might be got, and I knew that none was to be found here. From the South point of this bay, which lies in the latitude of 65° 30′, the coaſt trends Weſt by South, for about nine leagues, and there forms a deep bay, or river; or elſe the land there is ſo low that we could not ſee it. 1778. September.

At one in the afternoon, in the direction of our courſe, we ſaw what was firſt taken for a rock; but it proved to be a dead whale, which ſome natives of the Aſiatic coaſt had killed, and were towing aſhore. They ſeemed to conceal themſelves behind the fiſh to avoid being ſeen by us. This was unneceſſary; for we purſued our courſe, without taking any notice of them.

At day-break on the 4th, I hauled to the North Weſt, in order to get a nearer view of the inlet ſeen the preceding day; but the wind, ſoon after, veering to that direction, I gave up the deſign; and, ſteering to the Southward along the coaſt, paſt two bays, each about two leagues deep. The Northernmoſt lies before a hill, which is remarkable by being rounder than any other upon the coaſt. And there is an iſland lying before the other. It may be doubted, whether there be a ſufficient depth for ſhips in either of theſe bays, as we always met with ſhoal water, when we edged Friday 4.

* Captain Cook gives it this name, having anchored in it on St. Laurence's day, Auguſt 10. It is remarkable, that Beering ſailed paſt this very place on the 10th of Auguſt 1728; on which account, the neighbouring iſland was named by him after the ſame Saint.

1778. September. in for the ſhore. The country here is exceedingly hilly and naked. In ſeveral places on the low ground, next the ſea, were the dwellings of the natives; and near all of them were erected ſtages of bones ſuch as before deſcribed. Theſe may be ſeen at a great diſtance, on account of their whiteneſs.

At noon the latitude was 64° 38′, and the longitude 188° 15′; the Southernmoſt point of the main in ſight bore South, 48° Weſt; and the neareſt ſhore about three or four leagues diſtant. By this time, the wind had veered again to the North, and blew a gentle breeze. The weather was clear, and the air cold. I did not follow the direction of the coaſt, as I found that it took a Weſterly direction toward the Gulf of Anadir, into which I had no inducement to go, but ſteered to the Southward, in order to get a ſight of the Iſland of St. Laurence, diſcovered by Beering; which accordingly ſhewed itſelf, and, at eight o'clock in the evening, it bore South, 20° Eaſt; by eſtimation, eleven leagues diſtant. At the ſame time, the Southernmoſt point of the main land bore South, 83° Weſt, diſtant twelve leagues. I take this to be the point which Beering calls the Eaſt Point of Suchotſki, or *Cape Tſchukotſkoi*; a name which he gave it, and with propriety, becauſe it was from this part of the coaſt that the natives came off to him, who called themſelves of the nation of the Tſchutſki. I make its latitude to be 64° 13′, and its longitude 186° 36′.

In juſtice to the memory of Beering, I muſt ſay, that he has delineated the coaſt very well, and fixed the latitude and longitude of the points better than could be expected from the methods he had to go by. This judgment is not formed from Mr. Muller's account of the voyage, or the chart prefixed to his book; but from Dr. Campbell's account of it in his

his edition of Harris's Collection*, and a map thereto annexed, which is both more circumſtantial and accurate than that of Mr. Muller. 1778. September.

The more I was convinced of my being now upon the coaſt of Aſia, the more I was at a loſs to reconcile Mr. Stæhlin's map of the New Northern Archipelago with my obſervations; and I had no way to account for the great difference, but by ſuppoſing, that I had miſtaken ſome part of what he calls the Iſland of Alaſchka for the American continent, and had miſſed the channel that ſeparates them. Admitting even this, there would ſtill have been a conſiderable difference. It was with me a matter of ſome conſequence, to clear up this point the preſent ſeaſon, that I might have but one object in view the next. And, as theſe Northern iſles are repreſented by him as abounding with wood, I was in hopes, if I ſhould find them, of getting a ſupply of that article, which we now began to be in great want of on board.

With theſe views, I ſteered over for the American coaſt; and, at five in the afternoon, the next day, ſaw land bearing South three quarters Eaſt, which we took to be Anderſon's Iſland, or ſome other land near it, and therefore did not wait to examine it. On the 6th, at four in the morning, we got ſight of the American coaſt near Sledge Iſland; and at ſix, the ſame evening, this iſland bore North, 6° Eaſt, ten leagues diſtant; and the Eaſternmoſt land in ſight North, 49° Eaſt. If any part of what I had ſuppoſed to be American coaſt, could poſſibly be the iſland of Alaſchka, it was that now before us; and in that caſe, I muſt have miſſed the channel between it and the main, by ſteering to Saturday 5. Sunday 6.

* Vol. ii. p. 1016, &c.

1778. September. the Weſt, inſtead of the Eaſt, after we firſt fell in with it. I was not, therefore, at a loſs where to go, in order to clear up theſe doubts.

Monday 7. At eight in the evening of the 7th, we had got cloſe in with the land, Sledge Iſland bearing North 85° Weſt, eight or nine leagues diſtant; and the Eaſtern part of the coaſt North 70° Eaſt, with high land in the direction of Eaſt by North, ſeemingly at a great diſtance beyond the point. At this time we ſaw a light aſhore; and two canoes, filled with people, coming off toward us. I brought to, that they might have time to come up. But it was to no purpoſe; for, reſiſting all the ſigns of friendſhip we could exhibit, they kept at the diſtance of a quarter of a mile; ſo that we left them, and purſued our courſe along the coaſt.

Tueſday 8. At one in the morning of the 8th, finding the water ſhoal pretty faſt, we dropped anchor in ten fathoms, where we lay until day-light, and then reſumed our courſe along the coaſt, which we found to trend Eaſt, and Eaſt half South. At ſeven in the evening, we were abreaſt of a point, lying in the latitude of 64° 21′, and in the longitude of 197°; beyond which the coaſt takes a more Northerly direction. At eight, this point, which obtained the name of *Cape Darby*, bore South 62° Weſt; the Northernmoſt land in ſight, North 32° Eaſt; and the neareſt ſhore three miles diſtant. In this ſituation we anchored in thirteen fathoms water, over a muddy bottom.

Wedneſ. 9. Next morning, at day-break, we weighed, and ſailed along the coaſt. Two iſlands, as we ſuppoſed them to be, were at that time ſeen; the one bearing South 70° Eaſt, and the other Eaſt. Soon after, we found ourſelves upon a coaſt covered with wood; an agreeable ſight, to which, of late,

we had not been accuſtomed. As we advanced to the North, we raiſed land in the direction of North Eaſt half North; which proved to be a continuation of the coaſt we were upon. We alſo ſaw high land over the iſlands, ſeemingly at a good diſtance beyond them. This was thought to be the continent, and the other land the Iſland of Alaſchka. But it was already doubtful, whether we ſhould find a paſſage between them; for the water ſhoaled inſenſibly as we advanced farther to the North. In this ſituation, two boats were ſent to ſound before the ſhips; and I ordered the Diſcovery to lead, keeping nearly in the mid channel, between the coaſt on our larboard, and the Northernmoſt iſland on our ſtarboard. Thus we proceeded till three in the afternoon; when, having paſſed the iſland, we had not more than three fathoms and an half of water; and the Reſolution, at one time, brought the mud up from the bottom. More water was not to be found in any part of the channel; for, with the ſhips and boats, we had tried it from ſide to ſide. 1778. September.

I therefore thought it high time to return; eſpecially as the wind was in ſuch a quarter, that we muſt ply back. But what I dreaded moſt was the wind increaſing, and raiſing the ſea into waves, ſo as to put the ſhips in danger of ſtriking. At this time, a head-land on the Weſt ſhore, which is diſtinguiſhed by the name of *Bald Head*, bore North by Weſt, one league diſtant. The coaſt beyond it extended as far as North Eaſt by North, where it ſeemed to end in a point; behind which the coaſt of the high land, ſeen over the iſlands, ſtretched itſelf; and ſome thought they could trace where it joined. On the Weſt ſide of Bald Head, the ſhore forms a bay, in the bottom of which is a low beach, where we ſaw a number of huts or habitations of the natives.

Having

1778. September. Thurſday 10. Having continued to ply back all night, by day-break the next morning we had got into ſix fathoms water. At nine o'clock, being about a league from the Weſt ſhore, I took two boats, and landed, attended by Mr. King, to ſeek wood and water. We landed where the coaſt projects out into a bluff head, compoſed of perpendicular *ſtrata* of a rock of a dark blue colour, mixed with quartz and glimmer. There joins to the beach a narrow border of land, now covered with long graſs, and where we met with ſome *angelica*. Beyond this, the ground riſes abruptly. At the top of this elevation, we found a heath, abounding with a variety of berries; and further on, the country was level, and thinly covered with ſmall ſpruce trees; and birch and willows no bigger than broom ſtuff. We obſerved tracks of deer and foxes on the beach; on which alſo lay a great quantity of drift-wood; and there was no want of freſh water. I returned on board, with an intention to bring the ſhips to an anchor here; but the wind then veering to North Eaſt, which blew rather on this ſhore, I ſtretched over to the oppoſite one, in the expectation of finding wood there alſo, and anchored at eight o'clock in the evening, under the South end of the Northernmoſt iſland: ſo we then ſuppoſed it to

Friday 11. be; but, next morning, we found it to be a peninſula, united to the continent by a low neck of land, on each ſide of which the coaſt forms a bay. We plied into the Southernmoſt, and about noon anchored in five fathoms water, over a bottom of mud; the point of the peninſula, which obtained the name of *Cape Denbigh*, bearing North 68° Weſt, three miles diſtant.

Several people were ſeen upon the peninſula; and one man came off in a ſmall canoe. I gave him a knife, and a few beads, with which he ſeemed well pleaſed. Having made

made ſigns to him to bring us ſomething to eat, he immediately left us, and paddled toward the ſhore. But, meeting another man coming off, who happened to have two dried ſalmon, he got them from him; and on returning to the ſhip, would give them to no body but me. Some of our people thought that he aſked for me under the name of *Capitane*; but in this they were probably miſtaken. He knew who had given him the knife and beads, but I do not ſee how he could know that I was the Captain. Others of the natives, ſoon after, came off, and exchanged a few dry fiſh, for ſuch trifles as they could get, or we had to give them. They were moſt deſirous of knives; and they had no diſlike to tobacco. 1778. September.

After dinner, Lieutenant Gore was ſent to the peninſula, to ſee if wood and water were there to be got; or rather water; for the whole beach round the bay ſeemed to be covered with drift-wood. At the ſame time, a boat was ſent from each ſhip, to ſound round the bay; and, at three in the afternoon, the wind freſhening at North Eaſt, we weighed, in order to work farther in. But it was ſoon found to be impoſſible, on account of the ſhoals, which extended quite round the bay, to the diſtance of two or three miles from the ſhore; as the officers, who had been ſent to ſound, reported. We, therefore, kept ſtanding off and on with the ſhips, waiting for Mr. Gore, who returned about eight o'clock, with the launch laden with wood.

He reported, that there was but little freſh water; and that wood was difficult to be got at, by reaſon of the boats grounding at ſome diſtance from the beach. This being the caſe, I ſtood back to the other ſhore; and, at eight o'clock the next morning, ſent all the boats, and a party of men, Saturday 12.

1778. September. with an officer, to get wood from the place where I had landed two days before. We continued, for a while, to ſtand on and off with the ſhips; but, at length, came to an anchor in one-fourth leſs than five fathoms, half a league from the coaſt, the South point of which bore South 26° Weſt; and Bald Head, North 60° Eaſt, nine leagues diſtant. Cape Denbigh bore South 72° Eaſt, twenty-ſix miles diſtant; and the iſland under the Eaſt ſhore, to the Southward of Cape Denbigh, named *Beſborough Iſland*, South 52° Eaſt, fifteen leagues diſtant.

As this was a very open road, and conſequently not a ſafe ſtation, I reſolved not to wait to complete water, as that would require ſome time; but only to ſupply the ſhips with wood, and then to go in ſearch of a more convenient place for the other article. We took off the drift-wood that lay upon the beach; and as the wind blew along ſhore, the boats could ſail both ways, which enabled us to make great diſpatch.

In the afternoon, I went aſhore, and walked a little into the country; which, where there was no wood, was covered with heath and other plants, ſome of which produce berries in abundance. All the berries were ripe; the hurtle-berries too much ſo; and hardly a ſingle plant was in flower. The underwood, ſuch as birch, willows, and alders, rendered it very troubleſome walking amongſt the trees, which were all ſpruce, and none of them above ſix or eight inches in diameter. But we found ſome lying upon the beach, more than twice this ſize. All the drift-wood in theſe Northern parts was fir. I ſaw not a ſtick of any other ſort.

Sunday 13. Next day, a family of the natives came near to the place where we were taking off wood. I know not how many there

there were at firſt; but I ſaw only the huſband, the wife, and their child; and a fourth perſon who bore the human ſhape, and that was all; for he was the moſt deformed cripple I had ever ſeen or heard of. The other man was almoſt blind; and neither he, nor his wife, were ſuch good-looking people as we had ſometimes ſeen amongſt the natives of this coaſt. The under-lips of both were bored; and they had in their poſſeſſion ſome ſuch glaſs beads as I had met with before amongſt their neighbours. But iron was their beloved article. For four knives, which we had made out of an old iron hoop, I got from them near four hundred pounds weight of fiſh, which they had caught on this or the preceding day. Some were trout, and the reſt were, in ſize and taſte, ſomewhat between a mullet and a herring. I gave the child, who was a girl, a few beads; on which the mother burſt into tears, then the father, then the cripple, and, at laſt, to complete the concert, the girl herſelf. But this muſic continued not long*. Before night, we had got the

1778. September.

* Captain King has communicated the following account of his interview with the ſame family. "On the 12th, while I attended the wooding party, a canoe full of natives approached us; and, beckoning them to land, an elderly man and woman came on ſhore. I gave the woman a ſmall knife, making her underſtand, that I would give her a much larger one for ſome fiſh. She made ſigns to me to follow her. I had proceeded with them about a mile, when the man, in croſſing a ſtony beach, fell down, and cut his foot very much. This made me ſtop; upon which the woman pointed to the man's eyes, which, I obſerved, were covered with a thick, white film. He afterward kept cloſe to his wife, who apprized him of the obſtacles in his way. The woman had a little child on her back, covered with the hood of her jacket: and which I took for a bundle, till I heard it cry. At about two miles diſtance we came to their open ſkin boat, which was turned on its ſide, the convex part toward the wind, and ſerved for their houſe. I was now made to perform a ſingular operation on the man's eyes. Firſt, I was directed to hold my breath; afterward, to breathe on the diſeaſed eyes; and next, to ſpit on them. The woman then took both my hands, and preſſing them to his ſtomach, held them there for ſome time, while ſhe related ſome calamitous hiſtory of her family; pointing ſometimes to her huſband,

1778. September. the ſhips amply ſupplied with wood; and had carried on board about twelve tons of water to each.

Monday 14. On the 14th, a party of men were ſent on ſhore to cut brooms, which we were in want of, and the branches of ſpruce-trees for brewing beer. Toward noon, every body was taken on board; for the wind, freſhening, had raiſed ſuch a ſurf on the beach, that the boats could not continue to land without great difficulty. Some doubts being ſtill entertained, whether the coaſt we were now upon belonged to an iſland, or the American continent; and the ſhallownefs of the water putting it out of our power to determine this with our ſhips, I ſent Lieutenant King, with two boats under his command, to make ſuch ſearches as might leave no room for a variety of opinions on the ſubTueſday 15. ject *. Next day, the ſhips removed over to the bay, which is

ſometimes to a frightful cripple belonging to the family, and ſometimes to her child. I purchaſed all the fiſh they had, conſiſting of very fine ſalmon, ſalmon-trout, and mullet; which were delivered moſt faithfully to the man I ſent for them. The man was about five feet two inches high, and well made; his colour, of a light copper; his hair black and ſhort, and with little beard. He had two holes in his under-lip, but no ornaments in them. The woman was ſhort and ſquat, with a plump round face; wore a deer-ſkin jacket with a large hood; and had on wide boots. The teeth of both were black, and ſeemed as if they had been filed down level with the gums. The woman was punctured from the lip to the chin."

* Captain King has been ſo good as to communicate his inſtructions on this occaſion, and the particulars of the fatigue he underwent, in carrying them into execution:

"You are to proceed to the Northward as far as the extreme point we ſaw on "Wedneſday laſt, or a little further, if you think it neceſſary; land there, and en- "deavour, from the heights, to diſcover whether the land you are then upon, ſup- "poſed to be the iſland of Alaſchka, is really an iſland, or joins to the land on the "Eaſt, ſuppoſed to be the continent of America. If the former, you are to ſatisfy "yourſelf with the depth of water in the channel between them, and which way the "flood-tide comes. But if you find the two lands connected, loſe no time in found- "ing; but make the beſt of your way back to the ſhip, which you will find at anchor "near the point of land we anchored under on Friday laſt. If you perceive any likeli-

"hood

is on the South Eaſt ſide of Cape Denbigh, where we anchored in the afternoon. Soon after, a few of the natives came off in their ſmall canoes, and bartered ſome dried ſalmon for ſuch trifles as our people had to give them. 1778. September.

" hood of a change of weather for the worſe, you are, in that caſe, to return to the " ſhip, although you have not performed the ſervice you are ſent upon. And, at any " rate, you are not to remain longer upon it than four or five days; but the ſooner " it is done the better. If any unforeſeen, or unavoidable accident, ſhould force the " ſhips off the coaſt, ſo that they cannot return at a reaſonable time, the rendezvous " is at the harbour of Samganoodha; that is, the place where we laſt completed our " water."

" JAMES COOK."

" *To Lieutenant King.*"

" Our cutter being hoiſted out, and the ſignal made for the Diſcovery's, at eight at night, on the 14th, we ſet out. It was a little unlucky, that the boats crews had been much fatigued during the whole day in bringing things from the ſhore. They pulled ſtoutly, without reſt or intermiſſion, toward the land, till one o'clock in the morning of the 15th. I wanted much to have got cloſe to it, to have had the advantage of the wind, which had very regularly, in the evening, blown from the land, and in the day-time down the Sound, from the North North Eaſt, and was contrary to our courſe; but the men were, at this time, too much fatigued to preſs them farther. We, therefore, ſet our ſails, and ſtood acroſs the bay, which the coaſt forms to the Weſt of Baldhead, and ſteered for it. But, as I expected, by three o'clock, the wind headed us; and, as it was in vain to endeavour to fetch Baldhead with our ſails, we again took to the oars. The Diſcovery's boat (being a heavy king's-built cutter, while ours was one from Deal) had, in the night-time, detained us very much, and now we ſoon pulled out of ſight of her; nor would I wait, being in great hopes to reach the extreme point that was in ſight, time enough to aſcend the heights before dark, as the weather was at this time remarkably clear and fine; and we could ſee to a great diſtance. By two o'clock we had got within two miles of Baldhead, under the lee of the high land, and in ſmooth water; but, at the moment our object was nearly attained, all the men, but two, were ſo overcome with fatigue and ſleep, that my utmoſt endeavours to make them put on were ineffectual. They, at length, dropped their oars, quite exhauſted, and fell aſleep in the bottom of the boat. Indeed, conſidering that they had ſet out fatigued, and had now been ſixteen hours, out of the eighteen ſince they left the ſhip, pulling in a poppling ſea, it was no wonder that their ſtrength and ſpirits ſhould be worn out for want of ſleep and refreſhments. The two gentlemen, who were with me, and myſelf, were now obliged to lay hold of the oars; and, by a little after three, we landed between the Baldhead and a projecting point to the Eaſtward."

1778. September. At day-break, on the 16th, nine men, each in his canoe, paid us a viſit. They approached the ſhip with ſome caution; and evidently came with no other view than to gratify their curioſity. They drew up abreaſt of each other, under our ſtern, and gave us a ſong; while one of their number beat upon a kind of drum, and another made a thouſand antic motions with his hands and body. There was, however, nothing ſavage, either in the ſong, or in the geſtures that accompanied it. None of us could perceive any difference between theſe people, either as to their ſize or features, and thoſe whom we had met with on every other part of the coaſt, King George's Sound excepted. Their clothing, which conſiſted principally of deer-ſkins, was made after the ſame faſhion; and they obſerved the cuſtom of boring their under-lips, and fixing ornaments to them.

The dwellings of theſe people were ſeated cloſe to the beach. They conſiſt ſimply of a ſloping roof, without any ſide-walls, compoſed of logs, and covered with graſs and earth. The floor is alſo laid with logs; the entrance is at one end; the fire-place juſt within it; and a ſmall hole is made near the door to let out the ſmoke.

After breakfaſt, a party of men were ſent to the peninſula for brooms and ſpruce. At the ſame time, half the remainder of the people in each ſhip had leave to go and pick berries. Theſe returned on board at noon, when the other half went on the ſame errand. The berries to be got here were wild currant-berries, hurtle-berries, partridge-berries, and heath-berries. I alſo went aſhore myſelf, and walked over part of the peninſula. In ſeveral places there was very good graſs; and I hardly ſaw a ſpot, on which ſome vegetable was not growing. The low land which

which connects this peninsula with the continent, is full of narrow creeks; and abounds with ponds of water, some of which were already frozen over. There were a great many geese and bustards; but so shy, that it was not possible to get within musket-shot of them. We also met with some snipes; and on the high ground were partridges of two sorts. Where there was any wood, musquitoes were in plenty. Some of the officers, who travelled farther than I did, met with a few of the natives of both sexes, who treated them with civility. 1778. September.

It appeared to me, that this peninsula must have been an island in remote times; for there were marks of the sea having flowed over the isthmus. And, even now, it appeared to be kept out by a bank of sand, stones, and wood thrown up by the waves. By this bank it was evident, that the land was here encroaching upon the sea, and it was easy to trace its gradual formation.

About seven in the evening, Mr. King returned from his expedition; and reported, that he proceeded with the boats about three or four leagues farther than the ships had been able to go; that he then landed on the West side; that, from the heights, he could see the two coasts join, and the inlet to terminate in a small river or creek, before which were banks of sand or mud; and every where shoal water. The land too, was low and swampy for some distance to the Northward; then it swelled into hills; and the complete junction of those, on each side of the inlet, was easily traced.

From the elevated spot on which Mr. King surveyed the Sound, he could distinguish many extensive vallies, with rivers running through them, well wooded, and bounded by hills of a gentle ascent and moderate height. One of these rivers

to

1778. September. to the North Weſt appeared to be conſiderable; and, from its direction, he was inclined to think, that it emptied itſelf into the ſea at the head of the bay. Some of his people, who penetrated beyond this into the country, found the trees larger, the farther they advanced.

In honour of Sir Fletcher Norton *, Speaker of the Houſe of Commons, and Mr. King's near relation, I named this inlet *Norton's Sound.* It extends to the Northward as far as latitude of 64° 55′. The bay, in which we were now at anchor, lies on the South Eaſt ſide of it; and is called by the natives *Chacktoole.* It is but an indifferent ſtation; being expoſed to the South and South Weſt winds. Nor is there a harbour in all this Sound. But we were ſo fortunate as to have the wind from the North and North Eaſt all the time, with remarkable fine weather. This gave us an opportunity to make no leſs than ſeventy-ſeven ſets of lunar obſervations, between the 6th and 17th incluſive. The mean reſult of theſe made the longitude of the anchoring-place, on the Weſt ſide of the Sound, to be - 197° 13′

Latitude - - - -	64° 31′
Variation of the compaſs - -	25° 45′ Eaſt.
Dip of the needle - - -	76° 25′

Of the tides it was obſerved, that the night-flood roſe about two or three feet, and that the day-flood was hardly perceivable.

Having now fully ſatisfied myſelf, that Mr. Stæhlin's map muſt be erroneous; and, having reſtored the American continent to that ſpace which he had occupied with his imaginary iſland of Alaſchka, it was high time to think of leaving theſe Northern regions, and to retire to ſome place

* Now Lord Grantley.

during

during the winter, where I might procure refreſhments for my people, and a ſmall ſupply of proviſions. Petropaulowſka, or the harbour of St. Peter and St. Paul, in Kamtſchatka, did not appear likely to furniſh either the one or the other, for ſo large a number of men. I had, beſides, other reaſons for not repairing thither at this time. The firſt, and on which all the others depended, was the great diſlike I had to lie inactive for ſix or ſeven months; which would have been the neceſſary conſequence of wintering in any of theſe Northern parts. No place was ſo conveniently within our reach, where we could expect to have our wants relieved, as the Sandwich Iſlands. To them, therefore, I determined to proceed. But before this could be carried into execution, a ſupply of water was neceſſary. With this view, I reſolved to ſearch the American coaſt for a harbour, by proceeding along it to the Southward, and thus endeavour to connect the ſurvey of this part of it, with that lying immediately to the North of Cape Newenham. If I failed in finding a harbour there, my plan was then to proceed to Samganoodha, which was fixed upon as our place of rendezvous, in caſe of ſeparation. 1778. September.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

Diſcoveries after leaving Norton Sound.—Stuart's Iſland.—Cape Stephens.—Point Shallow-Water.—Shoals on the American Coaſt.—Clerke's Iſland.—Gore's Iſland.—Pinnacle Iſland.—Arrival at Oonalaſhka.—Intercourſe with the Natives and Ruſſian Traders.—Charts of the Ruſſian Diſcoveries, communicated by Mr. Iſmyloff.—Their Errors pointed out.—Situation of the Iſlands viſited by the Ruſſians.—Account of their Settlement at Oonalaſhka.—Of the Natives of the Iſland.—Their Perſons.—Dreſs.—Ornaments.—Food.—Houſes and domeſtic Utenſils.—Manufactures.—Manner of producing Fire.—Canoes.—Fiſhing and Hunting Implements.—Fiſhes, and Sea Animals.—Sea and Water Fowls, and Land Birds.—Land Animals, and Vegetables.—Manner of burying the Dead.—Reſemblance of the Natives on this Side of America to the Greenlanders and Eſquimaux.—Tides.—Obſervations for determining the Longitude of Oonalaſhka.

1778. September. Thurſday 17. HAVING weighed, on the 17th in the morning, with a light breeze at Eaſt, we ſteered to the Southward, and attempted to paſs within Beſborough Iſland; but, though it lies ſix or ſeven miles from the continent, were prevented, by meeting with ſhoal water. As we had but little wind all the

the day, it was dark before we paſſed the iſland; and the night was ſpent under an eaſy ſail. 1778. September.

We reſumed our courſe, at day-break on the 18th, along the coaſt. At noon, we had no more than five fathoms water. At this time the latitude was 63° 37′. Beſborough Iſland now bore North 42° Eaſt; the Southernmoſt land in ſight, which proved alſo to be an iſland, South 66° Weſt; the paſſage between it and the main, South 40° Weſt; and the neareſt land about two miles diſtant. I continued to ſteer for this paſſage, until the boats, which were ahead, made the ſignal for having no more than three fathoms water. On this we hauled without the iſland; and made the ſignal for the Reſolution's boat to keep between the ſhips and the ſhore. Friday 18.

This iſland, which obtained the name of *Stuart's Iſland*, lies in the latitude of 63° 35′, and ſeventeen leagues from Cape Denbigh, in the direction of South 27° Weſt. It is ſix or ſeven leagues in circuit. Some parts of it are of a middling height; but, in general, it is low; with ſome rocks lying off the Weſtern part. The coaſt of the continent is, for the moſt part, low land; but we ſaw high land up the country. It forms a point, oppoſite the iſland, which was named Cape *Stephens*, and lies in latitude 63° 33′, and in longitude 197° 41′. Some drift-wood was ſeen upon the ſhores, both of the iſland and of the continent; but not a tree was perceived growing upon either. One might anchor, upon occaſion, between the North Eaſt ſide of this iſland and the continent, in a depth of five fathoms, ſheltered from Weſterly, Southerly, and Eaſterly winds. But this ſtation would be wholly expoſed to the Northerly winds, the land, in that direction, being at too great a diſtance to afford any ſecurity. Before we reached Stuart's Iſland, we

1778. September. paſſed two ſmall iſlands, lying between us and the main; and as we ranged along the coaſt, ſeveral people appeared upon the ſhore, and, by ſigns, ſeemed to invite us to approach them.

As ſoon as we were without the iſland, we ſteered South by Weſt, for the Southernmoſt point of the continent in ſight, till eight o'clock in the evening, when, having ſhoaled the water from ſix fathoms to leſs than four, I tacked, and ſtood to the Northward, into five fathoms, and then ſpent the night lying off and on. At the time we tacked, the Southernmoſt point of land, the ſame which is mentioned above, and was named *Point Shallow-Water*, bore South half Eaſt, ſeven leagues diſtant.

We reſumed our courſe to the Southward at day-break
Saturday 19. next morning; but ſhoal water obliged us to haul more to the Weſtward. At length, we got ſo far advanced upon the bank, that we could not hold a North North Weſt courſe, meeting ſometimes with only four fathoms. The wind blowing freſh at Eaſt North Eaſt, it was high time to look for deep water, and to quit a coaſt, upon which we could no longer navigate with any degree of ſafety. I therefore hauled the wind to the Northward, and gradually deepened the water to eight fathoms. At the time we hauled the wind, we were at leaſt twelve leagues from the continent, and nine to the Weſtward of Stuart's Iſland. No land was ſeen to the Southward of Point Shallow-Water, which I judge to lie in the latitude of 63°. So that between this latitude, and Shoal Neſs, in latitude 60°, the coaſt is entirely unexplored. Probably, it is acceſſible only to boats, or very ſmall veſſels; or, at leaſt, if there be channels for larger veſſels, it would require ſome time to find them; and I am of opinion, that

they muſt be looked for near the coaſt. From the maſt head, the ſea within us appeared to be chequered with ſhoals; the water was very much diſcoloured and muddy; and conſiderably freſher than at any of the places where we had lately anchored. From this I inferred, that a conſiderable river runs into the ſea, in this unknown part. 1778. September.

As ſoon as we got into eight fathoms water, I ſteered to the Weſtward, and afterward more Southerly, for the land diſcovered on the 5th, which, at noon the next day, bore South Weſt by Weſt, ten or eleven leagues diſtant. At this time, we had a freſh gale at North, with ſhowers of hail and ſnow at intervals, and a pretty high ſea; ſo that we got clear of the ſhoals but juſt in time. As I now found that the land before us lay too far to the Weſtward to be Anderſon's Iſland, I named it *Clerke's Iſland.* It lies in the latitude of 63° 15′, and in the longitude of 190° 30′. It ſeemed to be a pretty large iſland, in which are four or more hills, all connected by low ground; ſo that, at a diſtance, it looks like a group of iſlands. Near its Eaſt part lies a ſmall iſland remarkable by having upon it three elevated rocks. Not only the greater iſland, but this ſmall ſpot was inhabited. Sunday 20.

We got up to the Northern point of Clerke's Iſland about ſix o'clock, and having ranged along its coaſt till dark, brought to during the night. At day-break, next morning, we ſtood in again for the coaſt, and continued to range along it, in ſearch of a harbour, till noon; when, ſeeing no likelihood of ſucceeding, I left it, and ſteered South South Weſt, for the land which we had diſcovered on the 29th of July; having a freſh gale at North, with ſhowers of ſleet and ſnow. I remarked, that as ſoon as we opened the channel which ſeparates the two continents, cloudy weather, with Monday 21.

1778. September. ſnow ſhowers immediately commenced; whereas, all the time that we were in Norton Sound, we had, with the ſame wind, clear weather. Might not this be occaſioned by the mountains to the North of that place attracting the vapours, and hindering them to proceed any farther?

Wedneſ. 23. At day-break in the morning of the 23d, the land above mentioned appeared in ſight, bearing South Weſt, ſix or ſeven leagues diſtant. From this point of view, it reſembled a group of iſlands; but it proved to be but one, of thirty miles in extent, in the direction of North Weſt and South Eaſt; the South Eaſt end being Cape Upright, already taken notice of. The iſland is but narrow; eſpecially at the low necks of land that connect the hills. I afterward found, that it was wholly unknown to the Ruſſians; and therefore conſidering it as a diſcovery of our own, I named it *Gore's Iſland.* It appeared to be barren, and without inhabitants; at leaſt we ſaw none. Nor did we ſee ſo many birds about it, as when we firſt diſcovered it. But we ſaw ſome ſea-otters; an animal which we had not met with to the North of this latitude. Four leagues from Cape Upright, in the direction of South, 72° Weſt, lies a ſmall iſland, whoſe elevated ſummit terminates in ſeveral pinnacle rocks. On this account it was named *Pinnacle Iſland.* At two in the afternoon, after paſſing Cape Upright, I ſteered South Eaſt by South, for Samganoodha, with a gentle breeze at North North Weſt, being reſolved to ſpend no more time in ſearching for a harbour amongſt iſlands, which I now began to ſuſpect had no exiſtence; at leaſt, not in the latitude and longitude where modern map-makers have thought proper to place them.

Thurſday 24. In the evening of the 24th, the wind veered to South Weſt and South, and increaſed to a freſh gale.

We

We continued to ſtretch to the Eaſtward, till eight o'clock in the morning of the 25th, when, in the latitude of 58° 32′, and in the longitude of 191° 10′, we tacked and ſtood to the Weſt; and ſoon after, the gale increaſing, we were reduced to two courſes, and cloſe-reefed main top-ſails. Not long after, the Reſolution ſprung a leak, under the ſtarboard buttock, which filled the ſpirit-room with water, before it was diſcovered; and it was ſo conſiderable as to keep one pump conſtantly employed. We durſt not put the ſhip upon the other tack, for fear of getting upon the ſhoals that lie to the North Weſt of Cape Newenham; but continued ſtanding to the Weſt, till ſix in the evening of the 26th, when we wore and ſtood to the Eaſtward; and then the leak no longer troubled us. This proved, that it was above the water line; which was no ſmall ſatisfaction. The gale was now over; but the wind remained at South and South Weſt for ſome days longer.

1778. September. Friday 25.

Saturday 26.

At length, on the 2d of October, at day-break, we ſaw the iſland of Oonalaſhka, bearing South Eaſt. But as this was to us a new point of view, and the land was obſcured by a thick haze, we were not ſure of our ſituation till noon, when the obſerved latitude determined it. As all harbours were alike to me, provided they were equally ſafe and convenient, I hauled into a bay, that lies ten miles to the Weſtward of Samganoodha, known by the name of *Egoochſhac*; but we found very deep water; ſo that we were glad to get out again. The natives, many of whom lived here, viſited us at different times, bringing with them dried ſalmon, and other fiſh, which they exchanged with the ſeamen for tobacco. But a few days before, every ounce of tobacco that was in the ſhip had been diſtributed among them; and the quantity was not half ſufficient to anſwer their demands.

October. Friday 2.

Notwithſtanding

1778. October. Notwithſtanding this, ſo improvident a creature is an Engliſh ſailor, that they were as profuſe in making their bargains, as if we had now arrived at a port in Virginia; by which means, in leſs than eight and forty hours, the value of this article of barter was lowered above a thouſand *per cent.*

Saturday 3. At one o'clock in the afternoon of the 3d, we anchored in Samganoodha Harbour; and the next morning, the carpenters of both ſhips were ſet to work to rip off the ſheathing of and under the wale, on the ſtarboard ſide abaft. Many of the ſeams were found quite open; ſo that it was no wonder that ſo much water had found its way into the ſhip. While we lay here, we cleared the fiſh and ſpirit rooms, and the after-hold; diſpoſing things in ſuch a manner, that in caſe we ſhould happen to have any more leaks of the ſame nature, the water might find its way to the pumps. And beſides this work, and completing our water, we cleared the fore-hold to the very bottom, and took in a quantity of ballaſt.

The vegetables which we had met with, when we were here before, were now moſtly in a ſtate of decay; ſo that we were but little benefited by the great quantities of berries every where found aſhore. In order to avail ourſelves as much as poſſible of this uſeful refreſhment, one third of the people, by turns, had leave to go and pick them. Conſiderable quantities of them were alſo procured from the natives. If there were any ſeeds of the ſcurvy, in either ſhip, theſe berries, and the uſe of ſpruce beer, which they had to drink every other day, effectually eradicated them.

We

We alſo got plenty of fiſh; at firſt, moſtly ſalmon, both freſh and dried, which the natives brought us. Some of the freſh ſalmon was in high perfection; but there was one ſort, which we called hook-noſed, from the figure of its head, that was but indifferent. We drew the ſeine ſeveral times, at the head of the bay; and caught a good many ſalmon trout, and once a halibut that weighed two hundred and fifty-four pounds. The fiſhery failing, we had recourſe to hooks and lines. A boat was ſent out every morning; and ſeldom returned without eight or ten halibut; which was more than ſufficient to ſerve all our people. The halibut were excellent, and there were few who did not prefer them to ſalmon. Thus we not only procured a ſupply of fiſh for preſent conſumption, but had ſome to carry with us to ſea. This enabled us to make a conſiderable ſaving of our proviſions, which was an object of no ſmall importance. 1778. October.

On the 8th, I received by the hands of an Oonalaſhka man, named Derramouſhk, a very ſingular preſent, conſidering the place. It was a rye loaf, or rather a pye made in the form of a loaf, for it incloſed ſome ſalmon, highly ſeaſoned with pepper. This man had the like preſent for Captain Clerke, and a note for each of us, written in a character which none of us could read. It was natural to ſuppoſe, that this preſent was from ſome Ruſſians now in our neighbourhood; and therefore we ſent, by the ſame hand, to theſe our unknown friends, a few bottles of rum, wine, and porter; which we thought would be as acceptable as any thing we had beſides; and we ſoon knew, that in this we had not been miſtaken. I alſo ſent along with Derramouſhk, Corporal Lediard of the marines, an intelligent man, in order to gain ſome farther information, with orders, that if he met with any Ruſſians, he ſhould endeavour Thurſday 8.

to

1778. October. to make them underſtand, that we were Engliſh, the friends and allies of their nation.

Saturday 10. On the 10th, Lediard returned with three Ruſſian ſeamen, or furriers; who, with ſome others, reſided at Egoochſhac, where they had a dwelling-houſe, ſome ſtore-houſes, and a ſloop of about thirty tons burthen. One of theſe men was either Maſter or Mate of this veſſel; another of them wrote a very good hand, and underſtood figures; and they were all three well behaved intelligent men, and very ready to give me all the information I could deſire. But for want of an interpreter, we had ſome difficulty to underſtand each other. They appeared to have a thorough knowledge of the attempts that had been made by their countrymen to navigate the Frozen Ocean, and of the diſcoveries which had been made from Kamtſchatka, by Beering, Tſcherikoff, and Spangenberg. But they ſeemed to know no more of Lieutenant Syndo*, or Synd, than his name. Nor had they the leaſt idea what part of the world Mr. Stæhlin's map referred to, when it was laid before them. When I pointed out Kamtſchatka, and ſome other known places, upon that map, they aſked, whether I had ſeen the iſlands there laid down; and on my anſwering in the negative, one of them put his finger upon a part of this map, where a number of iſlands are repreſented, and ſaid, that he had cruiſed there for land, but never could find any. I then laid before them my own chart; and found that they were ſtrangers to every part of the American coaſt, except what lies oppoſite this iſland. One of theſe men ſaid, that he had been with Beering, in his American voyage; but muſt then have been very

* See the little that is known of Synd's voyage, accompanied with a chart, in Mr. Coxe's Ruſſian Diſcoveries, p. 300.

young, for he had not now, at the diſtance of thirty-ſeven years, the appearance of being aged. Never was there greater reſpect paid to the memory of any diſtinguiſhed perſon, than by theſe men to that of Beering. The trade in which they are engaged is very beneficial; and its being undertaken and extended to the Eaſtward of Kamtſchatka, was the immediate conſequence of the ſecond voyage of that able navigator, whoſe misfortunes proved to be the ſource of much private advantage to individuals, and of public utility to the Ruſſian nation. And yet, if his diſtreſſes had not accidentally carried him to die in the iſland which bears his name, and from whence the miſerable remnant of his ſhip's crew brought back ſufficient ſpecimens of its valuable furs, probably the Ruſſians never would have undertaken any future voyages, which could lead them to make diſcoveries in this ſea, toward the coaſt of America. Indeed, after his time, government ſeems to have paid leſs attention to this; and we owe what diſcoveries have been ſince made, principally to the enterpriſing ſpirit of private traders, encouraged, however, by the ſuperintending care of the Court of Peterſburg. The three Ruſſians having remained with me all night, viſited Captain Clerke next morning; and then left us, very well ſatisfied with the reception they had met with; promiſing to return in a few days, and to bring with them a chart of the iſlands lying between Oonalaſhka and Kamtſchatka.

1778. October.

Sunday 11.

On the 14th, in the evening, while Mr. Webber and I were at a village at a ſmall diſtance from Samganoodha, a Ruſſian landed there, who, I found, was the principal perſon amongſt his countrymen in this and the neighbouring iſlands. His name was Eraſim Gregorioff Sin Iſmyloff. He arrived in a canoe carrying three perſons, attended by

Wedneſ. 14.

1778. October. twenty or thirty other canoes, each conducted by one man I took notice, that the firſt thing they did, after landing, was to make a ſmall tent for Iſmyloff, of materials which they brought with them; and then they made others for themſelves, of their canoes and paddles, which they covered with graſs; ſo that the people of the village were at no trouble to find them lodging. Iſmyloff having invited us into his tent, ſet before us ſome dried ſalmon and berries; which, I was ſatisfied, was the beſt cheer he had. He appeared to be a ſenſible intelligent man; and I felt no ſmall mortification in not being able to converſe with him, unleſs by ſigns, aſſiſted by figures, and other characters; which however were a very great help. I deſired to ſee him on Thurſday 15. board the next day; and accordingly he came, with all his attendants. Indeed, he had moved into our neighbourhood, for the expreſs purpoſe of waiting upon us.

I was in hopes to have had by him, the chart which his three countrymen had promiſed; but I was diſappointed. However, he aſſured me I ſhould have it; and he kept his word. I found that he was very well acquainted with the geography of theſe parts, and with all the diſcoveries that had been made in them by the Ruſſians. On ſeeing the modern maps, he at once pointed out their errors. He told me, he had accompanied Lieutenant Syndo, or Synd as he called him, in his expedition to the North; and, according to his account, they did not proceed farther than the Tſchukotſkoi Nos, or rather than the bay of St. Laurence; for he pointed on our chart to the very place where I landed. From thence, he ſaid, they went to an iſland in latitude 63°, upon which they did not land, nor could he tell me its name. But I ſhould gueſs it to be the ſame to which I gave the name of Clerke's Iſland. To what place Synd went

after that, or in what manner he ſpent the two years, during which, as Iſmyloff ſaid, his reſearches laſted, he either could not or would not inform us. Perhaps he did not comprehend our inquiries about this; and yet, in almoſt every other thing, we could make him underſtand us. This created a ſuſpicion, that he had not really been in that expedition, notwithſtanding his aſſertion. 1778. October.

Both Iſmyloff and the others affirmed, that they knew nothing of the continent of America to the Northward; and that neither Lieutenant Synd, nor any other Ruſſian, had ever ſeen it of late. They call it by the ſame name which Mr. Stæhlin gives to his great iſland; that is Alaſchka. Stachtan Nitada, as it is called in the modern maps, is a name quite unknown to theſe people, natives of the iſlands as well as Ruſſians; but both of them know it by the name of America. From what we could gather from Iſmyloff and his countrymen, the Ruſſians have made ſeveral attempts to get a footing upon that part of this continent, that lies contiguous to Oonalaſhka and the adjoining iſlands, but have always been repulſed by the natives; whom they deſcribe as a very treacherous people. They mentioned two or three Captains, or Chief men, who had been murdered by them; and ſome of the Ruſſians ſhewed us wounds which, they ſaid, they had received there.

Some other information, which we got from Iſmyloff, is worth recording, whether true or falſe. He told us, that in the year 1773, an expedition had been made into the Frozen Sea in ſledges, over the ice, to three large iſlands that lie oppoſite the mouth of the river Kovyma. We were in ſome doubt, whether he did not mean the ſame expedition of

1778. October. which Muller gives an account*; and yet he wrote down the year, and marked the iſlands on the chart. But a voyage which he himſelf had performed, engaged our attention more than any other. He ſaid, that on the 12th of May 1771, he ſailed from Bolſcheretzk, in a Ruſſian veſſel, to one of the Kuril Iſlands, named Mareekan, in the latitude of 47°, where there is a harbour, and a Ruſſian ſettlement. From this iſland, he proceeded to Japan, where he ſeems to have made but a ſhort ſtay. For when the Japaneſe came to know that he and his companions were chriſtians, they made ſigns for them to be gone; but did not, ſo far as we could underſtand him, offer any inſult or force. From Japan, he got to Canton; and from thence to France, in a French ſhip. From France, he travelled to Peterſburg; and was afterward ſent out again to Kamtſchatka. What became of the veſſel in which he firſt embarked, we could not learn; nor what was the principal object of the voyage. His not being able to ſpeak one word of French, made this ſtory a little ſuſpicious. He did not even know the name of any one of the moſt common things that muſt have been in uſe every day, while he was on board the ſhip, and in France. And yet he ſeemed clear as to the times of his arriving at the different places, and of his leaving them, which he put down in writing.

* The lateſt expedition of this kind, taken notice of by Muller, was in 1724. But in juſtice to Mr. Iſmyloff, it may be proper to mention, which is done on the authority of a MS. communicated by Mr. Pennant, and the ſubſtance of which has been publiſhed by Mr. Coxe, that, ſo late as 1768, the Governor of Siberia ſent three young officers over the ice, in ſledges, to the iſlands oppoſite the mouth of the Kovyma. There ſeems no reaſon for not ſuppoſing, that a ſubſequent expedition of this ſort might alſo be undertaken in 1773. Mr. Coxe, p. 324. places the expedition on ſledges in 1764; but Mr. Pennant's MS. may be depended upon.

The

The next morning, he would fain have made me a present of a ſea-otter ſkin, which, he ſaid, was worth eighty roubles at Kamtſchatka. However, I thought proper to decline it; but I accepted of ſome dried fiſh, and ſeveral baſkets of the lily, or *ſaranne* root, which is deſcribed at large in the Hiſtory of Kamtſchatka *. In the afternoon, Mr. Iſmyloff, after dining with Captain Clerke, left us with all his retinue, promiſing to return in a few days. Accordingly, on the 19th, he made us another viſit, and brought with him the charts before mentioned, which he allowed me to copy; and the contents of which furniſh matter for the following obſervations. 1778. October. Friday 16. Monday 19.

There were two of them, both manuſcripts, and bearing every mark of authenticity. The firſt, comprehended the *Penſhinſkian Sea*; the coaſt of Tartary, as low as the latitude of 41°; the Kuril Iſlands; and the peninſula of Kamtſchatka. Since this map had been made, Wawſeelee Irkeechoff, Captain of the fleet, explored, in 1758, the coaſt of Tartary, from Okotſk, and the river Amur, to Japan, or 41° of latitude. Mr. Iſmyloff alſo informed us, that great part of the ſea-coaſt of the peninſula of Kamtſchatka had been corrected by himſelf; and deſcribed the inſtrument he made uſe of, which muſt have been a *theodolite*. He alſo informed us, that there were only two harbours fit for ſhipping, on all the Eaſt coaſt of Kamtſchatka, *viz.* the bay of *Awatſka*, and the river *Olutora*, in the bottom of the Gulf of the ſame name; that there was not a ſingle harbour upon its Weſt coaſt; and that *Yamſk* was the only one on all the Weſt ſide of the Penſchinſkian Sea, except Okotſk, till we come to the river Amur. The Kurile Iſlands afford only one har-

* Engliſh Tranſlation, p. 83, 84.

1778. October. bour; and that is on the North Eaſt ſide of Mareekan, in the latitude of 47½°; where, as I have before obſerved, the Ruſſians have a ſettlement.

The ſecond chart was, to me, the moſt intereſting; for it comprehended all the diſcoveries made by the Ruſſians to the Eaſtward of Kamtſchatka, toward America; which, if we exclude the voyage of Beering and Tſcherikoff, will amount to little or nothing. The part of the American coaſt, with which the latter fell in, is marked in this chart, between the latitude of 58° and 58½°, and 75° of longitude from Okotſk, or 218½° from Greenwich; and the place where the former anchored in 59½° of latitude, and 63½° of longitude from Okotſk, or 207° from Greenwich. To ſay nothing of the longitude, which may be erroneous from many cauſes, the latitude of the coaſt, diſcovered by theſe two navigators, eſpecially the part of it diſcovered by Tſcherikoff, differs conſiderably from the account publiſhed by Mr. Muller, and his chart. Indeed, whether Muller's chart, or this now produced by Mr. Iſmyloff, be moſt erroneous in this reſpect, it may be hard to determine; though it is not now a point worth diſcuſſing. But the iſlands that lie diſperſed between 52° and 55° of latitude, in the ſpace between Kamtſchatka and America, deſerve ſome notice. According to Mr. Iſmyloff's account, neither the number nor the ſituation of theſe iſlands is well aſcertained. He ſtruck out about one third of them, aſſuring me they had no exiſtence; and he altered the ſituation of others conſiderably; which, he ſaid, was neceſſary, from his own obſervations. And there was no reaſon to doubt about this. As theſe iſlands lie all nearly under the ſame parallel, different navigators, being miſled by their different reckonings, might eaſily miſtake one iſland, or group of iſlands, for another; and

and fancy they had made a new diſcovery, when they had only found old ones in a different poſition from that aſſigned to them by their former viſiters. 1778. October.

The iſlands of St. Macarius, St. Stephen, St. Theodore, St. Abraham, Seduction Iſland, and ſome others, which are to be found in Mr. Muller's chart, had no place in this now produced to us; nay, both Mr. Iſmyloff, and the others aſſured me, that they had been ſeveral times ſought for in vain. And yet it is difficult to believe, how Mr. Muller, from whom ſubſequent map-makers have adopted them, could place them in his chart without ſome authority. Relying, however, on the teſtimony of theſe people, whom I thought competent witneſſes, I have left them out of my chart; and made ſuch corrections amongſt the other iſlands as I was told was neceſſary. I found there was wanting another correction; for the difference of longitude, between the Bay of Awatſka, and the harbour of Samganoodha, according to aſtronomical obſervations, made at theſe two places, is greater by five degrees and a half, than it is by the chart. This error I have ſuppoſed to be infuſed throughout the whole, though it may not be ſo in reality. There was alſo an error in the latitude of ſome places; but this hardly exceeded a quarter of a degree.

I ſhall now give ſome account of the iſlands; beginning with thoſe that lie neareſt to Kamtſchatka, and reckoning the longitude from the harbour of Petropaulowſka, in the Bay of Awatſka. The firſt is *Beering's Iſland*, in 55° of latitude, and 6° of longitude. Ten leagues from the South end of this, in the direction of Eaſt by South, or Eaſt South Eaſt, lies *Maidenoi Oſtroff*, or the Copper Iſland. The next iſland is *Atakou*, laid down in 52° 45′ of latitude, and in

15°

1778. October.

15° or 16° of longitude. This iſland is about eighteen leagues in extent, in the direction of Eaſt and Weſt; and ſeems to be the ſame land which Beering fell in with, and named *Mount St. John.* But there are no iſlands about it, except two inconſiderable ones, lying three or four leagues from the Eaſt end, in the direction of Eaſt North Eaſt.

We next come to a group, conſiſting of ſix or more iſlands; two of which, *Atghka* and *Amluk* are tolerably large; and in each of them is a good harbour. The middle of this group lies in the latitude of 52° 30′, and 28° of longitude from Awatſka; and its extent, Eaſt and Weſt, is four degrees. Theſe are the iſles that Mr. Iſmyloff ſaid were to be removed four degrees to the Eaſt, which is here done. And in the ſituation they have in my chart, was a group, conſiſting of ten ſmall iſlands, which, I was told, were wholly to be ſtruck out; and alſo two iſlands lying between them and the group to which Oonalaſhka belongs. In the place of theſe two, an iſland called Amoghta (which in the chart was ſituated in the latitude of 51° 45′, and 4° of longitude to the Weſt) was brought.

Nothing more need be ſaid to ſhew how erroneous the ſituation of many of theſe iſlands may be; and for which I am in nowiſe accountable. But the poſition of the largeſt group, of which Oonalaſhka is one of the principal iſlands, and the only one in which there is a harbour, is not liable to any ſuch errors. Moſt of theſe iſlands were ſeen by us; and conſequently their latitude and longitude were pretty exactly determined; particularly the harbour of Samganoodha in Oonalaſhka, which muſt be looked upon as a fixed point. This group of iſlands may be ſaid to extend as far at Halibut Iſles, which are forty leagues from Oonalaſhka

laſhka toward the Eaſt North Eaſt. Within theſe iſles, a paſſage was marked in Iſmyloff's chart, communicating with Briſtol Bay; which converts about fifteen leagues of the coaſt, that I had ſuppoſed to belong to the continent, into an iſland, diſtinguiſhed by the name of *Ooneemak*. This paſſage might eaſily eſcape us, as we were informed that it is very narrow, ſhallow, and only to be navigated through with boats, or very ſmall veſſels. 1778. October.

It appeared by the chart, as well as by the teſtimony of Iſmyloff and the other Ruſſians, that this is as far as their countrymen have made any diſcoveries, or have extended themſelves, ſince Beering's time. They all ſaid, that no Ruſſians had ſettled themſelves ſo far to the Eaſt as the place where the natives gave the note to Captain Clerke; which Mr. Iſmyloff, to whom I delivered it, on peruſing it, ſaid, had been written at Oomanak. It was, however, from him that we got the name of *Kodiak* *, the largeſt of Schumagin's Iſlands; for it had no name upon the chart produced by him. The names of all the other iſlands were taken from it, and we wrote them down as pronounced by him. He ſaid, they were all ſuch as the natives themſelves called their iſlands by; but, if ſo, ſome of the names ſeem to have been ſtrangely altered. It is worth obſerving, that no names were put to the iſlands which Iſmyloff told us were to be ſtruck out of the chart; and I conſidered this as ſome confirmation that they have not exiſtence.

I have already obſerved, that the American continent is here called, by the Ruſſians, as well as by the iſlanders, Alaſchka; which name, though it properly belong only to

* A Ruſſian ſhip had been at Kodiack, in 1776; as appears from a MS. obligingly communicated by Mr. Pennant.

1778. October. the country adjoining to Oonemak, is uſed by them when ſpeaking of the American continent in general, which they know perfectly well to be a great land.

This is all the information I got from theſe people, relating to the geography of this part of the world; and I have reaſon to believe that this was all the information they were able to give. For they aſſured me, over and over again, that they knew of no other iſlands, beſides thoſe which were laid down upon this chart; and that no Ruſſian had ever ſeen any part of the continent of America to the Northward, except that which lies oppoſite the country of the Tſchutſkis.

If Mr. Stæhlin was not groſsly impoſed upon, what could induce him to publiſh a map, ſo ſingularly erroneous; and in which many of theſe iſlands are jumbled together in regular confuſion, without the leaſt regard to truth? And yet, he is pleaſed to call it *a very accurate little map* *. Indeed, it is a map to which the moſt illiterate of his illiterate ſeafaring countrymen would have been aſhamed to ſet his name.

Wedneſ. 21. Mr. Iſmyloff remained with us till the 21ſt, in the evening, when he took his final leave. To his care I intruſted a letter to the Lords Commiſſioners of the Admiralty; in which was incloſed a chart of all the Northern coaſts I had viſited. He ſaid there would be an opportunity of ſending it to Kamtſchatka, or Okotſk, the enſuing ſpring; and that it would be at Peterſburg the following winter. He gave me a letter to Major Behm, Governor of Kamtſchatka, who reſides at Bolſcheretſk; and another to the commanding Of-

* Stæhlin's New Northern Archipelago, p. 15.

ficer at Petropaulowſka. Mr. Iſmyloff ſeemed to have abilities that might entitle him to a higher ſtation in life, than that in which we found him. He was tolerably well verſed in aſtronomy, and in the moſt uſeful branches of the mathematics. I made him a preſent of an Hadley's octant; and though, probably, it was the firſt he had ever ſeen, he made himſelf acquainted, in a very ſhort time, with moſt of the uſes to which that inſtrument can be applied. 1778. October.

In the morning of the 22d, we made an attempt to get to ſea, with the wind at South Eaſt, which miſcarried. The following afternoon, we were viſited by one Jacob Ivanovitch Sopoſnicoff, a Ruſſian, who commanded a boat, or ſmall veſſel, at Oomanak. This man had a great ſhare of modeſty; and would drink no ſtrong liquor, of which the reſt of his countrymen, whom we had met with here, were immoderately fond. He ſeemed to know more accurately what ſupplies could be got at the harbour of Petropaulowſka, and the price of the different articles, than Mr. Iſmyloff. But, by all accounts, every thing we ſhould want at that place was very ſcarce, and bore a high price. Flour, for inſtance, was from three to five roubles the pood*; and deer, from three to five roubles each. This man told us that he was to be at Petropaulowſka in May next; and, as I underſtood, was to have the charge of my letter. He ſeemed to be exceedingly deſirous of having ſome token from me to carry to Major Behm; and, to gratify him, I ſent a ſmall ſpying-glaſs. Thurſday 22. Friday 23.

After we became acquainted with theſe Ruſſians, ſome of our gentlemen, at different times, viſited their ſettlement on

* 36 lb.

1778. October. the iſland; where they always met with a hearty welcome. This ſettlement conſiſted of a dwelling-houſe, and two ſtore-houſes. And, beſides the Ruſſians, there was a number of the Kamtſchadales, and of the natives, as ſervants, or ſlaves, to the former. Some others of the natives, who ſeemed independent of the Ruſſians, lived at the ſame place. Such of them as belonged to the Ruſſians were all males; and they are taken, or, perhaps, purchaſed from their parents when young. There was, at this time, about twenty of theſe, who could be looked upon in no other light than as children. They all live in the ſame houſe; the Ruſſians at the upper end, the Kamtſchadales in the middle; and the natives at the lower end; where is fixed a large boiler for preparing their food, which conſiſts chiefly of what the ſea produces, with the addition of wild roots and berries. There is little difference between the firſt and laſt table, beſides what is produced by cookery, in which the Ruſſians have the art to make indifferent things palatable. I have eat whale's fleſh of their dreſſing, which I thought very good; and they made a kind of pan-pudding of ſalmon roe, beaten up fine, and fried, that is no bad *ſuccedaneum* for bread. They may, now and then, taſte real bread, or have a diſh in which flour is an ingredient; but this can only be an occaſional luxury. If we except the juice of berries, which they ſip at their meals, they have no other liquor beſides pure water; and it ſeems to be very happy for them that they have nothing ſtronger.

As the iſland ſupplies them with food, ſo it does, in a great meaſure, with clothing. This conſiſts chiefly of ſkins, and is, perhaps, the beſt they could have. The upper garment is made like our waggoner's frock, and reaches as low as the knee. Beſides this, they wear a waiſtcoat or two, a pair

of breeches; a fur cap; and a pair of boots, the ſoles and upper leathers of which are of Ruſſian leather; but the legs are made of ſome kind of ſtrong gut. Their two Chiefs, Iſmyloff and Ivanovitch, wore each a calico frock; and they, as well as ſome others, had ſhirts, which were of ſilk. Theſe, perhaps, were the only part of their dreſs not made amongſt themſelves. 1778. October.

There are Ruſſians ſettled, upon all the principal iſlands between Oonalaſhka and Kamtſchatka, for the ſole purpoſe of collecting furs. Their great object is the ſea beaver or otter. I never heard them inquire after any other animal; though thoſe, whoſe ſkins are of inferior value, are alſo made part of their cargoes. I never thought to aſk how long they have had a ſettlement upon Oonalaſhka, and the neighbouring iſles; but, to judge from the great ſubjection the natives are under, this cannot be of a very late date*. All theſe furriers are relieved, from time to time, by others. Thoſe we met with arrived here from Okotſk, in 1776, and are to return in 1781; ſo that their ſtay at the iſland will be four years at leaſt.

It is now time to give ſome account of the native inhabitants. To all appearance, they are the moſt peaceable, inoffenſive people, I ever met with. And, as to honeſty, they might ſerve as a pattern to the moſt civilized nation upon earth. But, from what I ſaw of their neighbours, with whom the Ruſſians have no connection, I doubt whether this was their original diſpoſition; and rather think that it has been the conſequence of their preſent ſtate of ſubjection. Indeed, if ſome of our gentlemen did

* The Ruſſians began to frequent Oonalaſhka in 1762. See *Coxe's Ruſſian Diſcoveries*, ch. viii. p. 80.

not

1778. October. not miſunderſtand the Ruſſians, they had been obliged to make ſome ſevere examples *, before they could bring the iſlanders into any order. If there were ſeverities inflicted at firſt, the beſt apology for them is, that they have produced the happieſt conſequences; and, at preſent, the greateſt harmony ſubſiſts between the two nations. The natives have their own Chiefs in each iſland, and ſeem to enjoy liberty and property unmoleſted. But whether or no they are tributaries to the Ruſſians, we could never find out. There was ſome reaſon to think that they are.

Theſe people are rather low of ſtature, but plump and well ſhaped; with rather ſhort necks; ſwarthy chubby faces; black eyes; ſmall beards; and long, ſtraight, black hair; which the men wear looſe behind, and cut before, but the women tie up in a bunch.

Their dreſs has been occaſionally mentioned. Both ſexes wear the ſame in faſhion; the only difference is in the materials. The women's frock is made of ſeal ſkin; and that of the men, of the ſkins of birds; both reaching below the knee. This is the whole dreſs of the women. But, over the frock, the men wear another made of gut, which reſiſts water; and has a hood to it, which draws over the head. Some of them wear boots; and all of them have a kind of oval ſnouted cap, made of wood, with a rim to admit the head. Theſe caps are dyed with green and other colours; and round the upper part of the rim, are ſtuck the long briſtles of ſome ſea-animal, on which are ſtrung glaſs beads; and on the front is a ſmall image or two made of bone.

* See the particulars of hoſtilities between the Ruſſians and natives, in Coxe, as cited above.

They

They make uſe of no paint; but the women puncture their faces ſlightly; and both men and women bore the under lip, to which they fix pieces of bone. But it is as uncommon, at Oonalaſhka, to ſee a man with this ornament, as to ſee a woman without it. Some fix beads to the upper lip, under the noſtrils; and all of them hang ornaments in their ears. 1778. October.

Their food conſiſts of fiſh, ſea-animals, birds, roots, and berries; and even of ſea-weed. They dry large quantities of fiſh in ſummer; which they lay up in ſmall huts for winter uſe; and, probably, they preſerve roots and berries for the ſame time of ſcarcity. They eat almoſt every thing raw. Boiling and broiling were the only methods of cookery that I ſaw them make uſe of; and the firſt was probably learnt from the Ruſſians. Some have got little braſs kettles; and thoſe who have not, make one of a flat ſtone, with ſides of clay, not unlike a ſtanding pye.

I was once preſent, when the Chief of Oonalaſhka made his dinner of the raw head of a large halibut, juſt caught. Before any was given to the Chief, two of his ſervants eat the gills, without any other dreſſing, beſides ſqueezing out the ſlime. This done, one of them cut off the head of the fiſh, took it to the ſea and waſhed it; then came with it, and ſat down by the Chief; firſt pulling up ſome graſs, upon a part of which the head was laid, and the reſt was ſtrewed before the Chief. He then cut large pieces off the cheeks, and laid theſe within the reach of the great man, who ſwallowed them with as much ſatisfaction as we ſhould do raw oyſters. When he had done, the remains of the head were cut in pieces, and given to the attendants, who tore off the meat

1778. October. meat with their teeth, and gnawed the bones like ſo many dogs.

As theſe people uſe no paint, they are not ſo dirty in their perſons as the ſavages who thus beſmear themſelves; but they are full as louſy and filthy in their houſes. Their method of building is as follows: They dig, in the ground, an oblong ſquare pit, the length of which ſeldom exceeds fifty feet, and the breadth twenty; but in general the dimenſions are ſmaller. Over this excavation they form the roof of wood which the ſea throws aſhore. This roof is covered firſt with graſs, and then with earth; ſo that the outward appearance is like a dunghill. In the middle of the roof, toward each end, is left a ſquare opening, by which the light is admitted; one of theſe openings being for this purpoſe only, and the other being alſo uſed to go in and out by, with the help of a ladder, or rather a poſt, with ſteps cut in it *. In ſome houſes there is another entrance below; but this is not common. Round the ſides and ends of the huts, the families (for ſeveral are lodged together) have their ſeparate apartments, where they ſleep, and ſit at work; not upon benches, but in a kind of a concave trench, which is dug all round the inſide of the houſe, and covered with mats; ſo that this part is kept tolerably decent. But the middle of the houſe, which is common to all the families, is far otherwiſe. For, although it be covered with dry graſs, it is a receptacle for dirt of every kind, and the place for the urine trough; the ſtench of which is not mended by

* Mr. Coxe's deſcription of the habitations of the natives of Oonalaſhka, and the other Fox Iſlands, in general, agrees with Captain Cook's. See *Ruſſian Diſcoveries*, p. 149. See alſo *Hiſtoire des différents Peuples ſoumis à la Domination des Ruſſes*, par M. Levesque, Tom. I. p. 40, 41.

raw

raw hides, or leather being almoſt continually ſteeped in it. Behind and over the trench, are placed the few effects they are poſſeſſed of; ſuch as their clothing, mats, and ſkins. 1778. October.

Their houſehold furniture conſiſts of bowls, ſpoons, buckets, piggins or cans, matted baſkets, and perhaps a Ruſſian kettle or pot. All theſe utenſils are very neatly made, and well formed; and yet we ſaw no other tools among them but the knife and the hatchet; that is, a ſmall flat piece of iron, made like an adze, by fitting it into a crooked wooden handle. Theſe were the only inſtruments we met with there, made of iron. For although the Ruſſians live amongſt them, we found much leſs of this metal in their poſſeſſion, than we had met with in the poſſeſſion of other tribes on the American continent, who had never ſeen, nor perhaps had any intercourſe with the Ruſſians. Probably, a a few beads, a little tobacco and ſnuff, purchaſe all they have to ſpare. There are few, if any of them, that do not both ſmoke, and chew tobacco, and take ſnuff; a luxury that bids fair to keep them always poor.

They did not ſeem to wiſh for more iron, or to want any other inſtruments, except ſewing needles, their own being made of bone. With theſe they not only ſew their canoes, and make their clothes, but alſo very curious embroidery. Inſtead of thread, they uſe the fibres of ſinews, which they ſplit to the thickneſs which each ſort of work requires. All ſewing is performed by the women. They are the taylors, ſhoemakers, and boat-builders, or boat-coverers; for the men, moſt probably, conſtruct the frame of wood over which the ſkins are ſewed. They make mats and baſkets of graſs, that are both beautiful and ſtrong. Indeed, there is a neatneſs

1778. October. and perfection in moſt of their work, that ſhews they neither want ingenuity nor perſeverance.

I ſaw not a fire-place in any one of their houſes. They are lighted, as well as heated, by lamps; which are ſimple, and yet anſwer the purpoſe very well. They are made of a flat ſtone, hollowed on one ſide like a plate, and about the ſame ſize, or rather larger. In the hollow part they put the oil, mixed with a little dry graſs, which ſerves the purpoſe of a wick. Both men and women frequently warm their bodies over one of theſe lamps, by placing it between their legs, under their garments, and ſitting thus over it for a few minutes.

They produce fire both by colliſion and by attrition; the former by ſtriking two ſtones one againſt another; on one of which a good deal of brimſtone is firſt rubbed. The latter method is with two pieces of wood; one of which is a ſtick of about eighteen inches in length, and the other a flat piece. The pointed end of the ſtick they preſs upon the other, whirling it nimbly round as a drill; thus producing fire in a few minutes. This method is common in many parts of the world. It is practiſed by the Kamtſchadales, by theſe people, by the Greenlanders, by the Brazilians, by the Otaheiteans, by the New Hollanders; and probably by many other nations. Yet ſome learned and ingenious men have founded an argument on this cuſtom to prove, that this and that nation are of the ſame extraction. But accidental agreements, in a few particular inſtances, will not authoriſe ſuch a concluſion; nor will a diſagreement, either in manners or cuſtoms, between two different nations, of courſe, prove that they are of different extraction.

tion. I could ſupport this opinion by many inſtances beſides the one juſt mentioned. 1778. October.

No ſuch thing as an offenſive or even defenſive weapon was ſeen amongſt the natives of Oonalaſhka. We cannot ſuppoſe that the Ruſſians found them in ſuch a defenceleſs ſtate; it is more probable that, for their own ſecurity, they have diſarmed them. Political reaſons too may have induced the Ruſſians not to allow theſe iſlanders to have any large canoes; for it is difficult to believe they had none ſuch originally, as we found them amongſt all their neighbours. However, we ſaw none here but one or two belonging to the Ruſſians. The canoes made uſe of by the natives are the ſmalleſt we had any where ſeen upon the American coaſt; though built after the ſame manner, with ſome little difference in the conſtruction. The ſtern of theſe terminates a little abruptly; the head is forked; the upper point of the fork projecting without the under one, which is even with the ſurface of the water. Why they ſhould thus conſtruct them is difficult to conceive; for the fork is apt to catch hold of every thing that comes in the way; to prevent which, they fix a piece of ſmall ſtick from point to point. In other reſpects, their canoes are built after the manner of thoſe uſed by the Greenlanders and Eſquimaux; the framing being of ſlender laths, and the covering of ſeal-ſkins. They are about twelve feet long; a foot and a half broad in the middle; and twelve or fourteen inches deep. Upon occaſion, they can carry two perſons; one of whom is ſtretched at full length in the canoe; and the other ſits in the ſeat, or round hole, which is nearly in the middle. Round this hole is a rim or hoop of wood, about which is ſewed gut-ſkin, that can be drawn together, or opened like a purſe, with leathern thongs fitted to the outer edge. The man ſeats himſelf in this place; draws the ſkin

1778. October. tight round his body over his gut frock, and brings the ends of the thongs, or purſe-ſtring, over the ſhoulder to keep it in its place. The ſleeves of his frock are tied tight round his wriſts; and it being cloſe round his neck, and the hood drawn over his head, where it is confined by his cap, water can ſcarcely penetrate either to his body, or into the canoe. If any ſhould, however, inſinuate itſelf, the boatman carries a piece of ſpunge with which he dries it up. He uſes the double-bladed paddle, which is held with both hands in the middle, ſtriking the water with a quick regular motion, firſt on one ſide, and then on the other. By this means, the canoe is impelled at a great rate, and in a direction as ſtraight as a line can be drawn. In ſailing from Egooch-ſhak to Samganoodha, two or three canoes kept way with the ſhip, though ſhe was going at the rate of ſeven miles an hour.

Their fiſhing and hunting implements lie ready upon the canoes, under ſtraps fixed for the purpoſe. They are all made, in great perfection, of wood and bone; and differ very little from thoſe uſed by the Greenlanders, as they are deſcribed by Crantz. The only difference is in the point of the miſſile dart; which, in ſome we ſaw here, is not above an inch long; whereas Crantz ſays, that thoſe of the Greenlanders are a foot and a half in length. Indeed, theſe darts, as well as ſome others of their inſtruments, are ſo curious, that they deſerve a particular deſcription; but as many of them were brought away on board the ſhips, this can be done, at any time, if thought neceſſary. Theſe people are very expert in ſtriking fiſh, both in the ſea, and in rivers. They alſo make uſe of hooks and lines, nets and wears. The hooks are compoſed of bone, and the lines of ſinews.

The

1778. October.

The fiſhes which are common to other northern ſeas, are found here; ſuch as whales, grampuſſes, porpoiſes, ſword-fiſh, halibut, cod, ſalmon, trout, ſoals, flat-fiſh; ſeveral other ſorts of ſmall fiſh; and there may be many more that we had no opportunity of ſeeing. Halibut and ſalmon ſeem to be in the greateſt plenty; and on them the inhabitants of theſe iſles ſubſiſt chiefly; at leaſt, they were the only ſort of fiſh, except a few cod, which we obſerved to be laid up for their winter ſtore. To the North of 60°, the ſea is, in a manner, diſtitute of ſmall fiſh of every kind; but then whales are more numerous.

Seals, and that whole tribe of ſea-animals, are not ſo numerous as in many other ſeas. Nor can this be thought ſtrange, ſince there is hardly any part of the coaſt, on either continent, nor any of the iſlands lying between them, that is not inhabited, and whoſe inhabitants hunt theſe animals for their food and clothing. Sea-horſes are, indeed, in prodigious numbers about the ice; and the ſea-otter is, I believe, no where found but in this ſea. We ſometimes ſaw an animal, with a head like a ſeal's, that blew after the manner of whales. It was larger than a ſeal, and its colour was white, with ſome dark ſpots. Probably this was the ſea-cow, or *manati*.

I think I may venture to aſſert, that ſea and water fowls are neither in ſuch numbers, nor in ſuch variety, as with us in the northern parts of the Atlantic Ocean. There are ſome, however, here, that I do not remember to have ſeen any where elſe; particularly the *alca monochroa* of Steller, before mentioned; and a black and white duck, which I conceive to be different from the ſtone-duck deſcribed by Kraſheninikoff*. All the other birds ſeen by us are mentioned

* Hiſtory of Kamtſchatka. Eng. Tranſ. p. 160.

1778. October. by this author, except ſome that we met with near the ice; and moſt, if not all of theſe, are deſcribed by Martin in his voyage to Greenland. It is a little extraordinary, that penguins, which are common in many parts of the world, ſhould not be found in this ſea. Albatroſſes too are ſo very ſcarce, that I cannot help thinking that this is not their proper climate.

The few land-birds that we met with are the ſame with thoſe in Europe; but there may be many others which we had no opportunity of knowing. A very beautiful bird was ſhot in the woods at Norton Sound; which, I am told, is ſometimes found in England, and known by the name of chatterer. Our people met with other ſmall birds there, but in no great variety and abundance; ſuch as the woodpecker, the bullfinch, the yellow finch, and a ſmall bird called a tit-mouſe.

As our excurſions and obſervations were confined wholly to the ſea-coaſt, it is not to be expected, that we could know much of the animals or vegetables of the country. Except muſquitoes, there are few other inſects; nor reptiles, that I ſaw, but lizards. There are no deer upon Oonalaſhka, or upon any other of the iſlands. Nor have they any domeſtic animals; not even dogs. Foxes and weaſels were the only quadrupeds we ſaw; but they told us, that they had hares alſo, and the *marmottas* mentioned by Kraſheninikoff*. Hence it is evident, that the ſea and rivers ſupply the greateſt ſhare of food to the inhabitants. They are alſo obliged to the ſea for all the wood made uſe of for building, and other neceſſary purpoſes; for not a ſtick grows upon any of the iſlands, nor upon the adjacent coaſt of the continent.

* Hiſtory of Kamtſchatka, p. 99.

The

1778. October.

The learned tell us, that the ſeeds of plants are, by various means, conveyed from one part of the world to another; even to iſlands in the midſt of great oceans, and far remote from any other land. How comes it to paſs, that there are no trees growing on this part of the continent of America, nor any of the iſlands lying near it? They are certainly as well ſituated for receiving ſeeds, by all the various ways I have heard of, as any of thoſe coaſts are that abound in wood. May not nature have denied to ſome ſoil the power of raiſing trees, without the aſſiſtance of art? As to the drift wood, upon the ſhores of the iſlands, I have no doubt that it comes from America. For although there may be none on the neighbouring coaſt, enough may grow farther up the country, which torrents in the ſpring may break looſe, and bring down to the ſea. And not a little may be conveyed from the woody coaſts, though they lie at a greater diſtance.

There are a great variety of plants at Oonalaſhka; and moſt of them were in flower the latter end of June. Several of them are ſuch as we find in Europe, and in other parts of America, particularly in Newfoundland; and others of them, which are alſo met with in Kamtſchatka, are eat by the natives both there and here. Of theſe, Kraſheninikoff has given us deſcriptions. The principal one is the *ſaranne*, or lily root; which is about the ſize of a root of garlick, round, made up of a number of ſmall cloves, and grains like groats. When boiled, it is ſomewhat like ſaloop; the taſte is not diſagreeable, and we found means to make ſome good diſhes with it. It does not ſeem to be in great plenty; for we got none but what Iſmyloff gave us.

We muſt reckon amongſt the food of the natives, ſome other wild roots; the ſtalk of a plant reſembling *angelica*;

and

1778. October. and berries of ſeveral different ſorts; ſuch as bramble-berries; cranberries; hurtle-berries; heath-berries; a ſmall red berry, which, in Newfoundland, is called partridge-berry; and another brown berry, unknown to us. This has ſomewhat of the taſte of a ſloe, but is unlike it in every other reſpect. It is very aſtringent, if eaten in any quantity. Brandy might be diſtilled from it. Captain Clerke attempted to preſerve ſome; but they fermented, and became as ſtrong as if they had been ſteeped in ſpirits.

There were a few other plants, which we found ſerviceable, but are not made uſe of by either Ruſſians or natives. Such as wild purſlain; pea-tops; a kind of ſcurvy-graſs; creſſes, and ſome others. All theſe, we found very palatable, dreſſed either in ſoups or in ſallads. On the low ground, and in the vallies, is plenty of graſs, which grows very thick, and to a great length. I am of opinion, that cattle might ſubſiſt at Oonalaſhka all the year round, without being houſed. And the ſoil, in many places, ſeemed capable of producing grain, roots, and vegetables. But, at preſent, the Ruſſian traders, and the natives, ſeem ſatisfied with what nature brings forth.

Native ſulphur was ſeen amongſt the inhabitants of the iſland; but I had no opportunity of learning where they got it. We found alſo ochre; a ſtone that gives a purple colour; and another that gives a very good green. It may be doubted, whether this laſt is known. In its natural ſtate, it is of a greyiſh green colour, coarſe and heavy. It eaſily diſſolves in oil; but when put into water, it entirely loſes its properties. It ſeemed to be ſcarce in Oonalaſhka; but we were told, that it was in greater plenty on the iſland Oonemak. As to the ſtones about the ſhore and hills, I ſaw nothing in them that was uncommon.

The

The people of Oonalaſhka bury their dead on the ſummits of hills, and raiſe a little hillock over the grave. In a walk into the country, one of the natives, who attended me, pointed out ſeveral of theſe receptacles of the dead. There was one of them, by the ſide of the road leading from the harbour to the village, over which was raiſed a heap of ſtones. It was obſerved, that every one who paſſed it, added one to it. I ſaw in the country ſeveral ſtone hillocks, that ſeemed to have been raiſed by art. Many of them were apparently of great antiquity. 1778. October.

What their notions are of the Deity, and of a future ſtate, I know not. I am equally unacquainted with their diverſions; nothing having been ſeen that could give us an inſight into either.

They are remarkably cheerful and friendly amongſt each other; and always behaved with great civility to us. The Ruſſians told us, that they never had any connections with their women, becauſe they were not Chriſtians. Our people were not ſo ſcrupulous; and ſome of them had reaſon to repent that the females of Oonalaſhka encouraged their addreſſes without any reſerve; for their health ſuffered by a diſtemper that is not unknown here. The natives of this iſland are alſo ſubject to the cancer, or a complaint like it, which thoſe whom it attacks, are very careful to conceal. They do not ſeem to be long-lived. I no where ſaw a perſon, man or woman, whom I could ſuppoſe to be ſixty years of age; and but very few who appeared to be above fifty. Probably their hard way of living may be the means of ſhortening their days.

I have frequently had occaſion to mention, from the time of our arrival in Prince William's Sound, how remarkably the natives, on this North Weſt ſide of America, reſemble the

1778. October. Greenlanders and Eſquimaux, in various particulars of perſon, dreſs, weapons, canoes, and the like. However, I was much leſs ſtruck with this, than with the affinity which we found ſubſiſting between the dialects of the Greenlanders and Eſquimaux, and thoſe of Norton's Sound and Oonalaſhka. This will appear from a table of correſponding words, which I put together, and will be inſerted in the courſe of this work*. It muſt be obſerved, however, with regard to the words which we collected on this ſide of America, that too much ſtreſs is not to be laid upon their being accurately repreſented; for, after Mr. Anderſon's death, we had few who took much pains about ſuch matters; and I have frequently found, that the ſame words written down by two or more perſons, from the mouth of the ſame native, on being compared together, differed not a little. But ſtill, enough is certain, to warrant this judgment, that there is great reaſon to believe, that all theſe nations are of the ſame extraction; and if ſo, there can be little doubt of there being a Northern communication of ſome ſort, by ſea, between this Weſt ſide of America and the Eaſt ſide, through Baffin's Bay; which communication, however, may be effectually ſhut up againſt ſhips, by ice, and other impediments. Such, at leaſt, was my opinion at this time.

I ſhall now quit theſe Northern regions, with a few particulars relative to the tides and currents upon the coaſt, and an account of the aſtronomical obſervations made by us in Samganoodha Harbour.

The tide is no where conſiderable but in the great river†.

* It will be found, amongſt other vocabularies, at the end of the third volume.

† Cook's River.

The

1778. October.

The flood comes from the South or South Eaſt, every where following the direction of the coaſt to the North Weſtward. Between Norton Sound and Cape Prince of Wales, we found a current ſetting to the North Weſt, particularly off the Cape, and within Sledge Iſland. But this current extended only a little way from the coaſt; nor was it either conſiſtent or uniform. To the North of Cape Prince of Wales, we found neither tide nor current, either on the American or on the Aſiatic coaſt, though ſeveral times looked for. This gave riſe to an opinion entertained by ſome on board our ſhips, that the two coaſts were connected, either by land or by ice; which opinion received ſome ſtrength, by our never having any hollow waves from the North, and by our ſeeing ice almoſt the whole way acroſs.

The following are the reſults of the ſeveral obſervations made aſhore, during our ſtay in the harbour of Samganoodha.

The latitude, by the mean of ſeveral obſerved meridian altitudes of the ſun	-	53° 5′ 0″
The longitude: By the mean of twenty ſets of lunar obſervations, with the ſun Eaſt of the moon		193° 47′ 45″
The longitude: By the mean of fourteen ſets, with the ſun and ſtars Weſt of the moon		193° 11′ 45″
The mean of theſe	- -	193° 29′ 45″
The longitude aſſumed	-	193° 30′ 0″

By the mean of equal altitudes of the ſun, taken on the 12th, 14th, 17th, and 21ſt, the time-keeper was found to be loſing

1778. October.

on mean time 8″, 8 each day; and, on the laſt of theſe days, was too ſlow for mean time $13^h\ 46^m\ 43^s$, 98. Hence the time-keeper muſt have been too ſlow, on the 4th, the day after our arrival, by $13^h\ 44^m\ 26^s$, 62; and the longitude, by Greenwich rate, will be $13^h\ 23^m\ 53^s$, 8 - 200° 58′ 27″

By King George's (or Nootka) Sound rate $12^h\ 56^m\ 40^s$, 4 - - - 194° 10′ 6″

The 30th of June, the time-keeper, by the ſame rate, gave - - 193° 12′ 0″

The error of the time-keeper, at that time, was - - - 0° 18′ 0″ Weſt.

At this time, its error was - - 0° 39′ 54″ Eaſt.

The error of the time-keeper, between our leaving Samganoodha, and our return to it again, was - - 0° 57′ 54″

On the 12th of October, the variation By the mean of three compaſſes, { A. M. 20° 17′ 2″ / P. M. 19° 41′ 27″ } Mean 19° 59′ 15″ Eaſt.

Dip of the needle { Unmarked end / Marked end } Dipping face Eaſt { 68° 45′ / 69° 55′ } Face { 69° 30′ / Weſt 69° 17′

Mean of the dip of the North end of the needle 69° 23′ 30″.

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

Departure from Oonalaſhka, and future Views.—The Iſland Amoghta.—Situation of a remarkable Rock.—The Strait between Oonalaſhka and Oonella repaſſed.—Progreſs to the South.—Melancholy Accident on board the Diſcovery.—Mowee, one of the Sandwich Iſlands, diſcovered.—Intercourſe with the Natives.—Viſit from Terreeoboo.—Another Iſland, called Owhyhee, diſcovered.—The Ships ply to Windward to get round it.—An Eclipſe of the Moon obſerved.—The Crew refuſe to drink Sugar-cane Beer.—Cordage deficient in Strength.—Commendation of the Natives of Owhyhee.—The Reſolution gets to Windward of the Iſland.—Her Progreſs down the South Eaſt Coaſt.—Views of the Country, and Viſits from the Natives.—The Diſcovery joins.—Slow Progreſs Weſtward.—Karakakooa Bay examined by Mr. Bligh.—Vaſt Concourſe of the Natives.—The Ships anchor in the Bay.

IN the morning of Monday the 26th, we put to ſea from Samganoodha Harbour; and, as the wind was Southerly, ſtood away to the Weſtward. 1778. October. Monday 26.

My intention was now to proceed to Sandwich Iſlands, there to ſpend a few of the winter months, in caſe we ſhould meet with the neceſſary refreſhments, and then to direct our courſe to Kamtſchatka, ſo as to endeavour to be there

1778. October. there by the middle of May, the enſuing ſummer. In conſequence of this reſolution, I gave Captain Clerke orders how to proceed, in caſe of ſeparation; appointing Sandwich Iſlands for the firſt place of rendezvous, and the harbour of Petropaulowſka, in Kamtſchatka, for the ſecond.

Soon after we were out of the harbour, the wind veered to the South Eaſt and Eaſt South Eaſt, which, by the evening, carried us as far as the Weſtern part of Oonalaſhka, where we got the wind at South. With this we ſtretched to
Tueſday 27. the Weſtward, till ſeven o'clock the next morning, when we wore, and ſtood to the Eaſt. The wind, by this time, had increaſed in ſuch a manner as to reduce us to our three courſes. It blew in very heavy ſqualls, attended with rain, hail, and ſnow.

Wedneſ. 28. At nine o'clock in the morning of the 28th, the iſland of Oonalaſhka bore South Eaſt, four leagues diſtant. We then wore and ſtood to the Weſtward. The ſtrength of the gale was now over, and toward evening, the little wind that blew inſenſibly veered round to the Eaſt, where it continued but a ſhort time before it got to North Eaſt, and increaſed to a very hard gale with rain. I ſteered firſt to the Southward; and as the wind inclined to the North and North Weſt, I ſteered more Weſterly.

Thurſday 29. On the 29th, at half paſt ſix in the morning, we ſaw land extending from Eaſt by South to South by Weſt, ſuppoſed to be the iſland Amoghta. At eight, finding that we could not weather the iſland, as the wind had now veered to the Weſtward, I gave over plying, and bore away for Oonalaſhka, with a view of going to the Northward and Eaſtward of that iſland, not daring to attempt a paſſage to the South Eaſt of it, in ſo hard a gale of wind. At the time

we bore away, the land extended from Eaſt by South half South to South South Weſt, four leagues diſtant. The longitude by the time-keeper was 191° 17′, and the latitude 53° 38′. This will give a very different ſituation to this iſland from that aſſigned to it upon the Ruſſian map. But it muſt be remembered, that this is one of the iſlands which Mr. Iſmyloff ſaid was wrong placed. Indeed it is a doubt if this be Amoghta*; for after Iſmyloff had made the correction, no land appeared upon the map in this latitude; but as I have obſerved before, we muſt not look for accuracy in this chart. 1778. October.

At eleven o'clock, as we were ſteering to the North Eaſt, we diſcovered an elevated rock, like a tower, bearing North North Eaſt half Eaſt, four leagues diſtant. It lies in the latitude of 53° 57′, and in the longitude of 191° 2′, and hath no place in the Ruſſian map†. We muſt have paſſed very near it in the night. We could judge of its ſteepneſs from this circumſtance, that the ſea, which now run very high, broke no where but againſt it. At three in the afternoon, after getting a ſight of Oonalaſhka, we ſhortened ſail, and hauled the wind, not having time to get through the paſſage before night. At day-break the next morning, we bore away under courſes, and cloſe-reefed topſails, having a very hard gale at Weſt North Weſt, with heavy ſqualls, attended with ſnow. At noon, we were in the middle of the ſtrait, be- Friday 20.

* On the chart of Krenitzen's and Levaſheff's voyage, in 1768 and 1769, which we find in Mr. Coxe's book, p. 251. an iſland called Amuckta, is laid down, not very far from the place aſſigned to Amoghta by Captain Cook.

† Though this rock had no place in the Ruſſian map produced by Iſmyloff, it has a place in the chart of Krenitzen's and Levaſheff's voyage, above referred to. That chart alſo agrees with Captain Cook's, as to the general poſition of this group of iſlands. The ſingularly indented ſhores of the iſland of Oonalaſhka are repreſented in both charts much alike. Theſe circumſtances are worth attending to, as the more modern Ruſſian maps of this Archipelago are ſo wonderfully erroneous.

twcen

1778. October. tween Oonalaſhka, and Oonella, the harbour of Samganoodha bearing South South Eaſt, one league diſtant. At three in the afternoon, being through the ſtrait, and clear of the iſles, Cape Providence bearing Weſt South Weſt, two or three leagues diſtant, we ſteered to the Southward, under double reefed top-ſails and courſes, with the wind at Weſt North Weſt, a ſtrong gale, and fair weather.

November. Monday 2. On Monday, the 2d of November, the wind veered to the Southward; and, before night, blew a violent ſtorm, which obliged us to bring to. The Diſcovery fired ſeveral guns, which we anſwered; but without knowing on what occaſion they were fired. At eight o'clock, we loſt ſight of her, and did not ſee her again till eight the next morning. At ten, ſhe joined us; and, as the height of the gale was now over, and the wind had veered back to Weſt North Weſt, we made ſail, and reſumed our courſe to the Southward.

Friday 6. The 6th, in the evening, being in the latitude of 42° 12′, and in the longitude of 201° 26′, the variation was 17° 15′ Saturday 7. Eaſt. The next morning, our latitude being 41° 20′, and our longitude 202°, a ſhag, or cormorant, flew ſeveral times round the ſhip. As theſe birds are ſeldom, if ever, known to fly far out of ſight of land, I judged that ſome was not far diſtant. However, we could ſee none. In the afternoon, there being but little wind, Captain Clerke came on board, and informed me of a melancholy accident that happened on board his ſhip, the ſecond night after we left Samganoodha. The main tack gave way, killed one man, and wounded the boatſwain, and two or three more. In addition to this misfortune, I now learned, that, on the evening of the 3d, his ſails and rigging received conſiderable damage;

mage; and that the guns which he fired were the ſignal to bring to. 1778. November.

On the 8th, the wind was at North; a gentle breeze, with clear weather. On the 9th, in the latitude of 39½°, we had eight hours calm. This was ſucceeded by the wind from the South, attended with fair weather. Availing ourſelves of this, as many of our people as could handle a needle, were ſet to work to repair the ſails; and the carpenters were employed to put the boats in order. Sunday 8. Monday 9.

On the 12th at noon, being then in the latitude of 38° 14′, and in the longitude of 206° 17′, the wind returned back to the Northward; and, on the 15th, in the latitude of 33° 30′, it veered to the Eaſt. At this time, we ſaw a tropic bird, and a dolphin; the firſt that we had obſerved during the paſſage. On the 17th, the wind veered to the Southward, where it continued till the afternoon of the 19th, when a ſquall of wind and rain brought it at once round by the Weſt to the North. This was in the latitude of 32° 26′, and in the longitude of 207° 30′. Thurſday 12. Sunday 15. Tueſday 17.

The wind preſently increaſed to a very ſtrong gale, attended with rain, ſo as to bring us under double-reefed top-ſails. In lowering down the main top-ſail to reef it, the wind tore it quite out of the foot rope; and it was ſplit in ſeveral other parts. This ſail had only been brought to the yard the day before, after having had a repair. The next morning, we got another top-ſail to the yard. This gale proved to be the forerunner of the trade-wind, which in latitude 25° veered to Eaſt, and Eaſt South Eaſt. Wedneſ. 18.

I continued to ſteer to the Southward, till day-light in the morning of the 25th, at which time we were in the latitude Wedneſ. 25.

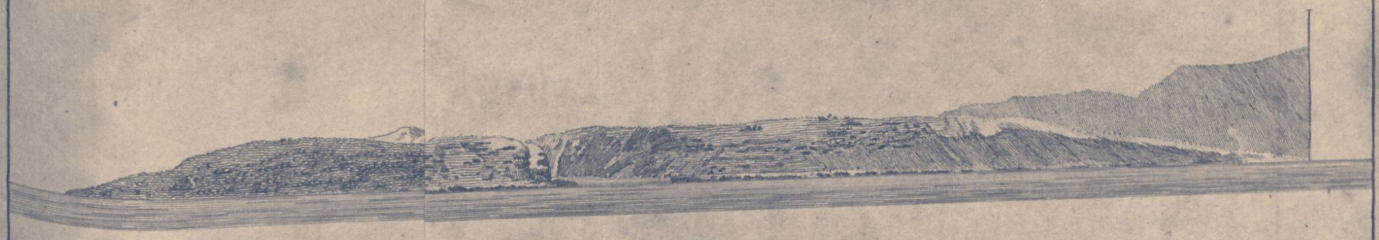
1778. November. of 20° 55′. I now ſpread the ſhips, and ſteered to the Weſt. In the evening, we joined; and at midnight brought to.

Thurſday 26. At day-break, next morning, land was ſeen extending from South South Eaſt to Weſt. We made ſail, and ſtood for it. At eight, it extended from South Eaſt half South, to Weſt; the neareſt part two leagues diſtant. It was ſuppoſed that we ſaw the extent of the land to the Eaſt, but not to the Weſt. We were now ſatisfied, that the group of the Sandwich Iſlands had been only imperfectly diſcovered; as thoſe of them which we had viſited in our progreſs Northward, all lie to the leeward of our preſent ſtation.

In the country was an elevated ſaddle hill, whoſe ſummit appeared above the clouds. From this hill, the land fell in a gentle ſlope, and terminated in a ſteep rocky coaſt, againſt which the ſea broke in a dreadful ſurf. Finding that we could not weather the iſland, I bore up, and ranged along the coaſt to the Weſtward. It was not long before we ſaw people on ſeveral parts of the ſhore, and ſome houſes and plantations. The country ſeemed to be both well wooded and watered; and running ſtreams were ſeen falling into the ſea in various places.

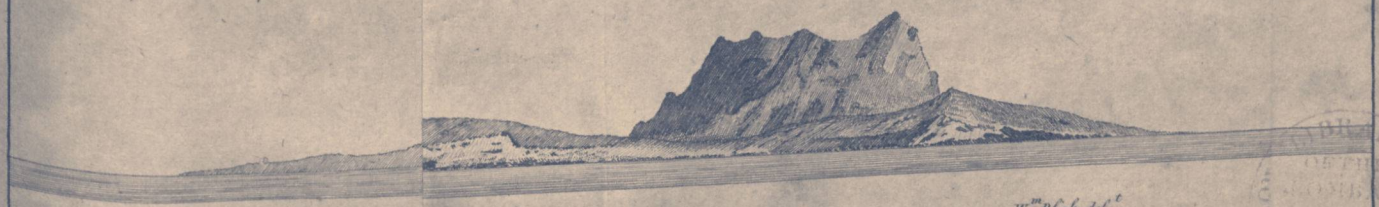
As it was of the laſt importance to procure a ſupply of proviſions at theſe iſlands; and experience having taught me that I could have no chance to ſucceed in this, if a free trade with the natives were to be allowed; that is, if it were left to every man's diſcretion to trade for what he pleaſed, and in the manner he pleaſed; for this ſubſtantial reaſon, I now publiſhed an order, prohibiting all perſons from trading, except ſuch as ſhould be appointed by me and Captain Clerke; and even theſe were enjoined to trade only for proviſions and refreſhments. Women were alſo forbidden to be admitted

VOWHYHEE *when the* East Point *bears* N.b W.t 4 *lea.s distant*.



View *from the* ⊢ *at* WOAHOO

W.m Bligh del.t



W.m Bligh del.t

SANDWICH ISLANDS

View of the S.E. part of MOWEE when the Isthmus bears W.3 W.4 miles off shore

View of the S.E. side of OWHYHEE when the East Point bears N.b W.4 leg.s distant.

View from the ⚓ at ATOOI

View from the ⚓ at WOAHOO

View of the Island ATOOI when the Peaked Hill bears N.b W.13 leg.s distant.

Wm. Bligh del.t

View of the West side of ONEEHOW as seen from the Ship at ⚓

Wm. Bligh del.t

admitted into the ſhips, except under certain reſtrictions. But the evil I meant to prevent, by this regulation, I ſoon found, had already got amongſt them. 1778. November.

At noon, the coaſt extended from South 81° Eaſt, to North 56° Weſt; a low flat, like an iſthmus, bore South 42° Weſt; the neareſt ſhore three or four miles diſtant; the latitude was 20° 59′; and the longitude 203° 50′. Seeing ſome canoes coming off to us, I brought to. As ſoon as they got along ſide, many of the people, who conducted them, came into the ſhip, without the leaſt heſitation. We found them to be of the ſame nation with the inhabitants of the iſlands more to leeward, which we had already viſited; and, if we did not miſtake them, they knew of our having been there. Indeed, it rather appeared too evident; for theſe people had got amongſt them the venereal diſtemper; and, as yet, I knew of no other way of its reaching them, but by an intercourſe with their neighbours ſince our leaving them.

We got from our viſiters a quantity of cuttle-fiſh, for nails and pieces of iron. They brought very little fruit and roots; but told us that they had plenty of them on their iſland, as alſo hogs and fowls. In the evening, the horizon being clear to the Weſtward, we judged the Weſternmoſt land in ſight to be an iſland, ſeparated from that off which we now were. Having no doubt that the people would return to the ſhips next day, with the produce of their country, I kept plying off all night, and in the morning ſtood cloſe in ſhore. Friday 27. At firſt, only a few of the natives viſited us; but, toward noon, we had the company of a good many, who brought with them bread-fruit, potatoes, tarro, or eddy roots, a few plantains, and ſmall pigs; all of which they exchanged for nails and iron tools. Indeed, we had nothing elſe to give them.

1778. November. them. We continued trading with them till four o'clock in the afternoon, when, having diſpoſed of all their cargoes, and not ſeeming inclined to fetch more, we made ſail, and ſtood off ſhore.

While we were lying to, though the wind blew freſh, I obſerved that the ſhips drifted to the Eaſt. Conſequently, there muſt have been a current ſetting in that direction. This encouraged me to ply to windward, with a view to get round the Eaſt end of the iſland, and ſo have the Monday 30. whole lee-ſide before us. In the afternoon of the 30th, being off the North Eaſt end of the iſland, ſeveral canoes came off to the ſhips. Moſt of theſe belonged to a Chief named Terreeoboo, who came in one of them. He made me a preſent of two or three ſmall pigs; and we got, by barter, from the other people, a little fruit. After a ſtay of about two hours, they all left us, except ſix or eight of their company, who choſe to remain on board. A double ſailing canoe came, ſoon after, to attend upon them; which we towed aſtern all night. In the evening, we diſcovered another iſland to windward, which the natives call *Owhyhee*. The name of that, off which we had been for ſome days, we were alſo told, is *Mowee*.

December. Tueſday 1. On the 1ſt of December, at eight in the morning, Owhyhee extended from South 22° Eaſt, to South 12° Weſt; and Mowee from North 41° to North 83° Weſt. Finding that we could fetch Owhyhee, I ſtood for it; and our viſiters from Mowee not chooſing to accompany us, embarked in their canoe, and went aſhore. At ſeven in the evening, we were cloſe up with the North ſide of Owhyhee; where we ſpent the night, ſtanding off and on.

In

In the morning of the 2d, we were ſurprized to ſee the ſummits of the mountains on Owhyhee covered with ſnow. They did not appear to be of any extraordinary height; and yet, in ſome places, the ſnow ſeemed to be of a conſiderable depth, and to have lain there ſome time. As we drew near the ſhore, ſome of the natives came off to us. They were a little ſhy at firſt; but we ſoon enticed ſome of them on board; and at laſt prevailed upon them to return to the iſland, and bring off what we wanted. Soon after theſe reached the ſhore, we had company enough; and few coming empty-handed, we got a tolerable ſupply of ſmall pigs, fruit, and roots. We continued trading with them till ſix in the evening; when we made ſail, and ſtood off, with a view of plying to windward round the iſland. 1778. December. Wedneſ. 2.

In the evening of the 4th, we obſerved an eclipſe of the moon. Mr. King made uſe of a night-teleſcope, a circular aperture being placed at the object end, about one-third of the ſize of the common aperture. I obſerved with the teleſcope of one of Ramſden's ſextants; which, I think, anſwers this purpoſe as well as any other. The following times are the means, as obſerved by us both. Friday 4.

$6^h\ 3'\ 25''$ beginning of the eclipſe $8^h\ 27'\ 25''$ end of the eclipſe	Longitude	$204^\circ\ 40'\ 45''$ $204^\circ\ 25'\ 15''$
Mean - - - -		$204^\circ\ 35'\ 0''$

The *penumbra* was viſible, at leaſt ten minutes before the beginning, and after the end of the eclipſe. I meaſured the uneclipſed part of the moon, with one of Ramſden's ſextants, ſeveral times before, at, and after the middle of the eclipſe; but did not get the time of the middle ſo near as might have been effected by this method. Indeed theſe obſervations were

1778. December. were made only as an experiment, without aiming at much nicety. I alſo meaſured moſtly one way; whereas I ought to have brought alternately the reflected and direct images to contrary ſides, with reſpect to each other; reading the numbers off the quadrant, in one caſe, to the left of the beginning of the diviſions; and, in the other caſe, to the right hand of the ſame. It is evident, that half the ſum of theſe two numbers muſt be the true meaſurement, independent of the error of the quadrant; and this is the method that I would recommend.

But I am well aſſured, that it might have been obſerved much nearer; and that this method may be uſeful when neither the beginning nor end of an eclipſe can be obſerved, which may often happen.

Immediately after the eclipſe was over, we obſerved the diſtance of each limb of the moon from *Pollux* and *Arietis*; the one being to the Eaſt, and the other to the Weſt. An opportunity to obſerve, under all theſe circumſtances, ſeldom happens; but when it does, it ought not to be omitted; as, in this caſe, the local errors to which theſe obſervations are liable, deſtroy each other; which, in all other caſes, would require the obſervations of a whole moon. The following are the reſults of theſe obſervations:

Myſelf with	*Arietis* - 204° 22′ 07″	mean	204° 21′ 5″	
	Pollux - 204° 20′ 4″			
Mr. King with	*Arietis* - 204° 27′ 45″	mean	204° 18′ 29″	
	Pollux - 204° 9′ 12″			
Mean of the two means - - - -			204° 19′ 47″	
The time-keeper, at 4ʰ 30′, to which time all the lunar obſervations are reduced -			204′ 04′ 45″	

The current which I have mentioned, as ſetting to the Eaſtward, had now ceaſed; for we gained but little by plying. On the 6th, in the evening, being about five leagues farther up the coaſt, and near the ſhore, we had ſome traffic with the natives. But, as it had furniſhed only a trifling ſupply, I ſtood in again the next morning, when we had a conſiderable number of viſiters; and we lay to, trading with them till two in the afternoon. By that time, we had procured pork, fruit, and roots, ſufficient for four or five days. We then made ſail, and continued to ply to windward. 1778. December. Sunday 6. Monday 7.

Having procured a quantity of ſugar cane; and having, upon a trial, made but a few days before, found that a ſtrong decoction of it produced a very palatable beer, I ordered ſome more to be brewed, for our general uſe. But when the caſk was now broached, not one of my crew would even ſo much as taſte it. As I had no motive in preparing this beverage, but to ſave our ſpirit for a colder climate, I gave myſelf no trouble, either by exerting authority, or by having recourſe to perſuaſion, to prevail upon them to drink it; knowing that there was no danger of the ſcurvy, ſo long as we could get a plentiful ſupply of other vegetables. But, that I might not be diſappointed in my views, I gave orders that no grog ſhould be ſerved in either ſhip. I myſelf, and the officers, continued to make uſe of this ſugar-cane beer, whenever we could get materials for brewing it. A few hops, of which we had ſome on board, improved it much. It has the taſte of new malt beer; and I believe no one will doubt of its being very wholeſome. And yet my inconſiderate crew alleged that it was injurious to their health.

They

1778. December. They had no better reaſon to ſupport a reſolution, which they took on our firſt arrival in King George's Sound, not to drink the ſpruce-beer made there. But, whether from a conſideration that it was not the firſt time of their being required to uſe that liquor, or from ſome other reaſon, they did not attempt to carry their purpoſe into actual execution; and I had never heard of it till now, when they renewed their ignorant oppoſition to my beſt endeavours to ſerve them. Every innovation whatever, on board a ſhip, though ever ſo much to the advantage of ſeamen, is ſure to meet with their higheſt diſapprobation. Both portable ſoup, and ſour krout were, at firſt, condemned as ſtuff unfit for human beings. Few commanders have introduced into their ſhips more novelties, as uſeful varieties of food and drink, than I have done. Indeed few commanders have had the ſame opportunities of trying ſuch experiments, or been driven to the ſame neceſſity of trying them. It has, however, been, in a great meaſure, owing to various little deviations from eſtabliſhed practice, that I have been able to preſerve my people, generally ſpeaking, from that dreadful diſtemper, the ſcurvy, which has perhaps deſtroyed more of our ſailors, in their peaceful voyages, than have fallen by the enemy in military expeditions.

Sunday 13. I kept at ſome diſtance from the coaſt, till the 13th, when I ſtood in again, ſix leagues farther to windward than we had as yet reached; and, after having ſome trade with the natives who viſited us, returned to ſea. I ſhould have got near Tueſday 15. the ſhore again on the 15th, for a ſupply of fruit or roots, but the wind happening to be at South Eaſt by South, and South South Eaſt, I thought this a good time to ſtretch to the Eaſtward, in order to get round, or, at leaſt, to get a ſight of the South Eaſt end of the iſland. The wind continued

nued at South East by South, moſt part of the 16th. It was variable between South and East on the 17th; and on the 18th, it was continually veering from one quarter to another; blowing, ſometimes, in hard ſqualls; and, at other times, calm, with thunder, lightning, and rain. In the afternoon, we had the wind Weſterly for a few hours; but in the evening it ſhifted to East by South, and we ſtood to the Southward, cloſe hauled, under an eaſy ſail, as the Diſcovery was at ſome diſtance aſtern. At this time the South East point of the iſland bore South Weſt by South, about five leagues diſtant; and I made no doubt that I ſhould be able to weather it. But at one o'clock, next morning, it fell calm, and we were left to the mercy of a North Eaſterly ſwell, which impelled us faſt toward the land; ſo that, long before day-break, we ſaw lights upon the ſhore, which was not more than a league diſtant. The night was dark, with thunder, lightning, and rain.

1778. December. Wedneſ. 16. Thurſday 17. Friday 18. Saturday 19.

At three o'clock, the calm was ſucceeded by a breeze from the South East by East, blowing in ſqualls, with rain. We ſtood to the North East, thinking it the beſt tack to clear the coaſt; but, if it had been day-light, we ſhould have choſen the other. At day-break, the coaſt was ſeen extending from North by Weſt, to South Weſt by Weſt; a dreadful ſurf breaking upon the ſhore, which was not more than half a league diſtant. It was evident, that we had been in the moſt imminent danger. Nor were we yet in ſafety, the wind veering more Eaſterly; ſo that, for ſome time, we did but juſt keep our diſtance from the coaſt. What made our ſituation more alarming, was the leach-rope of the main top-ſail giving way; which was the occaſion of the ſail's being rent in two; and the two top-gallant ſails gave way in the ſame manner, though not half worn out. By taking a favourable

1778. December. vourable opportunity, we ſoon got others to the yards; and then we left the land aſtern. The Diſcovery, by being at ſome diſtance to the North, was never near the land; nor did we ſee her till eight o'clock.

On this occaſion, I cannot help obſerving, that I have always found, that the bolt-ropes to our ſails have not been of ſufficient ſtrength or ſubſtance. This, at different times, has been the ſource of infinite trouble and vexation; and of much expence of canvas, ruined by their giving way. I wiſh alſo, that I did not think there is room for remarking, that the cordage and canvas, and indeed all the other ſtores made uſe of in the navy, are not of equal goodneſs with thoſe, in general, uſed in the merchant ſervice.

It ſeems to be a very prevalent opinion, amongſt naval officers of all ranks, that the king's ſtores are better than any others, and that no ſhips are ſo well fitted out as thoſe of the navy. Undoubtedly they are in the right, as to the quantity, but, I fear, not as to the quality of the ſtores. This, indeed, is ſeldom tried; for things are generally condemned, or converted to ſome other uſe, by ſuch time as they are half worn out. It is only on ſuch voyages as ours, that we have an opportunity of making the trial; as our ſituation makes it neceſſary to wear every thing to the very utmoſt *.

* Captain Cook may, in part, be right in his compariſon of ſome cordage uſed in the King's ſervice, with what is uſed in that of the merchants; eſpecially in time of war, when part of the cordage wanted in the navy is, from neceſſity, made by contract. But it is well known, that there is no better cordage than what is made in the King's yards. This explanation of the preceding paragraph has been ſubjoined, on the authority of a naval officer of diſtinguiſhed rank, and great profeſſional ability, who has, at the ſame time, recommended it as a neceſſary precaution, that ſhips fitted out on voyages of diſcovery, ſhould be furniſhed with no cordage but what is made in the King's yards; and, indeed, that every article of their ſtore, of every kind, ſhould be the beſt that can be made.

As

As ſoon as day-light appeared, the natives aſhore diſplayed a white flag, which we conceived to be a ſignal of peace and friendſhip. Some of them ventured out after us; but the wind freſhening, and it not being ſafe to wait, they were ſoon left aſtern. 1778. December.

In the afternoon, after making another attempt to weather the Eaſtern extreme, which failed, I gave it up, and run down to the Diſcovery. Indeed, it was of no conſequence to get round the iſland; for we had ſeen its extent to the South Eaſt, which was the thing I aimed at; and, according to the information which we had got from the natives, there is no other iſland to the windward of this. However, as we were ſo near the South Eaſt end of it, and as the leaſt ſhift of wind, in our favour, would ſerve to carry us round, I did not wholly give up the idea of weathering it; and therefore continued to ply.

On the 20th, at noon, this South Eaſt point bore South, three leagues diſtant; the ſnowy hills Weſt North Weſt; and we were about four miles from the neareſt ſhore. In the afternoon, ſome of the natives came off in their canoes, bringing with them a few pigs and plantains. The latter were very acceptable, having had no vegetables for ſome days; but the ſupply we now received was ſo inconſiderable, being barely ſufficient for one day, that I ſtood in again the next morning, till within three or four miles of the land, where we were met by a number of canoes, laden with proviſions. We brought to, and continued trading with the people in them, till four in the afternoon; when, having got a pretty good ſupply, we made ſail, and ſtretched off to the Northward. Sunday 20. Monday 21.

1778. December. I had never met with a behaviour ſo free from reſerve and ſuſpicion, in my intercourſe with any tribes of ſavages, as we experienced in the people of this iſland. It was very common for them to ſend up into the ſhip the ſeveral articles they brought off for barter; afterward, they would come in themſelves, and make their bargains on the quarter-deck. The people of Otaheite, even after our repeated viſits, do not care to put ſo much confidence in us. I infer from this, that thoſe of Owhyhee muſt be more faithful in their dealings with one another, than the inhabitants of Otaheite are. For if little faith were obſerved amongſt themſelves, they would not be ſo ready to truſt ſtrangers. It is alſo to be obſerved, to their honour, that they had never once attempted to cheat us in exchanges, nor to commit a theft. They underſtand trading as well as moſt people; and ſeemed to comprehend clearly the reaſon of our plying upon the coaſt. For, though they brought off proviſions in great plenty, particularly pigs, yet they kept up their price; and, rather than diſpoſe of them for leſs than they thought they were worth, would take them aſhore again.

Tueſday 22. On the 22d, at eight in the morning, we tacked to the Southward with a freſh breeze at Eaſt by North. At noon, the latitude was 20° 28′ 30″; and the ſnowy peak bore South Weſt half South. We had a good view of it the preceding day, and the quantity of ſnow ſeemed to have increaſed, and to extend lower down the hill. I ſtood to the South Eaſt till midnight, then tacked to the North till four in the
Wedneſ. 23. morning, when we returned to the South Eaſt tack; and, as the wind was at North Eaſt by Eaſt, we had hopes of weathering the iſland. We ſhould have ſucceeded, if the wind

had not died away, and left us to the mercy of a great ſwell, which carried us faſt toward the land, which was not two leagues diſtant. At length, we got our head off, and ſome light puffs of wind, which came with ſhowers of rain, put us out of danger. While we lay, as it were, becalmed, ſeveral of the iſlanders came off with hogs, fowls, fruit, and roots. Out of one canoe we got a gooſe; which was about the ſize of a Muſcovy duck. Its plumage was dark grey, and the bill and legs black. 1778. December.

At four in the afternoon, after purchaſing every thing that the natives had brought off, which was full as much as we had occaſion for, we made ſail, and ſtretched to the North, with the wind at Eaſt North Eaſt. At midnight, we tacked, and ſtood to the South Eaſt. Upon a ſuppoſition that the Diſcovery would ſee us tack, the ſignal was omitted; but ſhe did not ſee us, as we afterward found, and continued ſtanding to the North; for, at day-light next morning, Thurſday 24. ſhe was not in ſight. At this time, the weather being hazy, we could not ſee far; ſo that it was poſſible the Diſcovery might be following us; and, being paſt the North Eaſt part of the iſland, I was tempted to ſtand on, till, by the wind veering to North Eaſt, we could not weather the land upon the other tack. Conſequently we could not ſtand to the North, to join, or look for, the Diſcovery. At noon, we were, by obſervation, in the latitude of 19° 55′, and in the longitude of 205° 3′; the South Eaſt point of the iſland bore South by Eaſt a quarter Eaſt, ſix leagues diſtant; the other extreme bore North, 60° Weſt; and we were two leagues from the neareſt ſhore. At ſix in the evening, the Southernmoſt extreme of the iſland bore South Weſt, the neareſt ſhore ſeven or eight miles diſtant; ſo that we had

now

1778. December. now ſucceeded in getting to the windward of the iſland, which we had aimed at with ſo much perſeverance.

The Diſcovery, however, was not yet to be ſeen. But the wind, as we had it, being very favourable for her to follow us, I concluded, that it would not be long before ſhe joined us. I therefore kept cruizing off this South Eaſt point of the iſland, which lies in the latitude of 19° 34′, and in the longitude of 205° 6′, till I was ſatisfied that Captain Clerke could not join me here. I now conjectured, that he had not been able to weather the North Eaſt part of the iſland, and had gone to leeward in order to meet me that way.

As I generally kept from five to ten leagues from the land,
Monday 28. no canoes, except one, came off to us till the 28th; when we were viſited by a dozen or fourteen. The people who conducted them, brought, as uſual, the produce of the iſland. I was very ſorry that they had taken the trouble to come ſo far. For we could not trade with them, our old ſtock not being, as yet, conſumed; and we had found, by late experience, that the hogs could not be kept alive, nor the roots preſerved from putrefaction, many days. However, I intended not to leave this part of the iſland before I got a ſupply; as it would not be eaſy to return to it again, in caſe it ſhould be found neceſſary.

Wedneſ. 30. We began to be in want on the 30th; and I would have ſtood in near the ſhore, but was prevented by a calm; but a breeze ſpringing up, at midnight, from South and South Weſt, we were enabled to ſtand in for the land at day-break.
Thurſday 31. At ten o'clock in the morning, we were met by the iſlanders with fruit and roots; but, in all the canoes, were only

three ſmall pigs. Our not having bought thoſe which had been lately brought off, may be ſuppoſed to be the reaſon of this very ſcanty ſupply. We brought to, for the purpoſes of trade; but, ſoon after, our marketing was interrupted by a very hard rain; and, beſides, we were rather too far from the ſhore. Nor durſt I go nearer; for I could not depend upon the wind's remaining where it was for a moment; the ſwell alſo being high, and ſetting obliquely upon the ſhore, againſt which it broke in a frightful ſurf. In the evening the weather mended; the night was clear, and it was ſpent in making ſhort boards. 1778. December.

Before day-break, the atmoſphere was again loaded with heavy clouds; and the new year was uſhered in with very hard rain, which continued, at intervals, till paſt ten o'clock. The wind was Southerly; a light breeze, with ſome calms. When the rain ceaſed the ſky cleared, and the breeze freſhened. Being, at this time, about five miles from the land, ſeveral canoes arrived with fruit and roots; and, at laſt, ſome hogs were brought off. We lay to, trading with them till three o'clock in the afternoon; when, having a tolerable ſupply, we made ſail, with a view of proceeding to the North Weſt, or lee-ſide of the iſland, to look for the Diſcovery. It was neceſſary, however, the wind being at South, to ſtretch firſt to the Eaſtward, till midnight, when the wind came more favourable, and we went upon the other tack. For ſeveral days paſt, both wind and weather had been exceedingly unſettled; and there fell a great deal of rain. 1779. January. Friday 1.

The three following days were ſpent in running down the South Eaſt ſide of the iſland. For, during the nights we ſtood off and on; and part of each day, was employed in lying- Saturday 2. Sunday 3. Monday 4.

to,

1779. January. to, in order to furniſh an opportunity to the natives, of trading with us. They ſometimes came on board, while we were five leagues from the ſhore. But, whether from a fear of loſing their goods in the ſea, or from the uncertainty of a market, they never brought much with them. The principal article procured was ſalt, which was extremely good.

Friday 5. On the 5th in the morning, we paſſed the South point of the iſland, which lies in the latitude of 18° 54′; and beyond it we found the coaſt to trend North, 60° Weſt. On this point ſtands a pretty large village, the inhabitants of which thronged off to the ſhip with hogs and women. It was not poſſible to keep the latter from coming on board; and no women, I ever met with, were leſs reſerved. Indeed, it appeared to me, that they viſited us with no other view, than to make a ſurrender of their perſons. As I had now got a quantity of ſalt, I purchaſed no hogs but ſuch as were fit for ſalting; refuſing all that were under ſize. However, we could ſeldom get any above fifty or ſixty pounds weight. It was happy for us, that we had ſtill ſome vegetables on board; for we now received few ſuch productions. Indeed, this part of the country, from its appearance, did not ſeem capable of affording them. Marks of its having been laid waſte by the exploſion of a *volcano*, every where preſented themſelves; and though we had, as yet, ſeen nothing like one upon the iſland, the devaſtation that it had made, in this neighbourhood, was viſible to the naked eye.

This part of the coaſt is ſheltered from the reigning winds; but we could find no bottom to anchor upon; a line of an hundred and ſixty fathoms not reaching it, within the diſtance of half a mile from the ſhore. The iſlanders having

all

all left us, toward the evening, we ran a few miles down the coaſt; and then ſpent the night ſtanding off and on. 1779. January.

The next morning, the natives viſited us again, bringing with them the ſame articles of commerce as before. Being now near the ſhore, I ſent Mr. Bligh, the Maſter, in a boat, to ſound the coaſt, with orders to land, and to look for freſh water. Upon his return, he reported, that, at two cables lengths from the ſhore, he had found no ſoundings with a line of one hundred and ſixty fathoms; that, when he landed, he found no ſtream or ſpring, but only rain-water, depoſited in holes upon the rocks; and even that was brackiſh, from the ſpray of the ſea; and that the ſurface of the country was entirely compoſed of ſlags and aſhes, with a few plants here and there interſperſed. Between ten and eleven, we ſaw with pleaſure the Diſcovery coming round the South point of the iſland; and, at one in the afternoon, ſhe joined us. Captain Clerke then coming on board, informed me, that he had cruiſed four or five days where we were ſeparated, and then plied round the Eaſt ſide of the iſland; but that, meeting with unfavourable winds, he had been carried to ſome diſtance from the coaſt. He had one of the iſlanders on board, all this time; who had remained there from choice, and had refuſed to quit the ſhip, though opportunities had offered. Wedneſ. 6.

Having ſpent the night ſtanding off and on, we ſtood in again the next morning, and when we were about a league from the ſhore, many of the natives viſited us. At noon, the obſerved latitude was 19° 1′, and the longitude, by the time-keeper, was 203° 26′; the iſland extending from South, 74° Eaſt, to North, 13° Weſt; the neareſt part two leagues diſtant. Thurſday 7.

1779. January. Friday 8. At day-break on the 8th, we found, that the currents, during the night, which we ſpent in plying, had carried us back conſiderably to windward; ſo that we were now off the South Weſt point of the iſland. There we brought to, in order to give the natives an opportunity of trading with us. At noon, our obſerved latitude was 19° 1′, and our longitude, by the time-keeper, was 203° 13′; the South Weſt point of the iſland bearing North, 30° Eaſt; two miles diſtant.

Saturday 9. We ſpent the night as uſual, ſtanding off and on. It happened, that four men and ten women who had come on board the preceding day, ſtill remained with us. As I did not like the company of the latter, I ſtood in ſhore toward noon, principally with a view to get them out of the ſhip; and ſome canoes coming off, I took that opportunity of ſending away our gueſts.

Sunday 10. We had light airs from North Weſt and South Weſt, and calms, till eleven in the morning of the 10th, when the wind freſhened at Weſt North Weſt, which, with a ſtrong current ſetting to the South Eaſt, ſo much retarded us, that, in the evening, between ſeven and eight o'clock, the South point of the iſland bore North, 10½° Weſt, four leagues diſtant. The South ſnowy hill now bore North, 1½° Eaſt.

Monday 11. At four in the morning of the 11th, the wind having fixed at Weſt, I ſtood in for the land, in order to get ſome refreſhments. As we drew near the ſhore, the natives began to come off. We lay to, or ſtood on and off, trading with them all the day; but got a very ſcanty ſupply at laſt. Many canoes viſited us, whoſe people had not a ſingle thing to barter; which convinced us, that this part of the iſland muſt be very poor, and that we had already got all

that they could ſpare. We ſpent the 12th, plying off and on, with a freſh gale at Weſt. A mile from the ſhore, and to the North Eaſt of the South point of the iſland, having tried ſoundings, we found ground at fifty-five fathoms depth; the bottom a fine ſand. At five in the evening, we ſtood to the South Weſt, with the wind at Weſt North Weſt; and ſoon after midnight we had a calm. 1779. January. Tueſday 12.

At eight o'clock next morning, having got a ſmall breeze at South South Eaſt, we ſteered to the North North Weſt, in for the land. Soon after, a few canoes came along-ſide with ſome hogs, but without any vegetables, which articles we moſt wanted. We had now made ſome progreſs; for at noon the South point of the iſland bore South, 86½° Eaſt; the South Weſt point North, 13° Weſt; the neareſt ſhore two leagues diſtant; latitude, by obſervation, 18° 56′, and our longitude, by the time-keeper, 203° 40′. We had got the length of the South Weſt point of the iſland in the evening; but the wind now veering to the Weſtward and Northward, during the night we loſt all that we had gained. Next morning, being ſtill off the South Weſt point of the iſland, ſome canoes came off; but they brought nothing that we were in want of. We had now neither fruit nor roots, and were under a neceſſity of making uſe of ſome of our ſea-proviſions. At length, ſome canoes from the Northward brought us a ſmall ſupply of hogs and roots. Wedneſ. 13. Thurſday 14.

We had variable light airs next to a calm, the following day, till five in the afternoon, when a ſmall breeze at Eaſt North Eaſt ſpringing up, we were at laſt enabled to ſteer along ſhore to the Northward. The weather being fine, we had plenty of company this day, and abundance of every thing. Many of of our viſiters remained with us on board all night, and we towed their canoes aſtern. Friday 15.

1779. January. Saturday 16. At day-break on the 16th, ſeeing the appearance of a bay, I ſent Mr. Bligh, with a boat from each ſhip, to examine it, being at this time three leagues off. Canoes now began to arrive from all parts; ſo that before ten o'clock, there were not fewer than a thouſand about the two ſhips, moſt of them crowded with people, and well laden with hogs and other productions of the iſland. We had the moſt ſatisfying proof of their friendly intentions; for we did not ſee a ſingle perſon who had with him a weapon of any ſort. Trade and curioſity alone had brought them off. Among ſuch numbers as we had, at times, on board, it is no wonder that ſome ſhould betray a thieviſh diſpoſition. One of our viſiters took out of the ſhip a boat's rudder. He was diſcovered; but too late to recover it. I thought this a good opportunity to ſhew theſe people the uſe of fire-arms; and two or three muſquets, and as many four-pounders, were fired over the canoe, which carried off the rudder. As it was not intended that any of the ſhot ſhould take effect, the ſurrounding multitude of natives ſeemed rather more ſurprized than frightened.

In the evening, Mr. Bligh returned, and reported, that he had found a bay in which was good anchorage, and freſh water, in a ſituation tolerably eaſy to be come at. Into this bay, I reſolved to carry the ſhips, there to refit, and ſupply ourſelves with every refreſhment that the place could afford. As night approached, the greater part of our viſiters retired to the ſhore; but numbers of them requeſted our permiſſion to ſleep on board. Curioſity was not the only motive, at leaſt Sunday 17. with ſome; for, the next morning, ſeveral things were miſſing, which determined me not to entertain ſo many another night.

At eleven o'clock in the forenoon, we anchored in the bay (which is called by the natives *Karakakooa*), in thirteen fathoms water, over a ſandy bottom, and about a quarter of a mile from the North Eaſt ſhore. In this ſituation, the South point of the bay bore South by Weſt; and the North point Weſt half North. We moored with the ſtream-anchor and cable, to the Northward, unbent the ſails, and ſtruck yards and top-maſts. The ſhips continued to be much crowded with natives, and were ſurrounded by a multitude of canoes. I had no where, in the courſe of my voyages, ſeen ſo numerous a body of people aſſembled at one place. For, beſides thoſe who had come off to us in canoes, all the ſhore of the bay was covered with ſpectators, and many hundreds were ſwimming round the ſhips like ſhoals of fiſh. We could not but be ſtruck with the ſingularity of this ſcene; and perhaps there were few on board who now lamented our having failed in our endeavours to find a Northern paſſage homeward, laſt ſummer. To this diſappointment we owed our having it in our power to reviſit the *Sandwich Iſlands*, and to enrich our voyage with a diſcovery which, though the laſt, ſeemed, in many reſpects, to be the moſt important that had hitherto been made by Europeans, throughout the extent of the Pacific Ocean. 1779. January.

[☞ *Here Captain Cook's journal ends. The remaining tranſactions of the voyage are related by Captain King, in the third Volume.*]

END OF THE SECOND VOLUME.

00085521

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 25 June, 2016